



GOD AND DEVIL WORLD

BOOK 04

Zi Chan Bao Zeng

Epub creation by Lisa Hayes

God and Devil World

(神魔系统)

by

Zi Chan Bao Zeng

(资产暴增)

Synopsis

In less than an instant the world as we knew it was at its end.

That's right. The Apocalypse. In a single blink Zombies appeared and mutated monsters began to rampage all throughout the world. Now it was the human species turn to fight for survival and planetary dominance!

On the same day that the world descends into chaos we meet Yue Zhong. Initially only hoping to get to his friends and escape to a refugee camp our protagonist sets out, inadvertently building a team along the way. After a series of fortuitous events and a few serious hunches our hero decides it's time to do more than just survive!

Yue Zhong begins to form the foundations of an enormous survival plan... before he suddenly discovers that he has only gotten over the first hurdle.... Unbeknownst to Yue Zhong and company, the world outside of China is mostly a wasteland! Country sized swathes of nuclear radiation and an extreme shortage of supplies in the world after the nuclear explosions was quickly becoming the "norm". Mutants, Evolved animals and what's worse, intelligent out of control dinosaurs had quickly appeared and claimed their own sections of the planet. There were several innately powerful Evolved races which appeared that were more than 10 times stronger than humans, nearly all of them possessing bodies impenetrable by normal bullets. The fabled orcs' were another of these Evolved races, the leader of which had in fact enslaved many of the remaining human beings.

Unceremoniously exposed to such a cold and heartless new world, Yue Zhong is faced with a choice: Find a deep dark hole and hope it goes back to "normal"? Or overcome all obstacles and struggle towards Evolution!!!

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Translation Nation @ [Qidian International](#)

Translation Editing by Translation Nation @ [Qidian International](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 301: Introducing currency!

Yue Zhong chuckled as he pulled the mature Zhuo Yatong and pressed on to her, without even taking off her clothes, he immediately penetrated her and forcefully pounded her.

Zhuo Yatong's tenderness set Yue Zhong's desire off again, at the same time, under Yue Zhong's constant ravaging, she could not help but let out cute moans, giving a sense of being Dominated, which fuelled Yue Zhong's passion further.

After the intense love-making, Yue Zhong embraced the voluptuous Zhuo Yatong and loveable Tong Xiaoyun as they laid quietly in the bed, while he breathed in their scent and took the beauty of their skin, his heart filled with peace and happiness.

Zhuo Yatong laid in Yue Zhong's embrace as she raised her head to kiss Yue Zhong, before cheekily asking a pointed question: "Husband!! Between Xiaoyun-meimei and myself, who makes you feel better?"

Tong Xiaoyun grabbed Yue Zhong's hands, as she used her breasts and stuck them to his hand, before coyly saying: "Yue-gege, it's me right? Xiaoyun is your obedient little sister~!!"

Tong Xiaoyun and Zhuo Yatong always shared a close relationship, but with regards to getting Yue Zhong's affection, they would compete unknowingly. Although Zhuo Yatong did not say it, she still felt jealous of Tong Xiaoyun that managed to gain a position within Yue Zhong's heart as well.

"Haha!! Both of you are my precious darlings." Yue Zhong laughed out loud, and managed to dodge the tricky question, as he lowered his head to kiss them both on their cheeks, hugging them tightly.

Zhuo Yatong and Tong Xiaoyun looked at each other, and exchange a smile, and decided not to make things difficult for him,

instead, they kissed him and placed their heads on his chest, listening to his heartbeat.

Yue Zhong was enjoying his time here. On the other hand, Da Gouzi was actually kept extremely busy, trying to handle so many things at once, he wished he could split himself into three.

The consequences of the downpour had surfaced, amongst those 130,000 survivors that had crossed, 40,000 had fallen ill because of the rain, and were running high fevers.

As the transportation of goods were in a rush, the medicine and supplies brought from the hospital were not enough to deal with the number of patients.

"What do we do? Officer Da Gouzi?" Tai Yiyan looked at Da Gouzi as she asked.

Tai Yiyan had shown her worth and capabilities by working closely with Yue Zhong's unit, and had become an integral member of his team.

Da Gouzi massaged his temple and gave out a few orders: "Give those fever patients a can of Type 2 Meat, then organize some people to help boil some water for them to drink!! Those who have already fallen ill, gather them and quarantine them. I don't want a new source of outbreak for illnesses."

In this post-apocalyptic world, falling ill was an extremely dangerous thing, especially with the shortage of doctors and medicine. Just a simple flu and fever could take the life of a person. Da Gouzi had distributed the meat like medicine because he had no choice, he could only pray that after gaining the energy, they might be able to fight the illness. Other than that, there was nothing else he could do.

"Yes!" Tai Yiyan swiftly replied, and dismissed herself.

Da Gouzi then pondered for a while, before continuing his distribution of the type 2 Meat to those soldiers who had put in

their all during those intense battles. All of these soldiers had stronger bodies, all they lacked was rest. However, the Type 2 Meat could allow them to swiftly regain their energy and stamina, preventing them from suddenly falling sick.

With Da Gouzi's allocation, cans of Type 2 Meat were sent to those survivors who had fallen ill, under the supervision of the 5,000-over men led by Tian Hu, the female survivors were gathered, and took on the roles of temporary nurses, and helped take care of those who had fallen ill.

The Type 2 Meat was extremely beneficial, as the moment the patients ate the meat, it displayed its rejuvenating properties, and many regained some colour on their pale faces.

As there was no adequate care given on time, out of the 40,000 who had taken ill, 1,000 had passed away, but the rest of them managed to overcome this hardship, and escaped death's door.

This time, Yue Zhong had managed to save so many survivors, the huge amount of Type 2 Meat played an important role. If it was not for the Type 2 Meat, even if these over 100,000 survivors crossed the bridge, at least half would have died due to the rain.

After the cold harsh autumn rain fell for 5 days, the skies regained its warm blue colour.

The moment the skies cleared, the 120,000-over survivors who had been squeezing and waiting it out embarked on their journey towards Ning Guang County.

When these survivors arrived at Ning Guang County and Qing Yuan County, the masses joined and integrated with the strongholds under Yue Zhong, and started a bustle of activities.

Factories were filled up, and everyone began production on steel knives, barricades and making use of the hides from the Mutant Beasts to create armor and protection.

Those 5,000-over survivors who had proved their worth during

the last few critical moments were also accepted and integrated into the preliminary troops and began their tough training.

Yue Zhong was extremely generous with his own troops who had fought hard for him, they had decent amounts of food. In between their training gaps, they also spent time and resources within the county, bringing all sorts of economic growth within the county.

It seemed that overnight, various snack stalls, bread shops, hair styling salons, restaurants, etc all sprung up.

Chen Jianfeng sought Yue Zhong out and spoke: "Yue Zhong! I feel that we should start introducing a currency, otherwise it will be detrimental to our current economic growth."

Within the counties, the barter system was still popular. Most of the time, rice or other food was used. As to the renminbi used prior to the apocalypse, it was worth even less than toilet paper now. The barter system was primitive and inefficient, and was not helpful to development.

However, the renminbi had declined. Those who had tried running with their huge stacks of renminbi were in dire straits, not even comparable to a beggar, and no one was willing to accept it. Only Yue Zhong and his group could introduce something to be used, that would be acceptable by their citizens.

Yue Zhong frowned as he asked softly: "Do we give out cash? Based on our skills now, can we maintain the security and strength of the currency?"

Chen Jianfeng replied swiftly: "I have already found someone to handle this issue."

Their total number of survivors rescued from SY County were 120,000 adding on to the 20,000 that he had secretly transported out earlier, his stronghold had increased by a whopping 150,000 in strength. Amongst those survivors, there were various people with specialized skill sets and knowledge. Chen Jianfeng only had to

spread the word, and his subordinates had found some people already.

Yue Zhong nodded his head: "Fine! I'll let you handle this!"

Chen Jianfeng was extremely efficient, and his methods and work ethics were extremely resolute. Under his supervision, Yue Zhong's government swiftly issued out a currency called the Grand Central Empire Dollar* as the new form of currency.

1 Central Dollar could be used to buy a jin of cornmeal within the rules Yue Zhong established for food companies, and 2 Central Dollars could be used to buy a jin of rice. At the same time, there were various other items that can be bought, including cigarettes, milk, soap, canned Beast Meat, canned Type 2 Beast Meat.

Yue Zhong then issued out salaries to the military and government, allowing them to spend them as necessary within the counties.

As the Central Dollar could be used directly to purchase food, the strength and credibility immediately gave the survivors the confidence to accept it as the new currency replacing the previous renminbi. Furthermore, many shops had the stock of Type 2 Beast Meat.

Amongst the survivors, many of them had experienced and gone through so many setbacks. They recognized the importance and value of the Type 2 Beast Meat. Many of them had their hearts set aflame, wishing to own a Type 2 Beast Meat as an insurance for their lives in the future.

Of course, the Type 2 Beast Meat could not be purchased so easily. Yue Zhong had set a price of 10,000 Central Dollars on each canned Type 2 Beast Meat. Type 2 Mutant Beasts weren't easy to kill after all. To even encounter them, one had to travel to places where the Mutant Beasts were strong and ferocious, if he were to be careless, he could meet a few different Type 2 Mutant Beasts, if that happens, Yue Zhong would also lose his life.

The moment the currency was introduced, both counties seemed to regain their vigor, and many survivors started showcasing and making use of their abilities and knowledge prior to the apocalypse, and started up their own shops. There was a huge variety of snacks, and various shops had sprung up due to demand. Both counties displayed a thriving scene.

Under the supervision of Chen Jianfeng, the development and economic growth boomed, and the people were filled with satisfaction and happiness. On the other side, Yue Zhong had allowed his troops to rest for 5 days, before assigning them in shift systems to make their way towards Long Hai County, clearing the various villages of zombies as they came across them, at the same time grooming and training his troops.

Tian Hu and the rest of the warriors of the preliminary troops were undergoing Xu Zhengang's harsh training everyday.

The various troops of Liu Huifeng were absorbed and distributed amongst Yue Zhong's troops, with the addition of a few hundred veterans, the combat power of the battalions received another huge boost.

Shen Hongyang was extremely cooperative as he handed command of Xu Xiao and the few other experts to Yue Zhong, who transferred them into his Special Combat Forces. The 10 tanks, 7 assault helicopters and their operating personnel were then allocated to the armored division.

As a form of reciprocation, Yue Zhong had allocated a large number of soldiers from his preliminary troop to fill up Shen Xue's 2 infantry battalions, fulfilling his promise.

As his power was expanding, Yue Zhong once again overhauled the military system, and reorganized the entire troops as a regiment, declaring himself as the Regiment Com

Chapter 302: Assault on Long Hai City

The elite 1st and 2nd Battalion of Qing Yuan County, 1st and 2nd Battalion of Ning Guan County as well as the Armored Battalion were grouped as the 1st Division belonging to Yue Zhong, its commander Xu Zhengang and vice-commander Wu Guang.

Qing Yuan's 3rd Battalion, Ning Guang's 3rd and 4th Battalion were reorganized as the 2nd Division, its commander Chen Shitou, vice-commander Kong Tianyu.

SY County's 8th Battalion and Shen Xue's 2 battalions were grouped into the 3rd Division, its commander Xiong Zheng, vice-commander Shen Xue.

The Special Combat Forces remained under the command of Ji Qingwu. The preliminary troops remained as it is, belonging to Yue Zhong and trained by Xu Zhengang.

Da Gouzi was conferred the title as Support Commander, being placed in charge of all support activities. The support division was important and could decide victory in modern warfare.

On top of that, Yue Zhong established a Youth Guards. This Youth Guards was comprised of various youths that had ambition and idolized Yue Zhong. They numbered in the 3,000, consisting of both boys and girls. They had to go through a specialized programme where they had to learn about culture and skills in the day, and learnt various fighting and combat skills from the Special Combat Forces. They ate Mutant Beast meat, and got to enjoy Type 2 Meat once in a while, strengthening their bodies through the course of training. Zhang He and Zhang Yulan had joined it the first moment they could, as they possessed the drive and idolization of Yue Zhong.

The top expert of the Youth Guards was the little loli Yao Yao. Zhang Yulan had been awed by her the first moment she saw her, and became her huge fan, and her small attendant.

Yao Yao saw that she had someone who idolized her, and felt smug as well. She did not hold back and taught Zhang Yulan all she knew and experienced. It was just that regardless how hard Zhang Yulan worked, she could not match Yao Yao as she was lacking in both age and talent.

However, Zhang Yulan and her brothers did not slack off, and absorbed all that they could. They wanted to become useful members of society in this new post-apocalypse world.

A month went quickly with all the adjustments, integration and training. After the reorganization and training, Yue Zhong's troops had surpassed what they were previously, and became even stronger.

"Now! Let's move out! Our target is Long Hai County!!"

Following Yue Zhong's single command, his 1st Division started to move towards Long Hai City.

The army set off, and following them from the rear were over 20,000 survivors as well as the support troops and their transportation supplies. As there was not enough fuel, the support troops could only use their own legs to follow the vehicles forward. It was extremely tough.

However, these troops and the survivors had not a word of complaint, as they were very clear that the operation this time on Long Hai County was extremely crucial. If they could conquer it, they would gain a huge amount of resources, and could gain a new city to become another habitat.

If they failed, then the horde that was holed up inside would cause all their deaths.

This battle, they could only win! They could not lose at all!

The zombies in the surrounding villages had either been summoned into Long Hai County, or were already wiped out by Yue Zhong's troops as training.

Yue Zhong's huge army had marched on for a few days, before finally arriving at the highway which led to Long Hai County and encountering the horde of zombies.

The huge horde of zombies was also slowly making their way towards Qing Yuan County, on the highway, through the various plains and forests. As far as the eye could see, they were all filled with zombies.

Upon sighting in on zombies, the 10 tanks that had become part of the armored vehicles immediately opened fire as they slowly and continuously advanced forward.

The zombies scattered throughout the plains and forest were immediately gunned down by the heavy fire, as they slumped to the floor.

The 10 tanks continued advancing forward, intending to crush the zombies.

The troops behind followed as they stepped on the meat paste on the ground, advancing behind the cover of the tanks.

In the skies, Greenie and 2 drones were flying, and the drones were feeding information back to the central command, while Greenie was in charge of chasing away the other flying Mutant Beasts that got attracted by the huge number of humans.

"Scum Battalion! Go charge!" Yue Zhong looked at the zombies that had been shot and laid on the ground on the plains and in the forests, and he gave the command to the scum battalion!

The commander of the Scum Battalion was Gao Daqiang, who was wielding a Tang Replica Sword, decked in Mutant Water Snake hide armor, another hand holding a steel shield, as he shouted at the 2,000 males who were made to join the scum battalion: "Your father, I, am Gao Daqiang!! I'm sure you guys can tell that I used to be a criminal who was sentenced to the Scum Battalion in the past. However, I have killed enough zombies, and

have become an upright leader under Commander Yue's forces. My current rank is 2nd Lieutenant, and I'm a Level 18 Enhancer. I even have 2 wives as well! Everyday, I get to eat my fill, with meat in my meals also!"

Gao Daqiang let out a roar, and he charged at the zombies: "If you want to become like me, give it your all! Kill the zombies!! As long as you risk it all and fight, women, food, lodging, they will be yours! If you want to rise in rank and get rich and have your way with women, charge with me!! Whoever dares to retreat from battle, will be shot by the troops behind! Charge!!"

Yue Zhong had always placed importance and rewarded on those who worked hard. This Gao Daqiang had dared to fight and risk his all, and had killed numerous zombies. Even after he became a proper soldier, he continued putting in effort, and gained a Tang Replica Sword and Mutant Water Snake armor for himself. He had truly grown to become a powerful Enhancer, and was always the first to lead the charge in the Scum Battalion.

"Charge!! Follow Boss Gao, and let's rise in rank!!!" Beside Gao Daqiang, Nalan Mingzhu shouted out loudly and charged as well.

Under the motivation of Gao Daqiang and Nalan Mingzhu, those warriors of the Scum Battalion, who had been forced to train without any entertainment or break, seemed to become beasts with eyes filled with battle lust as they took up their weapons and charged. Only by killing enough zombies, could they earn freedom for themselves, and become normal citizens. Otherwise, they will forever remain as cannon fodder within the Scum Battalion forever.

When Gao Daqiang and Nalan Mingzhu appeared, and showed that they were examples of warriors who earned their freedom and rose in ranks, and even managed to marry wives, the criminals within the Scum Battalion were immediately motivated and found the incentive and hope to perform. They wanted to regain their freedom. Only when one loses freedom, will one truly understand

its preciousness.

Those who earned their freedom from the Scum Battalion were a sturdy troop of veterans who had killed at least 30 zombies. When these hardened veterans were reintegrated within the normal army, when they obtained their God and Devil System equipment, they quickly rose to become strong Enhancers, and had filled up the ranks of experts within Yue Zhong's troops.

Those 2,000 troopers from the Scum Battalion were like tigers amongst sheeps the moment they charged at the zombies, as they waved their steel blades in frenzy and lopped off the zombies' heads in a wild and yet strangely disciplined manner, one by one.

When the troopers were riled up and threw away their fear, they became unstoppable, and the ordinary zombies weren't their match, they could only be slaughtered.

The zombies within the forests and plains were easily decimated by the scum battalion just like that.

The main force of Yue Zhong were easily picking off those zombies who stood in their way along the road.

As the forward party of zombies which numbered in the tens of thousands were being wiped out, the remaining scattered zombies quickly made their way back towards Long Hai County to gather.

On Greenie's back, Yue Zhong saw the droves of zombies making their way towards Long Hai County, forming a huge horde that stretched for miles.

"The number of zombies could number in the millions!!" Yue Zhong frowned as he thought to himself.

Although the number of zombies seemed to number in the millions, Yue Zhong did not panic as he currently possessed over 7,000 soldiers, including the preliminary troops and Scum Battalion, he had over 10,000 men who could fight. At the same time, he had the equipment from the Mechanized Infantry Brigade

as well as enough ammunition for a regiment to expend, it was more than enough for him to fight with.

Yue Zhong had also constructed his own factory, that specialized in refilling bullets and could produce 20,000 bullets a day. In a month, the workers could churn out 600,000 bullets. Although the refilled bullets were less accurate, under heavy fire, they could cause waves of zombies to fall.

With this kind of support, Yue Zhong had the confidence to deal with these couple millions of zombies!

After the zombies within Long Hai County had gathered, they used their old methods, surging forth like a tidal wave and charging towards Yue Zhong's troops in a frenzy as commanded by their Z-Types.

After gaining valuable experience from the previous defeat, Yue Zhong swiftly commanded his troops to station at various strategic points, and began construction of fortifications and barricades, in the event the frontlines could not maintain, they could at least withdraw with ample protection.

The main force of Yue Zhong's troops swiftly gained control over Green Wind Gorge, an important channel, and began their fortifications and awaited the assault from the horde.

Green Wind Gorge was not as wide as Tiger Mouth's Gorge, and it had a decent defence line of about 4 km wide, but it was the most suitable for Yue Zhong's troops to begin their work with.

As the construction work was in full swing, and various traps were being dug, the sea of zombies finally approached the Green Wind Gorge.

If there were any weaknesses of the horde to be pointed out, it would be that their mobility was severely impaired, and thus Yue Zhong could find ways to deal with it.

As the sea of zombies lumbered towards the Green Wind Gorge,

while their speed was slow, it was extremely steady. Soon, the landscape was filled with the zombies.

"Open fire!!"

Following Xu Zhengang's orders, the artillery unit began firing.

Round after round of rockets landed accurately amongst the zombie horde, exploding outwards with flame and shrapnel. With every blast, a huge hole would appear, and the zombies within a certain radius would be incinerated along with it. Regardless if they were ordinary zombies, or the evolved L1s, L2s, H1s, S1s, or S2s, under the relentless bombardment, they would become ash, with no way to retaliate.

Within a short 5 minutes, the densely packed horde had been blasted many times, and the leading force became a handful of scattered zombies.

Artillery weapons were considered godly weapons, and in this post-apocalyptic world, using them against the zombies could display their terrifying strength. In just this short 5 minutes, over 30,000 zombies had been incinerated.

After the constant bombardment for 5 minutes, the artillery immediately stopped. The zombies in front had been annihilated, and continuing their firing would not achieve anything. Furthermore, their ammunition was not endless, firing one meant one less for the future. Xu Zhengang had to utilize them to their fullest potential.

Facing the remaining scattered zombies, Guo Quan led the warriors from the 1st Battalion of the 1st Division forward, as they were decked in Mutant Water Snake hide, Mutant Black Fish hide, wielding Tang Replica Swords, and charged at the zombies.

With the protection of the hides, as long as the soldiers took care not to let their faces get scratched, they would not get infected. With the protection of those hides, the ferocity of the soldiers from

the 1st Battalion was like a sharp knife that pierced the zombies after they had just faced the bombardment of the artillery, killing any few zombies that remained.

Ji Qingwu also deployed 20 soldiers from the Special Combat Forces as they followed the 1st Battalion, killing any evolved zombies such as the L2s or S2s that appeared, allowing the other soldiers to focus on the ordinary zombies.

The moment Guo Quan led his men into battle, they hacked and slashed their way through, killing over 2,000 zombies, before retreating to their positions. Many had gained levels after this first onslaught. Under Guo Quan's command, they all allocated the enhancement points into Stamina. In war, a modernized battalion that had immense Stamina was extremely fearsome, as long as they had enough Stamina, they could remain fighting on the frontlines, killing even more enemies.

The rest of the battalions also took turns and launched assaults on the remaining zombies, treating them as training fodder and experience. Without the densely packed horde and support of numbers, these zombies could only become meat for slaughter.

The 50,000 zombies leading the horde were wiped out in such a short time, and the endless zombies behind continued forward to fill up the places and gaps, as they lumbered towards Yue Zhong's forces.

The moment the horde stepped up again, the artillery that was resting immediately opened fire, and the fearsome bombardment of rockets blasted the zombies into smithereens, with the scattered zombies taken out by the troops.

Chapter 303: At Bottom...

With the support of the artillery, the position of the troops was really quite impregnable. Even when the horde swarmed in wave after wave, they would be wiped out almost instantly. Green Wind Gorge had become a merciless meat grinder, with bits and pieces of corpses flying and splatting everywhere. The entire ground seemed to be soaked in dark blood and the rotten stench was unbearable.

The amount of firepower Yue Zhong possessed surpassed the amount the SY army had, furthermore, he had chosen a place that was more strategic than previously. The current fighting spirit and morale of the soldiers were much higher than previous, therefore the maintenance of their position was not a difficult task.

The battle continued all the way till noon, and over 400,000 zombies had been annihilated by Yue Zhong's troops. The entire Green Wind Gorge was filled with countless body parts of the zombies. However, the sea of zombies still looked as endless as ever, as though they could not be wiped out.

Yue Zhong observed the horde that stretched without end, and he furrowed his brow before ordering: "Let the armored battalion attack!! Push forth! 1st Regiment 2nd Battalion attack!"

Following Yue Zhong's orders, his trump card finally showed itself, 30 Type 69 tanks, 26 IFVs, 64 modified armored vehicles, 6 huge rollers were activated, and became a stream of armor that charged forward and flattened any unfortunate zombies that stood in their way.

The 1st Division 2nd Battalion's soldiers were mostly also decked in Mutant Black Fish hide. With their .03 rifles and grenades, as well as rocket launchers, they followed behind the armored line and picked off any remaining zombies by the sides.

The 30 tanks had only 10 that could fire cannons, the other 20

could only be driven. A mortar hand could not be trained up so fast in such a short time. Recklessly firing could cost the lives of teammates. However, the frontal charge of the tanks were fearsome enough, not a single zombie could impede the charge of these Metal Valkyries. Scads of zombies were flattened into meat paste by the 30 tanks with each pass and they couldn't even put up a fight. The rest of the armored line, including the IFVs, modified tanks, and rollers, were all capable of crushing the zombies as well, and any zombies unfortunate enough to be in the way of that armored line were flattened.

After forcefully carving a way out for about 5 to 6 km, the horde split up, as a group of 1000 L2s with brute strength started charging towards the Type 69 tanks.

The L2s were all a towering 3m, their strength immense, and could easily flip a car. However, when those L2s charged to the front they were immediately knocked down by the tanks, and the L2s were directly flattened and ground beneath the tires and tracks.

The IFVs also smashed onto those L2s viciously, knocking them away. Those L2s did not suffer any broken bones though, as they quickly got up again.

By this time, the ZPT90s on the IFVs started firing like mad, and under suppressive heavy fire, the L2s were shredded.

The few remaining L2s were also blasted to pieces by the troops of the 1st Division 2nd Battalion who were using the various grenade and rocket launchers.

After dealing with those L2s, the horde once again split up, and this time, a group of H1s packed in orderly formation started executing their fireball attacks at the armored line.

In just an instant, numerous fireballs landed on the tanks, IFVs, and the rest of the armored vehicles.

The moment the fireballs landed, the drivers in 3 of the rollers were instantly incinerated. 6 of the modified heavy vehicles also caught fire, and the passengers inside died on the spot. 13 of the modified heavy vehicles had their tires exploded and they fell uselessly to the ground. 4 of the IFVs were hit by the fire blasts, causing them to be filled with holes and their armor destroyed. One of the IFVs instantly caught fire. 3 of the IFVS also had their tires taken out, and lost their mobility, lying uselessly on the ground.

Only the tanks remained unscathed amidst that bombardment, and continued pressing forwards, pulverising the zombies that got in their way.

When the H1s had just appeared to fire those fireballs, rockets had already landed on them, blasting numerous H1s into smithereens.

The infantry battalion was also firing their rockets, grenades and their .03 rifles at the dangerous H1s, directly turning them into shredded meat.

After decimating the troop of H1s, another troop formed entirely out of S2s approached!

It was just that when they appeared, they already met the vicious attacks of the 10 tanks and remaining IFVs, those evolved S2s had not even displayed their fearsome attack before they were fired at till kingdom come. The remaining S2s were accordingly picked off by the experts in the 2nd Battalion.

Crushed, they were absolutely crushed!! The armored fleet just had to continue advancing forward, forcefully crushing their way through, turning over 100,000 of the zombies along the way into meat paste.

Yue Zhong sat on Greenie's back, as he observed his armored vehicles crushing the zombies as they advanced, and his heart was filled with elation.

As long as fuel did not run out, the tanks could continue rolling forward on and on! Nothing could stop these steel monstrosities!!

This armored fleet was Yue Zhong's trump card, and the strongest blade he had against the horde of zombies.

"Push forward for another 40 km! That way, it would be impossible for the bulk of them to attack Green Wind Gorge during the night. It can earn us a night of precious time!" Yue Zhong was laying on Greenie's back as he looked down, and calculated before giving the order.

Night battles were the hardest to fight since ages ago. Yue Zhong had sent the armored fleet out because he was not willing to engage in a night battle with the zombies. Even though he had the flares, it was not that the humans could not fight in the night, but compared to daytime, it was indeed harder to fight.

"Eh? What's going on?" Yue Zhong was still in the air observing, when he suddenly noticed that there was a group of zombies suddenly rushing forwards towards his armored fleet without a care for death. At the same time, the horde was opening up a pathway for another group to retreat backwards..

Yue Zhong looked at the obvious retreat of the zombies, and his heart leapt in joy: "Those must be the Z-Types?! Are they finally scared??"

It was as Yue Zhong had guessed, those Z-Types that had been hiding within the horde had seen the terrifying power of the armored fleet, flattening their troops, and had begun to fear for their lives, and was running to the back for protection.

"Kill it!! As long as I kill it, victory will be halfway in our grasp!!" Yue Zhong thought excitedly, and patted Greenie gently, pointing towards the movement within the horde.

Greenie understood Yue Zhong with just that pat, and immediately shot forward like an arrow towards the horde of

zombies.

As an air-type Type 2 Mutant Beast, Greenie's speed was truly fearsome, in just a few blinks, it had brought Yue Zhong within 20m of the retreating group.

Yue Zhong could see clearly 200 S2s, a 100 L2s and 10 enormous L3s, and they were accompanied by 20 zombies that were greyish-green, slender-looking but with powerful legs, 1.7m-tall and glowing with a slight green glow.

On top of that, there was a weird zombie with a head the size of a pumpkin, its limbs as short as fingers, perched atop an L3.

"Level 45 Type 3 Strength-based Evolved Infector S3. It possess extreme speed and sharp claws that can tear through anything. It possess the ability to infect, can cause an infected to become a infector as well."

"Level 50 Type 2 Mental-based Evolved Infector Z2. It possess fearsome Spirit, as well as control over a horde of 1,000,000 zombies."

On the frontlines, there were no signs of the fearsome L3s or S3s, it was obvious that this cowardly Z2s had commanded them to be their guards.

Greenie shot forward like a lightning bolt, using its huge claws to grab an L3's head before exerting strength to behead it. It then swiftly activated its innate ability Wind Control, flapping its wing vigorously, causing powerful tornados to be conjured and blowing the numerous S2s and S3s away by a few tens of metres, leaving the 100 L2s and the remaining tower-like L3s.

The Z2 saw Yue Zhong and Greenie and immediately shot out a terrifying Spirit Blast, and a huge Spirit attack that could render a normal human into a retard shot towards Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong was after all a Spirit-based Evolver, but with that fearsome attack from the Z2, his eyes darkened, as he fell from

Greenie's back.

The attack was however, ineffective against Greenie, which was a Type 2 Mutant Beast, as Greenie immediately shot downwards, and bit off the Z2's head, gobbling it up in just a matter of seconds.

With the death of the Z2, all the zombies that were under its control immediately broke away. Groups of zombies lumbered off, and the 9 L3s and 20 S3s shot towards Yue Zhong.

The scent of evolved flesh and blood from Yue Zhong enticed them greatly.

Yue Zhong could reach a speed of 12 times that of normal humans upon activation of all his buffs and skills, but the speed of the S3s were well beyond Yue Zhong's speed that was enhanced by abilities, reaching at least 150 points base speed!. They had rushed from way behind the L3s, but had arrived near Yue Zhong and started attacking even before the L3s, their claws reaching for Yue Zhong.

As Greenie had just killed the Z2, it was not fast enough to react and save Yue Zhong!

Chapter 303: Yue Zhong's Mechanized Blade! Killing the Z2!

Chapter 304: Capturing Long Hai City! Yue Zhong's gains!

Facing the S3's whose movement speed surpassed his own, Yue Zhong's eyes gleamed as he activated a skill. White Bones materialized out of thin air and immediately transformed into an orb of light which morphed into his Bone Encompassing Armor.

Yue Zhong then activated his Devil Flame with another thought, an extra expense of 50 points of Spirit and 20 points of Stamina was used to condense it into a flaming sword.

The moment the Devil Flame Sword appeared in his hands, his killing intent was unleashed! In the next instant his body was struck viciously by 3 of the S3's, slashed by their piercing claws.

Under the attack of the S3's, Yue Zhong's Bone Encompassing Armor that was impervious to even heavy ammunition was scored furiously, leaving 3 deep claw marks.

Yue Zhong activated his Shadow Steps quickly in response. At the same time he swung his Devil Flame Sword and extended it to a 6m-long sword, instantly surprising and slicing across the 3 S3's in front as well as another 6 of them who were rushing forward.

A huge experience orb instantly combined and got absorbed into Yue Zhong, finally pushing him to the next level.

"Congratulations on achieving Level 45, you have gained 2 points of enhancement to be allocated."

Yue Zhong directly enhanced his Agility, before waving the fearsome Devil Flame Sword again, instantly beheading another S3.

The remaining 10 S3's had evolved and possessed a higher perception for danger, so they had evaded the first moment they could. This and their insane speed allowed them to avoid Yue Zhong's strikes.

Yue Zhong ignored the S3's that were avoiding him, and went for the L3 that was charging towards him. Under that mighty Devil Flame Sword, the L3 was also instantly beheaded, its head rolling onto the floor.

The L3s were known for their impregnable defence and immense strength. Since its tough armor was broken through by Yue Zhong, its threat level diminished. Of course, if Yue Zhong was struck by the charge of the L3, his Encompassing Bone Armor might not be able to withstand that overly fearsome strength.

After killing the L3 with a single slash of his blade, his left hand shot out 3 extremely sharp Bone Spears towards the neck. Startlingly, the Bone Spear that could kill an L2 instantly, only managed to create a white mark on that L3's neck with a sharp 'ding' as though it had hit metal.

"To use the Bone Spear to deal with these L3 is really too exhausting!" Yue Zhong frowned, as he thought to himself. The Devil Flame Sword was truly terrifying, but likewise, it expended a huge amount of his energy, and was not meant for long battles. If he could possess a sharp weapon, dealing with these high-level zombies would be easier.

Yue Zhong's attack had angered the L3. It swiftly stepped forward, and a fist that was the size of a wok came swinging towards him, bringing with it a terrifyingly formidable air pressure.

The L3 had strength equivalent to 18 men! Thus, each fist consisted of a few tonnes of raw power and it could pummel even an armored vehicle easily. If Yue Zhong was hit by that, even with his enhancements, he would definitely be heavily injured.

Facing the mountain-like L3, Yue Zhong zipped about like a spectre, dodging its repeated attacks. At the right moment he swung his flame sword down, beheading the L3!

The S3's that were encircling Yue Zhong seemed to have seen

their opportunity, they rushed forward, surrounding him in just an instant and reached out to slash at him.

As he saw the sudden ambush by the 10 S3's, Yue Zhong activated his Gravity skill so that those attacking S3's would be weighed down by the increased gravity. It had appeared as though their lean bodies had gained an extra 100 jin, and their speed decreased substantially.

The increased gravity did not affect the L3 which was Strength-based, but to those Agility-based S3's? It was an utterly lethal move. Under that pressure, they had lost their only advantage: speed.

Facing these S3's that had slowed down, Yue Zhong did not hesitate, swinging his Devil Flame Sword about in attack, he easily decimated the 10 S3's.

After killing those S3's, Yue Zhong charged towards the remaining L3's. With a few plain slashes of his blade, the remaining L3's were all wiped out.

After taking care of these high-level zombies, Yue Zhong swiftly swept any and all drops into his storage ring and jumped on Greenie's back before they flew to the skies. Yue Zhong's strength was indeed tyrannical, but even he could not fend off 100,000 zombies.

When he was in the skies, he looked once more at the battlefield below, only to discover that the once-concentrated and densely packed horde had broken up, scattering in different directions within their various smaller groups.

There were some remnant groups that were still attacking the armored fleet, but even more were dispersing and lumbering off.

The death of the Z2 had caused the horde to lose their commander, and many of the zombies were standing around blankly, without a hint of their hostility earlier.

Xu Zhengang who was stationed within the command centre had noticed the horde breaking apart, and immediately ordered the 1st Division to begin their assault on the leaderless horde.

When the 1st Division arrived at the battlefield, most of the zombies had already broke away, running with a Z1 and escaped in different directions. Those that remained on the battlefield were a few hundred thousand which were still moving mindlessly forward.

Although the horde looked as dominating as ever, without the command of a leader, they could not form into wave after wave of coordinated attack. They could only advance with instinct, and that kind of assault posed no threat to the power of the 1st Division. Pretty soon, they were overcome easily.

The huge horde had dispersed and were scattered everywhere, so even when the soldiers fought till evening time, the 1st Division could not totally annihilate the zombies. They could only retreat under the cover of the armored battalion. It was simple truth that fighting during the night was too disadvantageous.

However, since the commanding Z2 was taken care of, the remaining zombies were still scattered. Having to suddenly evolve a new Z2 required time as well.

The next day, Xu Zhengang got an early start, and had already led the entire 1st Division to launch countless assaults on the various zombie groups both here and running.

As these groups were comprised of mostly ordinary zombies, and their mobility was severely impaired, Xu Zhengang and his troops swiftly caught up.

Under the constant bombardment of the Armored Battalion, huge patches of zombies were blasted into pieces. As a result, those Z1's hiding within these groups abandoned the mini-hordes and retreated under the protection of the other evolved zombies.

With Greenie's help, Yue Zhong managed to dispose of another 4 Z1's, but there were still 3 of them who managed to escape with the cover of other evolved zombies.

Losing the command of the remaining Z1's, the horde of zombies turned into free exp, allowing the troops to slaughter with no efforts whatsoever. Xu Zhengang commanded the troops forward and they took care of the remaining zombies with extreme ease.

The intense battle continued for another 5 whole days, and almost 700,000 of the zombies were annihilated without the control of their Z2 or Z1's.

In fact, they had managed to wipe out over 500,000 of them with the help of heavy firepower. Only because if this had the slaughter of the zombies achieved such a height.

After losing the command of the Z-Types, the zombies did not surge forward like they did initially, and hence the heavy artillery could not achieve similar results as that of the beginning.

After 5 days and almost wiping out all the zombies, Yue Zhong's troops made their way into Long Hai City.

"Congratulations, on recovering Long Hai City and gaining the title [Long Hai City Conqueror]! This title gives you +2 enhancement points in all attributes. This title cannot be re-earned! These enhancements can be stacked!"

"You have gained +3 levels, and gained 6 points of enhancement to be allocated for bringing an army to conquer Long Hai City."

"You have gained 10,000 Survivor Credits for bringing an army to conquer Long Hai City!"

"You have gained a Level 4 Defence Vest for bringing an army to conquer Long Hai City!"

"You have gained an additional skill enhancement point for bringing an army to conquer Long Hai City!"

The moment Yue Zhong stepped into Long Hai City, the various notifications resounded in his head. A huge beam of experience appeared out of nowhere and entered his body, pushing his level to reach Level 48, and garnering him 6 points of enhancement to be allocated.

Yue Zhong chose to enhance 4 points into Agility, and the other 2 into Stamina.

"Level 4 Defence Vest, equipping it provides a +15 enhancement points to all 6 attributes. Furthermore, the Defence Vest can deflect any bullet below a 25-calibre cannon round."

After conquering Long Hai City, Yue Zhong had really obtained a huge enhancement, especially this Level 4 Defence Vest, which was quite obviously a priceless item. It could make a normal person become virtually impervious to most firepower, and obtain stats twice that of another normal person.

As for the skill point enhancement, Yue Zhong did not even hesitate, and directly allocated the point into his Devil Flame. A magic light shined within his mind, as the rune for the Devil Flame glowed, before evolving once again.

"Level 3 Skill: Devil Flame (+3 Enhancement level).....x4 bonus to Devil Flame's initial attack power"

The moment he added the skill point to Devil Flame, his Devil Flame Skill had reached its maximum level. The next step for evolution would be saving 2 skill points before learning the Type 2 Devil Flame Skill.

In Qing Yuan City, there was a tense atmosphere. As everyone was working, they were also awaiting the news brought by Yue Zhong's troops on handling the Long Hai City issue.

If Yue Zhong lost, the terrifying horde would set its sights on Qing Yuan County next, and the recent peaceful lifestyle of theirs would be threatened again.

After 8 days had past, the quiet frontlines finally sent back some amazing news! "Victory!!! Victory!!! Commander Yue has brought his troops and wiped out the million-strong horde! He has already conquered Long Hai City!!! Long Hai City is ours!!!" One of the soldiers ran into Qing Yuan County, as he hollered at the top of his voice.

"That's awesome!!!"

"Great!!!"

"Praise to Yue Zhong!!"

"....."

Hearing this news, all the survivors in Qing Yuan erupted in cheers. They had been praying and hoping for the news of victory. Such sweet news meant that they were free from any zombie threats for a long time. They could set their mind at ease to work, and live on with pride and dignity. The entire Qing Yuan County celebrated, as everyone fell into a festive mood.

After Yue Zhong conquered Long Hai City, he immediately deployed his troops to continue their assault on the zombies in the surrounding towns. Long Hai City had over 6,000,000 citizens previously, and Yue Zhong had only conquered its City centre.

In the villages all around, there were still countless zombies scattered about. If they didn't take care of them now, these zombies could gather again under the birth of another Z-Type, or even evolve and pose a threat to them.

Humans had a strong adaptation ability, so they would do anything to survive. Even when Long Hai City was overrun by over a million zombies, after Yue Zhong had conquered the City, he managed to find over 2,000 survivors from various corners of the City. These survivors had long since been starved and were emaciated severely. Most were down to their very last breaths. At the same time, he found 165 Enhancers, of which 32 had already

leveled above Level 30.

Yue Zhong immediately brought them into his troops, and the 32 Enhancers over level 30 were brought into the Special Combat Forces, becoming part of them.

Yue Zhong also brought about 100,000 survivors from Qing Yuan County and Ning Guang County over to stay at Long Hai City. With an influx of human survivors, the various production plants and factories started operating again.

Liu Yujiao had introduced many people of talents to Yue Zhong, and together with various professionals, new bullets and ammunitions were starting to be manufactured. Of course, since the new workers were not like the factory workers from before the apocalypse, the speed at which ammunition was being manufactured was not as fast.

Even though Yue Zhong had obtained victory over the million-zombie horde, he had expended quite a bit and suffered some loss. After clearing those zombies, his total ammunition count from the warehouse had dropped to half of its original count. As of the near future, he had no means of waging another huge war against another horde of zombies.

After conquering Long Hai City, Yue Zhong's prestige had reached its highest among the survivors, and his soldiers all held high hopes for the future.

"Commander Yue!! The Snake Birth Fruit Tree has again born fruits!!" Xiao Ming found Yue Zhong and reported to him.

Xiao Ming was also a veteran who had followed Yue Zhong from the very start, he had led a small team of elite soldiers and guarded the Mechanized Infantry Brigade with fervor. The location of the Brigade was a classified secret, and other than a few top officials within Yue Zhong's team, no one was allowed to get even relatively near to the Mechanized Infantry Brigade camp.

The fruits of the Snake Birth Fruit tree that could cause people to evolve was the most highly secured trump card of Yue Zhong's.

Chapter 305: Type 3 Nether Beast!

"It bore fruit?" Yue Zhong's eyes lit up, and he quickly followed Xiao Ming to the Mechanized Infantry Brigade.

Currently, there were sentries everywhere within the Mechanized Infantry Brigade. All the soldiers were equipped with modern weaponry, and every 2 soldiers had a rocket launcher and grenade launcher. Furthermore, there were 2 IFVs and 2 Red Arrows hidden within the darkness.

Following Xiao Ming's lead, Yue Zhong came to the trunk of the enormous Snake Birth Fruit tree.

Right in front of the tree, there was the beautiful Chen Yao who was decked in military uniform. Chen Yao had become a female officer with the rank of lieutenant after joining Yue Zhong's troops. Her combat abilities could not match Ji Qingwu, hence she did not join the Special Combat Forces, instead, she chose to take a position within the military. She had the Manipulate Flora ability, and she had come to the Mechanized Infantry Brigade in search of powerful Mutant Plant seeds.

Chen Yao looked at Yue Zhong who was approaching closer, and her eyes flashed with a complicated gleam. This average-looking student who had not raised many eyebrows when he was at school, had actually grown to a leader who was supporting over a 100,000 survivors, had defeated countless zombies and beasts, and actually subdued a few cities. As for her - who was the object of adoration from countless males - she had actually become his subordinate. Some things in the world are just too strange.

[Dedication: Considering you're in a zombie apocalypse, I'm surprised that THIS is what makes you think the world is too strange.]

Yue Zhong glanced at Chen Yao, as he gave a slight nod, before lifting his head up towards the Snake Birth Fruit tree.

Chen Yao and Ji Qingwu knew about the tree and were the rare few who could approach it. Their relationship was extremely close. Chen Yao also knew of the secrets of this tree. As she was one of the first few followers of Yue Zhong, she was also someone Yue Zhong trusted.

Chen Yao glanced at Yue Zhong, and a glint again appeared in her eyes, as she walked to his side without saying anything.

Although she liked Yue Zhong, her pride and dignity would not allow her to make the first move. Since Yue Zhong had not chased her of his own accord, she would not lower herself to beg for his love. However, she could not help but want to get closer to him.

Witnessing this, Xiao Ming left discreetly, not wanting to become a lightbulb in between them.

[Dedication: Am I the only one who'd like every female not to "want to get closer"?]

Since finding out that the fruits of the Snake Birth Fruit tree could cause people to evolve, Yue Zhong did not order anyone to pluck the fruits. Instead, he assigned a huge number of troops to bring the corpses of the zombies to become fertilizer for the tree.

The tree could really absorb, regardless of how many bodies were thrown onto its roots, it would quickly absorb the nutrients, leaving only the bones on the ground. The bones themselves were also stripped of all essence, becoming very brittle, just a light touch could cause them to crumble and disappear.

After a few hundred thousand zombie corpses, the Snake Birth Fruit tree finally bore fruit again. Atop its wide and beautiful canopy, there were countless huge pink flowers, and within them, countless green colour fruits.

Yue Zhong swiftly climbed atop the canopy to conduct a quick search, discovering only 13 pink fruits and 63 green fruits.

"Good!! With this 13 pink fruits, I can gain another 13 Evolvers!"

Yue Zhong eyed the 13 pink fruits, and his eyes flashed, as he reached out his hands for the fruits.

"Yue Zhong!! Look out!!" Right as Yue Zhong was about to grab the fruits, Chen Yao who was standing below looked up and her expression changed, shouting shrilly. At the same time, she threw a strange seed down, and a vine instantly sprouted upwards bringing her towards the canopy.

Hearing Chen Yao's shrill warning, Yue Zhong's heart tightened as he lifted his head. He saw a monster with weird engravings and magic circles all over its blue body, a single horn on its forehead. Its body was long like a snake with no wings, but it was floating in the sky, and it was charging right at him.

"Level 75 Mutant Beast: Type 3 Nether Beast!"

Yue Zhong saw the Type 3 classification, and his expression changed to that of horror, before he immediately activated his Bone Encompassing Armor and Shadow Steps. At the same time, he waved his hand, pulling out the PF98. It was the single most powerful weapon Yue Zhong carried with him at all times, and facing this fearsome Type 3 Mutant Beast, he could only wager it all and hope for the best.

Yue Zhong had just activated his skills, when the Type 3 Nether Beast's horn started glowing and it opened its mouth, as an array of mysterious circles were spat out, shooting towards Yue Zhong.

At that instant, the strange array enveloped Yue Zhong and Chen Yao who had just arrived in front of him.

In a huge flash, Yue Zhong and Chen Yao disappeared.

The Nether Beast then proceeded to fly atop the canopy, opening its huge mouth, and swallowed every single green fruit. After absorbing the 63 green fruits one by one, it flew unhurriedly towards the distance.

The huge Snake Birth Fruit tree had been surrounded by

cameras, and the scene of Yue Zhong and Chen Yao disappearing after the Nether Beast swallowed them had been captured on the screens.

The entire Mechanized Infantry Brigade was activated and the soldiers piloted 4 anti-aircraft guns out and started firing wildly into the skies at the Nether Beast.

However, the speed of the Nether Beast was too fast, and in a few moments, it had travelled far into the horizon.

Soon the news of Yue Zhong's disappearance had travelled to the upper echelons of Yue Zhong's party, and their hearts were shaken.

Chi Yang swiftly recalled all the high ranking officials of both the government and military, and conducted a serious meeting.

"Yue Zhong has gone missing!" The moment they arrived, Chi Yang spoke with a grim face.

Hearing that news, everyone's expression was that of shock, all of their hearts shaken. If Yue Zhong was around, no one dared to start anything funny, but with his disappearance, it would be hard to control this bunch of mavericks.

Da Gouzi was the first one to speak out: "Commander Yue will be fine!! He's so strong, his disappearance this time would not be an issue as well. If anyone dares to betray Commander Yue! I, Da Gouzi, will be the first to deal with him!"

As one of the first few loyal supporters of Yue Zhong, Da Gouzi's achievements had all been a result of Yue Zhong's efforts. He was fiercely loyal and believed in him, he did not want the strongholds Yue Zhong established to be snatched away like that.

Kong Tianyu also piped in with a grim face, looking all around and said fiercely: "Who dares to betray Commander Yue? I will be the first to kill him!"

Wu Guang also spoke out coldly: "Our 1st Division will only listen

to Commander Yue!! If anyone dares to betray Commander Yue, our 1st Division will definitely not let the person go!!"

"Don't worry, no one has that intention!!" Chi Yang frowned, as he spoke out softly: "I have gathered you all to inform you, at the same time, hope you guys can maintain your calm. I believe Yue Zhong will be fine, and he will be back just like previously. We just need to get on with our matters as always, and wait for his return."

Hearing Chi Yang's words, everyone present relaxed. As long as there was no rebellion, everything was fine. It was not like it was the first time Yue Zhong had disappeared, and they believed that Yue Zhong would create miracles, and come back again.

Chi Yang spoke out extremely calmly: "Before Yue Zhong left, he did discuss with me about the next target, which would be Lei Jiang City!! Our next target shall be to conquer Lei Jiang City. Before we set off to do that, we need to make sure that the surrounding villages around Long Hai City are cleared of zombies..."

Under Chi Yang's calm and reassuring demeanor, the entire room was affected, and soon the shock and anxiety from Yue Zhong's disappearance wore off, as they listened to Chi Yang giving out orders.

After the meeting, the generals who held power quickly left, and brought their troops to clear out the zombies surrounding Long Hai City.

Inside the office, a beauty dressed in an OL uniform (OL: Office Lady) walked towards Chi Yang. She was Wang Qian, and she spoke out with undisguised ambition: "Chi Yang!! Yue Zhong has gone missing, it's your chance now. As long as you act, the entire establishment will be yours. You will become the leader of these 100,000-over survivors. You can act independently and there will be no more need to hide in Yue Zhong's shadow!"

[Dedication: Last time, I swear. I've always been waiting for

someone to try to usurp his power.]

Wang Qian had always felt disgruntled with Chi Yang being Yue Zhong's second-in-command. To her, based on Chi Yang's abilities, he could become a capable tyrant. However, because of his relationship with Yue Zhong, he would forever be number 2, and she was extremely unhappy about it.

Chi Yang who was shuffling and tidying his documents looked up and stared at Wang Qian with a cold gaze.

When she was looked upon like that by Chi Yang, Wang Qian was shocked as she spoke loudly: "Chi Yang!! I'm thinking for you!! Think about it, Yue Zhong has always been disappearing. It has always been you who held the fort. You have done so much for the establishment. What's wrong with wanting it for yourself? It's not like he single-handedly carved out the establishment."

Chi Yang looked at Wang Qian, his eyes filled with disappointment as he pointed to the door: "Get out! From now on, we're no longer friends. You're dismissed of any official positions! I don't want to see you anymore."

Wang Qian was shocked and immediately kneeled by his leg as she pleaded: "Chi Yang, what are you doing?! I'm doing this with the best intentions!! I love you deeply!! Please don't chase me away!!"

Chi Yang glared at this woman who forgot her benefactor so easily, and ignored her, shouting: "Men! Drag her out of here!!"

2 soldiers walked in, and grabbed Wang Qian, pulling her out.

"I love you Chi Yang!! Don't throw me away!! I was wrong!!" Wang Qian pleaded miserably as she cried out.

"I don't love you!" Chi Yang coldly glanced at Wang Qian, before he continued clearing the documents. He had no interest in Wang Qian's suggestion. Asking him to betray his best friend and comrade, he would rather die. Wang Qian had thought too little of

Chi Yang's character.

Chapter 306: Remote Jungle!

With a large flash, Yue Zhong and Cheng Yao landed in a forest.

The array that the Nether Beast had spat out was called Spatial Transportation Array, its innate ability was the free control over space and its laws. Yue Zhong and Chen Yao had been absorbed into the array, and transferred to this random foreign place without the slightest ability to resist.

When Chen Yao landed, she fell into Yue Zhong's embrace; fortunately Yue Zhong was sturdy, and did not suffer any injuries.

As Yue Zhong hugged Chen Yao, his heart could not help but skip a beat as he felt that warm and fragrant body. Chen Yao was after all one of the school flowers. She and Ji Qingwu were the pair of scholar and athlete, that held the pride of Yue Zhong's school.

There were countless guys who had been wooing her, and Yue Zhong was just an ordinary university student who was struggling to study while working part-time, and both of them never had the chance to interact.

Chen Yao had slammed into Yue Zhong's embrace. Feeling the warmth of his protection, she was reluctant to get up. However, her prideful nature pushed her to get up from his arms, as her face reddened before saying: "Sorry, it must have hurt!"

Yue Zhong felt a little regret as he lightly smiled: "It's ok!"

Chen Yao observed her surroundings, only to see a seemingly infinite amount of trees, as she asked a little fearfully: "Where do you think we are?"

Yue Zhong laughed bitterly: "No idea."

"However, we're unlikely to be in Long Hai City." Yue Zhong observed the surroundings, looking at the dense foliage and large patches of Mutant Plants, as he frowned and continued.

Chen Yao looked at Yue Zhong helplessly: "What do we do?"

Although Chen Yao had also become a Level 13 Enhancer with the help of Ji Qingwu, her natural combat abilities were not exceptional, and she was never interested in going down the route of a combatant. Now that they had met with danger, she automatically looked to Yue Zhong for guidance.

Yue Zhong pulled out a compass from his storage ring, studying it for a while: "Let's walk to the south!"

Chen Yao followed behind him as he started walking towards the south. White Bones had already separated from Yue Zhong's body wielding its iconic large axe, walking beside Chen Yao quietly. After gaining basic intelligence, it could already make the judgement of who to protect.

[Deduction: Being able to deduct the strength of those around you and knowing whom to protect even though you've sworn fealty to a master. I dare not call that 'basic intelligence'.]

Inside that vast forest, the ground was muddy. Not long after, both of their military boots were covered in mud. Chen Yao's path of enhancement had largely been on Spirit, after walking in that forest for just 2 hours, her face was flushed and her breath ragged.

"Wear this." Yue Zhong observed Chen Yao, before pulling out a Level 3 Defence Vest out, throwing it at her.

"Thank you!" Chen Yao received it and immediately knew the effects of this Level 3 Defence Vest. A sweet feeling arose in her heart, as she thanked Yue Zhong.

The drop rate of Defence Vests were always low, and Yue Zhong only had this Level 3 Defence Vest in his entire stronghold. As for his Level 4 Defense Vest, he only had 1 as well.

After Chen Yao put on the Level 3 Defence Vest, her body felt lighter instantly, and she could match Yue Zhong's pace.

Both of them continued for another half an hour, when they

suddenly heard some rustling sounds. Huge spiders the size of human faces started swarming and crawling towards Yue Zhong, Chen Yao and White Bones in a frenzy.

"Level 16 Mutant Beast: Mutant Venomous Spiders! They possess sharp fangs with paralyzing properties, and as long as they are gathered in a group, they are the most feared killers within the forest!!"

The Mutant Venomous Spiders crawled out from various corners of the forest, packed together densely. It was likely they numbered above 500.

Most girls were usually scared of creepy crawlies such as these, Chen Yao was no different. The moment she caught sight of those spiders the size of a dinner plate with their vicious expressions, her face turned pale, and her hands so clammy, that she even forgot to activate her Flora Manipulation ability.

Yue Zhong on the other hand, had already taken out a .05 submachine gun and started firing wildly at those spiders.

White Bones also started waving its huge axe about, as each flash of the axe meant the death of a disgusting spider.

With Yue Zhong's firing and White Bones limitless hacking, the Mutant Venomous Spiders were decimated, as their disgusting slime were splattered all over the forest ground, which made Chen Yao even paler, to the point of nausea.

As those Mutant Venomous Spiders had weak defences, but quick speeds, even with Yue Zhong's constant firing, a few actually managed to reach his side.

Yue Zhong swiftly kept the .05 submachine gun back inside his ring, and brought out his Dark Tooth Blade, before swinging it casually and splitting the a few Mutant Venomous Spiders into two.

After the deaths of more than 200 Mutant Venomous Spiders, the

rest of the spiders finally noticed that this group of 3 weren't a pushover, as they retreated swiftly.

The corpses of those 200 Level 16 Mutant Venomous Spiders only gave Yue Zhong 3 white treasure boxes and 600 survivors credits. With the passing of time, even the drops of the Mutant Beasts were diminishing in amount and power.

Yue Zhong opened up the 3 white treasure boxes, with a flash, out of the 3, he only managed to take out a white wood cutting knife.

"Level 1 Treasure, Wood Cutting Knife. This treasure can allow you to hack dead wood and weeds, carving a path for yourself within forests."

To Yue Zhong, this Level 1 treasure was not particularly useful, therefore he kept it in his storage ring.

He turned back, and discovered that Chen Yao was crouching and vomiting.

Yue Zhong looked at Chen Yao and frowned: "Chen Yao!! You can't go on like this!! We are currently in a dangerous position, even though we're within a forest. You have to be able to protect yourself, otherwise what will happen if I can't get to you during a critical moment."

If it was within Yue Zhong's establishments, he would not mind her princess behaviour. Even when it was expanding and growing, Chen Yao had remained safe and secure within it. However, they were far away from the safety of their base, and the world was one where the strong preyed on the weak. Her current constitution would only invite countless trouble.

Chen Yao gritted her teeth and said resolutely: "I know...Yue Zhong! I will do my best not to drag you down!"

After which, the trees started moving, as a huge group of Mutant Monkeys were coming closer. The moment they saw Yue Zhong

and Chen Yao, they let out excited shrieks, and charged faster.

"Take care of them." Yue Zhong ordered Chen Yao.

Chen Yao's beautiful eyes flashed with splendor, as she threw 5 Mutant Vine seeds on the ground, activating her Plant Manipulation ability.

Instantly, the 5 seeds grew into small vines, and they shot out towards the Mutant Monkeys in a rush, strangling them to death.

Chen Yao possessed the Level 3 Skill: Plant Manipulation, which was a powerful skill as well. It was just that she disliked fighting, and even though she had a strong ability, she was only Level 13.

As for Yue Zhong's Special Combat Forces, there were many over Level 30 Enhancers and not a single one had a Level 3 Ability, and had actually relied on the various Level 1 or 2 abilities to rise in level and fight.

On one hand, it was that these Level 3 Skills did not just appear freely, on the other hand, most of the strong skills had already been possessed by someone like Yue Zhong, who learnt a few. That was why many of the Enhancers did not have them.

As these Mutant Monkeys were strangled to death one by one, the rest of the group still numbered over 300, and a huge number of them charged towards Yue Zhong's party.

White Bones waved its huge axe, and became like a tornado that charged into the midst of the monkeys, attacking and creating a whirlwind and rain of blood. This way, countless Mutant Monkeys lost their limbs and lives.

Yue Zhong just stood in front of Chen Yao, protecting her, as he watched her control her vines to kill the monkeys. Those who managed to get past White Bones and were rushing towards Chen Yao would be immediately picked off by Yue Zhong.

Under Yue Zhong's protection, Chen Yao focused her attention on using those 5 vines to continue strangling the Mutant Monkeys,

as she gained huge orbs of experience and levelled up.

As Chen Yao was hunting the Mutant Monkeys, those Mutant Monkeys suddenly abandoned all thoughts of attacking Yue Zhong's party, as they swiftly retreated into the distance.

"Hurry escape!!" Yue Zhong's Danger Perception had also notified him, giving him an unprecedented sense of crisis, as he shouted at Chen Yao, and he rushed forward.

Chen Yao turned around, only to see countless enormous snakes with huge mouths that could easily suck her into their stomachs, covered by large green scales, slithering over towards them.

"Level 42 Mutant Beast: Mutant Forest Venomous Snake! It possesses sharp venomous fangs and huge strength. They hunt in groups."

"Wait for me!!" Chen Yao looked at those Mutant Forest Venomous Snakes slithering over. Her face fell, and she shouted out desperately, based on her current abilities, she had no way of winning against these Level 42 creatures.

One of the Mutant Snakes saw Chen Yao, and it opened its jaws, shooting toward her with incredible speed and accompanying wind pressure.

Chen Yao knew that she could not escape the Mutant Snakes with her speed, and hence she commanded the 5 vines to attack the Mutant Snake attacking her.

If Chen Yao was a Level 30 Enhancer that had enhanced her Plant Manipulation Skill thrice, her vines could maybe wrap and cause damage to the Mutant Snake. However, her strength was insufficient to even impede the movements of the snake.

The Mutant Forest Venomous Snake twisted with strength, and the 5 vines were instantly broken apart, as it charged towards Chen Yao with its mouth open.

Chen Yao looked at the Mutant Forest Venomous Snake her eyes

full of despair.

Chapter 307: Type 2 Mutant Forest Venomous Snake!

Just as Chen Yao was about to be swallowed whole by the Mutant Forest Venomous Snake, there was a flash! The huge Devil Flame Sword swung down, directly beheading the Mutant Forest Venomous Snake and causing lukewarm blood to fountain out, splattering onto Chen Yao.

"You're still not running!!" Yue Zhong held the Devil Flame Sword as he pulled Chen Yao and bellowed.

One or 2 of these Mutant Forest Venomous Snakes would not be much of an issue to Yue Zhong, but if the entire group was to charge over, it would be tough. Furthermore, Yue Zhong had detected something with his danger sense. He was almost certain there were multiple Type 2 Mutant Forest Venomous Snakes on their way here!

Having to deal with this many Mutant Snakes, Yue Zhong would have to give it his all.

With Yue Zhong's voice shocking Chen Yao awake, she gritted her teeth and followed Yue Zhong as she ran.

"White Bones! Protect her!!" Yue Zhong eyed Chen Yao, before ordering White Bones.

With her current running speed, it was impossible for Chen Yao to outrun those Mutant Snakes. Yue Zhong could only give it his all to battle with them.

Seeing their own comrades being killed by Yue Zhong, those Mutant Snakes opened their jaws to attack him.

Yue Zhong activated his Shadow Steps at the first opportunity, and moved so fast in and out of the huge group of snakes, he seemed to teleport! The serpents were seemingly dancing in a demonic way, weaving in and out of each other as they lunged and

snapped with their cruel poison fangs. He blocked a venom ball spit at him as he slashed and attacked repeatedly with his Devil Flame Sword causing the striking snakes to be decapitated after each swing.

After killing 6 or 7 of the Mutant Forest Snakes the fishy smelling blood congealed on the ground in small puddles and Yue Zhong had finally arrived in front of the 2 Type 2 Mutant Forest Venomous Snakes.

"Level 60 Mutant Beast: Type 2 Mutant Forest Venomous Snake. It resides in the deep parts of the forest, and can easily crush and swallow an elephant whole. It also possesses a Consumption skill and a venom with nearly a unrivaled corrosive nature"

2 huge snakes the size of a house were coiled together like some demented lesser Orochi or some such beast. Yue Zhong looked up and saw that their bodies had scales as big as faces, and they they expertly blended in with their surroundings while emitting a terrifying aura.

The 2 Type 2 Mutant Forest Venomous Snakes eyed Yue Zhong with their intelligent serpentine glare, as though they were looking at a weak and easily swallowable prey.

One of them opened its jaws wide, and started to Inhale with all its strength, as a monstrous consuming vortex pulled on Yue Zhong, threatening to yank him into its gaping maw.

Within that huge suction force, countless stone fragments, twigs and leaves were all gulped into the Type 2 Mutant Forest Venomous Snake's mouth, disappearing into the inky blackness.

Yue Zhong pulled out his Black Tooth Blade and struck it down furiously into the ground to stop himself from being drug by the consumption ability. As he secured his footing, he turned around pointing his finger at the Type 2 Mutant Snake and conjured a Devil Fireball which flew along with everything else in the air before exploding in its mouth.

While the small fireball could not take the life of such an enormous beast, exploding in its mouth would surely cause it terrible and unimaginable pain.

The Type 2 Mutant Snake let out an a bloodcurdling screech which turned into an anguished howl as it closed its huge mouth.

Yue Zhong did not dare to be careless, and immediately pulled out his PF98, firing a round after aiming it at that Type 2 Mutant Snake.

The missile shot forward with a flash, as it exploded on the body of the Type 2 Mutant Forest Venomous Snake, resulting in a predictably large and bloody hole.

Other than Turtle who had the Ice Manipulation Ability which placed it amongst the top Type 2 Mutant Beasts, Yue Zhong had not come across any other Type 2 Mutant Beasts that could withstand a round from the PF98.

However, this Type 2 Mutant Forest Venomous Snake was apparently pretty fearsome. After suffering that attack from the PF98, even though it had a huge hole in its body now and even though it bleed steadily, it still did not die. As It struggled in immense pain, it crashed and flopped, causing the trees around it to fall due to its massive body.

The other Type 2 Mutant Forest Venomous Snake opened its huge mouth, and a thick cloud of jade green poisonous gas shot towards Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong's expression changed, and he activated his Devil Flame. He enclosed himself within the ball of flame, as he tried to navigate his way out of the oversized cloud of poison gas.

The coverage area of the poison gas skill was too huge however, even though Yue Zhong pushed his speed to the extreme, he had no way of breaking out of that gas in a short moment.

When the gas touched the trees and branches, they withered

instantly, even the stones that got in range cracked and crumbled into dust. Any living creature that got caught within the enveloping gas was quickly turned into a puddle. It could be easily seen how terrifying the poison was.

When the jade green poison gas came into contact with Yue Zhong's Devil Flame that surrounded him, the Devil Flame blazed brightly and became the perfect counter. The gas would swoop in and instantly burn up with a swishing sound, at the same time, it turned into poisonous smoke that floated to the skies.

When Yue Zhong saw this, he heaved a sigh of relief. As he continued to run, he waved his hands and another of his pre-loaded PF98 appeared. He aimed it at the Type 2 Mutant Forest Venomous Snake and fired, and with a roar of flame, the rocket shot out explosively, spiraling towards its target.

Only this time, the rocket had not even left the PF98 for a terribly long distance, before it was Corroded by the poison gas, and immediately melted into a useless glob. The melted rocket soup simply splattered on the Type 2 Mutant Snake's body.

"Powerful!!" Yue Zhong exclaimed and sucked in a breath of humid air, as he witnessed the effects of the poison gas on his missile. If it wasn't for the protection of his Devil Flame, he would surely have long since been melted down!

The uninjured Type 2 Mutant Snake's eyes glinted with wrath, as it continually spewed out large volumes of the poison gas towards Yue Zhong.

A huge part of the gas also shrouded the Type 2 Mutant Snake itself, enveloping it, however, its scales and body excreted a strange mucus, which protected itself from its own poison.

Yue Zhong's Devil Flame was continually burning with crackles and hisses. Sadly, even though it was the perfect counter to the poison gas, with every second that it was activated, Yue Zhong's Spirit was being expended to support its activation.

"Damn bastard!! These Type 2 Beasts are indeed scary!!" Yue Zhong's eyes flashed coldly, as he left the epicentre of the poison gas, charging towards the Type 2 Mutant Snake.

In comparison with regards to holding out, Yue Zhong could not hope to match the Type 2 Mutant Snake with his Spirit and Stamina, he could only attempt to take down the Type 2 Mutant Snake within the short time period. This was the best way to ensure he had a fighting chance at survival. Fortunately, he had already injured the other Type 2 Mutant Forest Venomous Snake, otherwise he was most likely dead already.

In a few short breaths, Yue Zhong had arrived in front of the Type 2 Mutant Forest Venomous Snake, as he condensed part of the Devil Flame into the 6m-long Devil Flame Sword and swung it down onto its scaled head.

After enhancing the skill three times, the Devil Flame Sword that required 20 Stamina and 50 Spirit points to form was seemingly invincible. The swing directly took the head of the snake off its body, causing blood to forcefully blast all over him, before the body slumped to the floor lifelessly.

"Congratulations on achieving Level 49. You have gained 2 points of enhancements to be allocated."

The moment Yue Zhong decapitated the Type 2 Mutant Snake, the sweet notification sound rang out within his mind.

Before Yue Zhong even made his decision, he felt a huge sense of danger behind him! He tried to turn but the distraction meant he didn't have the time to react, before the remaining Type 2 Mutant Forest Venomous Snake crashed into him viciously.

Yue Zhong was knocked forwards and crashed heavily into a tree by the charging attack! The resulting impact caused his ribcage to immediately snap in most places! If his body wasn't strong enough, or it was someone else with an Endurance of less than 70, this one move could easily take the life of that person.

Yue Zhong spat out a mouthful of fresh blood, and expended a fearsome 20 points of stamina to condense his Devil Flame Sword into a spear, flinging it with all his strength towards the remaining Type 2 Mutant Forest Venomous Snake.

The Devil Flame Spear shot towards the Type 2 Mutant Snake and through sheer luck penetrated its brain! The flame roared then immediately combusted, turning into raging fiery flames that started burning within the snake, roasting the brains and flesh, thereby turning them into ash.

After he took care of the remaining Type 2 Mutant Snake, he quickly made his way towards the perimeter of the gas with his heavy injuries.

With each step he took, Yue Zhong felt his sharp pains in his chest. Having a broken ribcage, most ordinary people would have found it hard to even walk. However, Yue Zhong's body was resilient, and with the Level 4 Skill: Regeneration, his body was already repairing itself. At most, it would require a day for him to return to his tiptop condition.

The other remaining 23 ordinary Mutant Forest Venomous Snake could feel the blood scent from Yue Zhong, and their eyes flashed with reptilian greed, as they quickly slithered over. Consuming high-level Mutant Beasts, Enhancers or even zombies would allow them to quickly evolve, and hence Yue Zhong was like a piece of delicious meat in their eyes.

"Even if I'm injured, you piled up trash shouldn't piss me off!" Yue Zhong's eyes flashed coldly, and he stopped running. Instead, he raised his hand and pulled out yet another pre-loaded PF98, and fired it at the group of Mutant Snakes.

With a flash, the group of Mutant Snakes were caught in the explosion, and many of their bodies were blasted into pieces.

Yue Zhong swiftly kept back his PF98, before he pulled out another PF98 and fired it at a single Mutant Forest Venomous

Snake that was slithering towards him, exploding it to a rain of smoking meat balls.

The flashes from the firing continued without stop, as Yue Zhong aimed and fired all around him with a resolute look on his face. Countless Mutant Forest Venomous Snakes were blasted into smithereens, their blood puddling and corpse chunks piling up on the floor of the forest.

After 18 of the Mutant Snakes had died, the remaining 5 Mutant Snakes seemed to realise that Yue Zhong was too tough to handle, and they quickly slithered away.

When he saw that the remaining Mutant Snakes had retreated, he heaved a sigh of relief, and he checked his PF98's, discovering that there were only 9 rounds remaining. If he had to fire all of them, he would lose one of his strongest weapons.

Yue Zhong looked at the forest ground that was littered with the corpses, and his heart could not help but ache. These high-level Mutant Beasts were all treasures, as their meat could be treated as nourishment, and their bones could be formed into weapons, while their tendons could become good bows, and their hide turned into protective clothing.

However, he was currently without his subordinates, and his storage ring had a limit to its capacity, and hence he could only keep the truly precious items, regardless of how tempting and useful the corpses of these Mutant Beasts might be.

After the poison gas had dissipated, Yue Zhong walked to the 2 Type 2 Mutant Beasts that he had killed, and he picked up the 2 dropped skill books and 400 survivor credits.

"Level 3 Skill Book: Forest Ranger Transformation! Active Skill. After activation, user will become a forest ranger. Within the forest, user will be granted with high Agility, high danger perception, strongbow skills, extraordinary night vision, and the ability to navigate through any terrain. The strength after

transforming into a Forest Ranger is dependant on user's 6 attributes. Can be maintained for 10 minutes. After 10 minutes, user will be rendered weak."

[Dedition: Gotta love our MC's 'luck'.]

"Level 4 Skill Book: Type 2 Forest Ranger Transformation! Active Skill. Requires a 3 times enhanced Forest Ranger Transformation skill. Requires 2 Skill Points to use."

Yue Zhong looked at those books and he frowned, keeping them into his storage ring. They were skills meant for forest battles. Even though they were extremely useful in their current situation, it was specialized only in such terrains and was not suitable for Yue Zhong who was adapted to and focused on evolution in all situations.

Therefore, he instead opted to keep them and pass them down to someone suitable.

Yue Zhong looked at the corpses of the Type 2 Mutant Snakes, as he swallowed some Life Saving Grass, before burrowing into the head of one and pieces of the other snake, retrieving the blood essence and nuclei.

After digging those out, he took out his Black Tooth Blade and started carving the scales off.

The scales of these Type 2 Mutant Snakes were the same as the Type 2 Mutant Black Scaled Boars, if they are used to manufacture more armor, Yue Zhong would have more troops that would be impervious to guns and weapons, only their heads would be exposed.

In fact, Yue Zhong's troops suffered little loss overall, mainly due to the fact that a large number of them were protected and equipped with such defensive hides. They were much tougher than the protective vests prior to the apocalypse, and only heavy artillery could pose a threat to them.

Chapter 308: Mutant Leeches Rain, Myriad Mutant Mosquitos Swarm!

"Amazing!!" Chen Yao came to the clearing under White Bones' protection, and seeing the numerous corpses, her heart was filled with shock.

"Go skin the snakes!" Yue Zhong looked at Chen Yao, before he casually threw a Dark Magic Blade towards her.

Chen Yao accepted the Dark Magic Blade and did not say anything more, instead she went towards one of the Mutant Forest Venomous Snake corpses. Forcing down her fear and disgust, she started to pry open the tough scales.

White Bones walked to Yue Zhong's front, as it lifted its head to look at Yue Zhong. Suddenly it grabbed the venomous fangs and activated its Bone Manipulation Ability.

Upon activation the essence from the bones of the Type 2 Mutant Forest Venomous Snake started flowing into White Bones. After about 5 minutes, the entire 70m-long skeleton was absorbed into White Bones.

The huge Type 2 Mutant Snake was reduced to half its size.

Yue Zhong retrieved 2 cups of Divine Spring Tea, and took out a can of Type 2 Meat and started helping himself. With the nourishment from the Divine Spring Tea, his Spirit was replenishing at a quick rate. The Type 2 Meat also helped him regain a huge part of his energy. Using the Black Tooth Blade to skin the scales of the Type 2 Mutant Forest Venomous Snake was too tedious, and it could not match the ease of using his Devil Flame.

Using the Divine Spring Tea, Life-Saving Grass as well as the Type 2 Mutant Beast Meat, Yue Zhong's injuries started to heal at an extreme rate. His Level 4 Regeneration ability was boosted with

the help of the Type 2 Mutant Beast meat, and his broken ribcage knitted itself back together with waves of horrendous itching. By the time he consumed the 8th canned meat, his ribcage had finished mending.

"The Level 4 Skill is truly powerful!" After his body recovered, Yue Zhong jumped down easily from the top of the Type 2 Mutant Forest Venomous Snake, before he stretched his healed body, and revealed a satisfied expression.

Yue Zhong activated his Devil Flame again, condensing a smaller 3m-long Devil Flame Blade, before he continued butchering the 2 Type 2 Mutant Forest Venomous Snake. In a short while, he turned them into sizeable chunks of meat.

Yue Zhong then enveloped the pieces of meat with his Devil Flame, burning them down into ash, before leaving the snake skin intact.

White Bones used its Bone Manipulation to clean up the Mutant Beasts' bones, while Yue Zhong made use of his Devil Flame to clean the blood and meat, and all that was left was the precious snake skins.

Using these methods, Yue Zhong soon turned the 20+ corpses of the Mutant Snakes into ashes, leaving only the skins.

"Let's go!" After finishing, Yue Zhong turned to Chen Yao and spoke.

Chen Yao followed Yue Zhong as they started to walk out.

"Shit!!" Yue Zhong had just taken 2 steps, when his face changed, and he immediately grabbed Chen Yao and dashed towards the distance.

From a distance, a few gigantic Mutant Crocodiles could be seen crawling towards them. They were attracted by the smell of the blood from the Mutant Forest Venomous Snakes.

These Mutant Crocodiles were extremely deadly when they

attacked, their speed almost too fast to be seen! When they were crawling on land, they did have a handicap but their speed still reached 3 times that of normal people!

Yue Zhong carried Chen Yao and ran like crazy, stopping only after a dashing nearly a kilometre away.

The moment they reached the 1km mark, passing by another patch of forest, small Mutant Leeches the size of 2 fingers dropped from the trees like rain.

"Level 6 Mutant Beast: Mutant Leech. These greedy bloodsuckers could drain even a Mutant Cow dry in roughly 30 seconds."

Yue Zhong's reaction was extremely quick. The moment those leeches dropped from the trees, he had already activated his Devil Flame skill. His right hand extended towards the sky as he conjured a terrible fire that enveloped all those Mutant Leeches.

With the burning of the Devil Flame, those who tried to drop and land on Yue Zhong and Chen Yao were immediately incinerated. If it wasn't for Yue Zhong's quick reactions, he and Chen Yao would have long been latched on to by these disgusting worms.

Those who landed further away did not stop wiggling, as they made their way towards Yue Zhong and Chen Yao.

Chen Yao looked at those Mutant Leeches as they wiggled about and her eyes flashed with shock, as she stepped on them.

With each stomp of Chen Yao, those Mutant Leeches would be driven into the mud, but they did not stop moving about and we're obviously not affected by the kicks and squishes.

Leeches were originally extremely resilient, after mutation, their resilience mutated to become stronger, in addition to the muddy ground, it was hard for these Mutant Leeches to be stomped to death.

"Quick, let's leave!!" Yue Zhong grabbed Chen Yao, and activated the Tornado ability of the Tornado Necklace he had on, and a

hurricane blew out with him in the centre, extending outwards.

With the strong gusts of winds, the moment those Mutant Leeches dropped, they would be blown away.

Yue Zhong carried Chen Yao and made his way towards the outskirts. Chen Yao was only about 100 jin (50kg), and Yue Zhong had no problems lifting her. When he was undergoing tough training, he usually carried over 200 jin (100kg).

They kept running, and finally they managed to extract themselves away from the leech-infested forest.

They had just exited from the Mutant Leech forest, when they heard the droning hum of countless wings, only to discover a huge swarm of black Mutant Mosquitoes! Each of them was the size of a finger, flying towards them like a huge windstorm.

"Level 2 Mutant Bug: Mutant Poison Mosquitoes! These countless little monsters will suck you dry by the time you notice them."

Yue Zhong's expression turned for the worst, and he again immediately activated his Devil Flame, enveloping him and the mosquitoes were predictably burnt up the moment they came in contact with the fire.

Chen Yao remained hugging Yue Zhong tightly, only by being in his embrace, did she feel the warmth and security. Initially, she thought that while she may not be an expert at Level 13, she was still at least capable of protecting herself. However, the events today and the future prospects had opened her eyes to the reality of the world. With her current measly strength, she was nothing to these fearsome Mutant Beasts and nature.

Even Yue Zhong who was pretty strong would be dead if he was surrounded by a group of Type 2 Mutant Beasts.

Yue Zhong charged straight at the windstorm of Mutant Mosquitoes, under the protection of the Devil Flame, a large number of them were instantly incinerated.

Feeling the fiery heat of the Devil Flames, the swarm of mosquitoes made to avoid Yue Zhong, and allowed him to run past them.

Only after breaking free and leaving them far behind, Yue Zhong then heaved a sigh of relief.

"We need to leave this place fast!!" Within this forest, they had met wave after wave of Mutant Beasts and Mutant Bugs, even Yue Zhong was starting to feel weary having to deal with them continuously. If he stayed there for too long, who knows, he might be worn down and killed if he was careless.

After leaving the swarm of Mutant Mosquitoes for yet another 1km, they had to deal with a few harassing Mutant Monkeys, before they finally saw a small town with a few buildings.

When they saw the small town, Yue Zhong eased up a little, compared with the Mutant Beasts with different types of abilities and numbers, the ordinary zombies from a town were definitely easier to handle.

As long as there wasn't a horde of over 10,000 zombies, Yue Zhong had confidence he could wipe them out.

Yue Zhong pondered for awhile, before he took out a huge bag with food and tools from inside the storage ring. That way, regardless of how he retrieved anything, people would assume he took it from the bag, and not suspect it was due to the precious storage ring.

After settling this, Yue Zhong brought Chen Yao towards the small town.

The moment they entered, the zombies who caught scent of the smell of humans lumbered over.

"Get rid of them!!" Yue Zhong eyed those zombies, and gave a command to Chen Yao.

Now there was only the 2 of them, Yue Zhong had no choice but

to push Chen Yao, he did not want to drag along a burden in this alien location.

Within the forest, if there wasn't Chen Yao, he could at least survive on his own. But since he had her along, it would be dangerous. He needed to ensure her safety, which would put himself into more danger, and it would be hard to escape from it.

When Chen Yao heard Yue Zhong's orders, she grabbed a vine seed, and activated her skill, in a blink, the vine seed transformed into a huge vine that went straight for the heads of those zombies.

These unevolved ordinary zombies were weak. It was so much so that even a heavy wooden plank could break their brittle bones, they were naturally unable to resist or defend against the strength of the vine, as it cut off their heads.

Those zombies that were constantly rushing up, regardless of L1s or S1s were all unable to handle the strength of that vine, allowing it to display its ferocious strength.

It was just that Chen Yao's abilities were simply too weak, her Spirit was too low, after killing over 20 zombies, her face was flushed and she was perspiring, her breath ragged. The control of the vine expended too much of her Stamina and Spirit.

"Alright, take a break!! Follow me!!" Yue Zhong saw that Chen Yao had lost half her battle strength, and lightly shook his head before charging into the zombie group.

The blade flashed about, any zombies that got too close would be immediately chopped up.

Chen Yao looked at Yue Zhong easily crushing his way through the zombie group, her eyes filled with admiration and envy, as she followed him closely.

Chapter 309: This is Vietnam!

"This isn't China!!" Yue Zhong was killing the zombies effortlessly, as he looked around, and discovered that the writings on the buildings around were characters he did not recognize.

After gaining the Language Skill, he learnt Russian, English, Chinese and Japanese. Yet the words on the buildings and constructions around did not match any of these 4 languages.

Yue Zhong aimed as he waved his blade about, killing another 3 zombies, before he asked Chen Yao: "These words, do you recognize them?"

Yue Zhong had been an ordinary student during his university days, and was always hardworking in his life as well as studies. However, prior to the Apocalypse, language was one of his weakest points.

Chen Yao casually looked at the surroundings and she saw more words. Then she took some time to think as she continued to scan her surroundings before replying: "I don't recognize these words. But I have a feeling this place is in Vietnam!"

I have been to Hanoi for a holiday, and the words there and here seem very similar. Furthermore, there are many motorcycles, and the houses are built like matchboxes."

Chen Yao stared ahead, noticing that there was a pile of scattered coins on the road, as she immediately picked them up, and revealed a confident smile: "Now I'm very certain that this is Vietnam! Look Yue Zhong, these are Vietnamese Dong!"

Chen Yao waved the Vietnamese Dong, and was smiling extremely sweetly. She finally proved that she was not just a useless decoration, and could be useful when the situation required. 1*

Yue Zhong continued asking: "Which part of Vietnam do you

think we are in?"

"Not sure..." Chen Yao felt discouraged.

"Regardless, let us first try and survive!!" Yue Zhong laughed lightly, before swinging his Dark Tooth Blade. He continued to care freely carve out a road of slaughter, leading Chen Yao and White Bones towards a small supermarket. Yue Zhong got White Bones to guard the entrance, while he and Chen Yao made their way into the building.

The moment they entered, Chen Yao rushed towards the female restroom, and grabbed a few rolls of sanitary napkins, skincare products, cleanser, soap and the like, stuffing them into a huge military bag.

"Why are you packing these items? You should pack more food and drinks right?" Yue Zhong grabbed a few canned food and beef before striding over, looking at Chen Yao stuffing those items into her bag as he asked cluelessly.

If Yue Zhong did not have the storage ring, he would definitely only keep food and high-calorie food, as well as water and weapons.

"Yue Zhong, you really don't understand women! These are necessities to us women." Chen Yao looked at Yue Zhong, before saying a little coyly, "Also, don't you have a storage ring? Use that to keep more food and water!"

Without sanitary napkins and clean undergarments, Chen Yao felt that she would go crazy.

On top of that, with Yue Zhong's current strength, it was not an issue for him to obtain food, he pondered a while, and did not press for Chen Yao to throw those items away.

Yue Zhong then gave a pink Snake Birth Fruit to Chen Yao and said: "Eat this!!"

"Snake Birth Fruit!! You're really giving it to me?" Chen Yao

looked at Yue Zhong handing her that precious fruit, her heart skipped a beat, as her beautiful eyes remain fixed on Yue Zhong, and asked with a shaky voice.

Snake Birth Fruit! The fruit of Evolution!! The secret of this Snake Birth Fruit was a classified secret even amongst Yue Zhong's stronghold, only Chi Yang, Ji Qingwu, Da Gouzi, Xu Zhengang, Liu Yan and Guo Yu, etc. Only the top brass knew about it.

Chen Yao only had knowledge of the secret of the Snake Birth Fruit because of her close relationship with Ji Qingwu, therefore, she knew it was extremely precious, that huge Snake Birth Fruit tree would only bear slightly less than a 100 fruits after consuming over a few hundred thousand zombies.

Yue Zhong looked at Chen Yao and said indifferently: "Just eat it!"

As they were in a foreign place, having the strength of one more combatant was definitely better! Although Chen Yao was weak, and lacking in battle experience, as well as possessing a low combat ability, after becoming an Evolver, her strength would definitely increase. This would be a good thing to him.

He didn't let Chen Yao evolve while they were in the forest because the evolution process required a day's worth of recuperation. The time period required meant that staying in the forest would be too dangerous.

Chen Yao received the Snake Birth Fruit and swallowed it without hesitation. Becoming an Evolver was the dream of many people. Even under Yue Zhong's command, the total number of Evolvers now were only about 30. Their preciousness and rarity was obvious.

After she swallowed the Snake Birth Fruit, she started to run a fever and as expected, fainted.

Yue Zhong carried her to the second storey, and laid her on a bed.

He then strolled over to the nearby window and looked out, peacefully enjoying the scenery of the place.

On a small slope a distance away, 5 short Vietnamese were huddled within a grass patch. Whispering to themselves, they all stole glances towards the supermarket.

The supermarket had never been opened before, and there was bound to be plenty of food in it. At the same time, it was a man-eating trap. Many, many survivors had been enticed by the food and tried to open it up, but all failed miserably and became part of the zombies.

One of the more handsome Vietnamese men looked at the supermarket, before saying a little apprehensively: "Fan Tongxuan!! Do you really want to go over there? With just us? There's no way, we can't make it in. Let's go back!!"

Another man, who had extremely tanned skin, ripped muscles, and a fierce expression, responded in a gruff voice. "Damn it! Huniu Shishan, If you're scared get lost and go eat that other shit! That kind of life, I've had enough!! Tree bark, vegetable roots, sweet potatoes!! I'm sick of these unappetizing foods!!"

A wretched-looking man called out coldly: "Ai Luode! Then you charge up!! I will help you look after your daughter!! Nowhere other than her bed obviously!!"

The tanned and muscled man was a Vietnamese called Ai Luode. Even though he was Vietnamese, he had taken on an auspicious sounding foreign name. As for his original name, he had long since discarded it.

Ai Luode eyes flashed with fury, as he spat out the words: "Fang Chunyi, one more word from you and I'll slaughter you!!"

Fang Chunyi laughed coldly: "Not only am I not gonna stop, I will say even more! You let an American fuck your bitch of a daughter, why can't I? I know this, Tom fucked both your wife and daughter

together!! I remember it was for a bag of instant noodles right!!"

That seemed to have hit a raw nerve. Tom was an actual American who was Ai Luode's backer before the apocalypse.

Due to his support, Ai Luode had managed to build a fortune for himself. The downside? As Tom's dog he had given his own wife to be teased and toyed with by Tom. After the apocalypse, he even gave his daughter to Tom in exchange for a bag of instant noodles.

Now, these dark and secret things that he did were actually mentioned by someone else, Ai Luode charged towards Fang Chunyi furiously, and they started to brawl.

The leader, Fan Tongxuan, who was holding a rifle immediately pointed it at the two men fighting and called out: "Shut up! Whoever causes trouble, your father, I, will kill that person first!"

During the Vietnam War, almost all the Vietnamese were soldiers so normal citizens had access to guns. Fan Tongxuan's family had carefully kept and saved a rifle. During these post-apocalyptic times, he had become the leader of a small faction just by relying on this rifle.

With that threat, both Fang Chunyi and Ai Luode separated, as they glared at each other.

One of the Vietnamese suddenly exclaimed softly: "Fan Tongxuan, there's someone inside the supermarket!!"

Everyone looked over, and saw Yue Zhong who was gazing out the window and observing the sights.

As they looked at Yue Zhong, their hearts were shaken with the thought: "What! There was actually someone inside!?! Impossible! There are 2 ghost zombies inside!!"

Only those Enhancers who possessed the Eyes of Perception could tell the information and abilities of the zombies and Mutant Beasts. Fan Tongxuan and the rest of these Vietnamese survivors weren't survivors, and could not tell the differences between

zombies. They had thought that the S2's were ghost zombies.

Taking into account that S2's possessed speed far exceeding normal humans, with the 2 S2's hiding inside the supermarket, no ordinary humans could enter.

Yue Zhong's perception was extremely astute. The movement from those Vietnamese who saw him put him on alert! He zeroed in and caught sight of them through the Barrett Sniper rifle he had produced from his ring when he first was jolted into action. After sighting in he carefully aimed at them.

This Barrett Sniper rifle was one of the few treasures Yue Zhong obtained within the huge armory. It possessed absolutely devastating firepower, and its stability was top-notch.

"What? So they are just normal survivors?" Yue Zhong observed them carefully and quickly shouldered his Barrett Sniper rifle.

Fan Tongxuan and the rest of the Vietnamese had pale looks of fear and sweat. Their very best weapon was only an old Type 56 semi automatic rifle, which didn't pose much of a threat to Yue Zhong.

This single action from Yue Zhong had thoroughly frightened those Vietnamese silly. Only after Yue Zhong put away his gun, did they recover from their shock. They instantly bolted for cover, their hearts thumping with fear. They did not recognize that world-famous sniper rifle, but they could feel the pressure and danger from it.

Yue Zhong eyed these Vietnamese as they did not do anything wrong in his eyes. Merely, now that Chen Yao was recuperating, he needed to watch over her until she finished her Evolution.

Huniu Shishan's heart was thumping as he quickly said: "Let's leave now! Otherwise we will surely all be killed by him!!"

The rest of the Vietnamese all looked towards Fan Tongxuan.

Fan Tongxuan sighed for a moment, after thinking awhile, he

could discern Yue Zhong's intentions to some degree. "No! If he had wanted to kill us, based on his abilities, a number of us would have died already! I believe he doesn't harbor any killing intent towards us..."

Chapter 310: Fan Tongxuan!

Huniu Shishan's eyes lit up: "Then we can trade with him!! Since he entered the supermarket, he must have a good haul! We can take some items to exchange with him!!"

One of the Vietnamese, Huan Yuanji frowned: "Since he already possesses the whole supermarket, what can we trade with him? Sweet potatoes? Wild vegetables? Or tree bark?"

These Vietnamese survivors were at their wits' end, otherwise they would not have risked their lives to come and make an attempt on this supermarket. They would naturally not have any items worth trading for.

Fan Tongxuan pondered deeply, before saying: "Women!! We can use women to exchange food with him!! Ruan Minghou, go call your sister over. Ai Luode, bring your daughter over as well."

1*

Both Ruan Minghou and Ai Luode both turned around silently, as they crouched and entered the forest, leaving the place.

After a while, a voluptuous, healthy-looking beauty of 1.6 metres with defining features as well as another 16-17 year old mixed-blood girl with blond hair, big black eyes and fair skin came over.

The healthy skinned voluptuous beauty was called Ruan Chunhua, and was Ruan Minghou's elder sister. The pretty mixed blood girl was Ai Luode's daughter, Aina.

Ruan Chunhua and Aina were the best beauties this little group could bring out. During this post-apocalyptic times, women selling themselves for food was not a big deal. They had slept with countless men, and were indifferent to the trade that these guys wanted to propose to Yue Zhong. There was more concern about how delicious the food would be.

On top of the arrival of the 2 ladies, they had brought a long

white cloth, writing some Vietnamese words on it: "Esteemed powerful person, we hope to trade with you!"

Fan Tongxuan stood on the small slope and opened up that huge white cloth, as he looked expectantly at Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong who was within the supermarket observing his surroundings looked at the words, and was still as blank as ever, he did not understand what they stood for.

He thought for a while, then found a bedsheet, and wrote on it with chinese: "I am Chinese!"

After which, Yue Zhong threw up the bedsheet and hung it out the window.

Fan Tongxuan stared at the bedsheet for awhile, before softly speaking: "That is chinese!! That man is from China!!"

Fan Tongxuan did not know Chinese as well, however, the words "China" were pretty obvious, and even he could recognize it. At the same time, based on the Chinese that Yue Zhong had written, he had formed the assumption that Yue Zhong was in fact from China.

Fan Tongxuan turned around and asked the rest: "Who knows Chinese here?"

One of the Vietnamese Wu Tongwen spoke out with a little anger: "Fan Tongxuan! Do we really have to deal with that Chinese guy? The Chinese aren't a good bunch! They stole our South China Sea!!"

2*

Amongst the Vietnamese, there were a few who were on friendly terms with the Chinese, while there was also a group who could not see eye to eye with them. This Wu Tongwen was on the side of those who disliked the Chinese.

Fan Tongxuan looked at Wu Tongwen as he frowned: "I don't

really care about the damn sea. All I know is, if we don't deal with that Chinese guy, then we have to go into the Forest of Death to look for food. If you, Wu Tongwen, are willing to go look for food in the Forest of Death for all of us, then we'll leave now."

The rest of the survivors also looked at Wu Tongwen coldly. In the Forest of Death, there were countless fearsome Mutant Beasts and Bugs. Even for someone as strong as Yue Zhong, if he were to be the slightest bit careless, he could lose his life in there, not to mention an ordinary person like Wu Tongwen. Although they were locals, they were wary of the Forest of Death.

However, there were indeed some Mutant plants and various small Mutant Bugs that could be eaten. The risk of death was too high though, when this group of survivors was at its peak, there were 26 males who could go out to hunt for food, now they were only left with 7.

Fan Tongxuan had seen a survivor being sucked on by a Mutant Mosquito until he was literally dried up, that scary scene and the anguished howls of the survivor, caused him to be unable to sleep for a few nights.

To these survivors, the matters about territory, country and history couldn't be any less important. They just wanted to live on. Furthermore, the world had already become like it was, and they could not even fend for themselves, let alone worry about some useless piece of territory.

Seeing the cold gazes of his comrades, Wu Tongwen also calmed down, and shrank back like a quail. He was very clear about the dangers of the Forest of Death, he was also unwilling to risk his life to hunt for food in it.

Fan Tongxuan continued: "Who knows chinese?"

The rest of the 6 male survivors all looked at each other, as they shook their heads.

"I know a little chinese!" At this time, Ruan Chunhua stood up, and told everybody.

Ruan Chunhua had intended to marry off into China as a bride before the apocalypse, and had learnt a little basic chinese. She was unclear about the complicated phrases and words, but conversational chinese was still somewhat manageable.

Fan Tongxuan did not request for Ruan Chunhua to write some nonsense about China-Vietnam relations or a long-winded message, instead, he set the bar pretty low: "Great! Write this: 'Hello, esteemed powerful person, we hope to trade with you.'"

In this post-apocalyptic world, to these lone rangers, the relations between China and Vietnam was worth only shit. The only thing that could interest these characters was benefits.

Ruan Chunhua followed Fan Tongxuan's wishes and wrote those words on the white cloth, before Wu Tongwen waved it upon Fan Tongxuan's orders.

Yue Zhong stood at the window and saw the scrawly chinese characters, he chuckled, before he wrote: "Not free today! Come again tomorrow!"

Yue Zhong had to guard Chen Yao who was undergoing evolution, these survivors weren't of paramount importance to him. Of course, if he could gain some form of intel from their mouths, it would be best, otherwise, it wasn't an issue. Based on his strength, he just had to follow the path of civilization to come to a dwelling with humans.

Fan Tongxuan turned to Ruan Chunhua and asked: "What did he write?"

Ruan Chunhua thought hard before replying: "It should be that he's not free today! He wants us to come again tomorrow."

If Yue Zhong was unwilling to come over, Fan Tongxuan and the rest were helpless to that as well. The zombies were easy to kill for

Yue Zhong, however, to these common survivors, a simple S2 and L2 could wipe them out, therefore, they did not dare enter the small town.

A day passed just like that, and Chen Yao who ran a fever throughout the night had successfully Evolved and woke up the next morning.

She opened her eyes, and saw Yue Zhong sitting beside her sleeping without changing, and her eyes flashed with gratitude, and she leaned forward to kiss him lightly on his lips.

After that kiss, Chen Yao seemed to flush red and her heart thumped, before she quickly curled up in her blanket, her emotions in turmoil. This prideful princess had actually kissed someone of her own accord.

"Chen Yao, what's wrong with you? How could you initiate the kiss! He's a flower-hearted carthead! You can't like him!!" Chen Yao was in a dilemma as she chided herself. She had started to fall for Yue Zhong very early on, but was adamant on not admitting it. This time Yue Zhong had helped her Evolve, and he even stood guard over her throughout the night, which touched her greatly. That slight sweet feeling had transformed into a surge of love like a torrent, which thoroughly confused this poor girl who hadn't ever even dated before.

Not long after, Yue Zhong opened his eyes, and he stood up. Yawning, he looked at Chen Yao and asked: "Chen Yao, what's your current condition now? Did you succeed?"

Hearing Yue Zhong's voice, Chen Yao swiftly checked her own status, and immediately broke out in a huge smile: "En! I succeeded! I'm a Spirit-based Evolver, and my Plant Manipulation has been enhanced!"

After becoming an Evolver, Chen Yao's strength predictably leaped overnight, to almost 4 times that of her condition prior to evolution. Especially now that her Plant Manipulation had been

enhanced once, her skill prowess was strengthened by at least half.

Chen Yao was also very clear that only with overwhelming strength could she protect herself. In a place without the military and other experts protecting her, she could only rely on herself and the man in front of her.

Yue Zhong looked at the excited Chen Yao as he laughed: "Alright! Let's go, someone has invited us!!"

"En!!"

Chen Yao followed behind Yue Zhong, as they walked towards the outside of the compound.

The moment the 3 of them left the supermarket, zombies started to shuffle over and surround them.

Chen Yao looked at the moving zombies, as she eagerly spoke out: "Let me!!"

Yue Zhong nodded his head, he was not interested in dealing with these low level zombies. Right now, to level up by killing these ordinary zombies, he had to kill more than tens of thousands of them. It took up too much time and expended too much energy, Yue Zhong did not have that kind of time to waste.

Facing those encroaching zombies, Chen Yao grabbed her vine seed, and activated the lvl 4 Plant Manipulation ability. In the next instant, 10 vines as thin as arrows shot out towards the heads of the zombies, and easily pierced through a dozen of them. She then pulled back with her strength, causing those zombie corpses to be swept to the side.

After evolving, Chen Yao's stats all improved, and her Spirit also increased to twice its original number, at the same time, her Plant Manipulation ability received an enhancement, and she could do even more interesting things with her vines. One of them was that she could condense the vine to be as strong as steel for the span of a few seconds.

One S2 which was currently hiding in the midst of the zombies, suddenly sprang out and rushed towards Chen Yao at the same moment she was distracted in her triumph.

Chapter 311: Naba Town

Facing facts, Chen Yao's speed could never match an S2. Suddenly, her command experience learned at the Snake-Birth Tree site took over and she had no time for panic. Instead, she pointed at the attacking S2 and the numerous vines sprouted myriad 1 inch serrated thorns and shot towards it turning into an absolutely lethal net!

The S2 was extremely agile, yet it could not evade the oncoming net, and was immediately tangled within it. It started struggling frantically, waving its sharp claws about, tearing holes into the living net.

Just as the S2 was about to extract itself, the countless vines tightened up to bind the limbs of the S2.

While the S2 was an evolved form, its strength was not exceptional, and it could not overcome the tough vine spikes.

One of the thinner and sharper vines shot towards the struggling S2, and penetrated its head, nailing it to the ground.

A huge orb of experience entered Chen Yao's body. Since that S2 was a Level 30 Evolved zombie, killing it represented a huge amount of experience for her. She instantly gained 3 levels upon absorption, reaching Level 19.

The more she killed the more excited she got, and Yue Zhong just followed behind as they eventually arrived at the slope.

Fan Tongxuan brought the survivors from yesterday as they humbled themselves and came to Yue Zhong respectfully: "Honorable lord, how do you do!! I am Fan Tongxuan! I am excited to meet you. How should we address you?"

Ruan Chunhua stood beside Fan Tongxuan acting as his translator, using blunt chinese translation to convey his message.

The rest of the 6 Vietnamese males were all attracted to the

beautiful Chen Yao. She was naturally beautiful, and possessed a graceful aura. In addition to the military clothes on her, which gave her a heroic feel, it added to her charm. Furthermore, Chen Yao had never been through any difficulties, and her skin was full of splendor. She was not like most of the other survivors who had become emaciated or had their skin come to bear an unhealthy yellowish colour. 1* Therefore, Chen Yao was extremely attractive to them.

These Vietnamese then retracted their gazes with reluctance to look at Yue Zhong again. He had a Dark Tooth Blade by his waist, and his back had a Barrett Sniper and .03 rifle, which also attracted the men.

In this post-apocalyptic world, strength was everything. The fearsome might of the Barrett Sniper far surpassed the old Type 56 semi automatic rifle of Fan Tongxuan.

Yue Zhong looked towards Fan Tongxuan and said directly: "I am Yue Zhong!! This is my friend Chen Yao, this is White Bones."

Yue Zhong pulled out a can of corned beef from his bag, and asked Fan Tongxuan directly: "What is this place? Whoever can answer my question, this can of corned beef will be his!!"

The moment he took out the corned beef, all gazes were locked upon it as if hypnotized. It was a can of corned beef after all, and these people had not had meat for God knows how long.

Ruan Chunhua looked at the can of beef and her eyes flashed with greed, as she immediately replied in a supremely detailed manner. "This is Nabu Town! We are about 80Li (*2) away from Lang Son City. If you want to go back to China, you can follow the main road towards the northeast direction. If you do that, you will eventually come to Friendship Town in Chinese lands. Can you give me the can of beef now?"

Yue Zhong laughed and threw the meat over to Ruan Chunhua: "Good!! This is yours!"

The can of beef was nothing to Yue Zhong. However, to these Vietnamese survivors, they were precious commodities. The males eyed the beef in Ruan Chunhua's hands, their expressions full of envy and jealousy. They suddenly hated themselves for not learning Chinese, and could only see the beef being taken by Ruan Chunhua.

After giving the can of beef to Ruan Chunhua, Yue Zhong turned around and made to leave. Other than the current location, there was nothing else that the Vietnamese could offer him which would shake his heart.

Fan Tongxuan's face fell, and his eyes flashed with hope, as he shouted: "Please wait!! Esteemed Yue Zhong! I have important intel for you!! Ruan Chunhua, quickly tell him!!!"

It was rare to be able to converse properly with a strong Enhancer like Yue Zhong that did not harbor any ill intent, and Fan Tongxuan wanted to continue dealing with him, to gain some benefits.

Ruan Chunhua rushed to Yue Zhong's side, and hastily translated Fan Tongxuan's intentions. If she caused Fan Tongxuan to become infuriated with her because of inaction, her subsequent days were sure to be tougher.

Yue Zhong stopped in his tracks and turned his head to ask Fan Tongxuan: "What intel?"

As Yue Zhong was unfamiliar with the place, and had practically no knowledge whatsoever. In any foreign situation, having information could help him deal with things to come. He was of course, accordingly open to hearing good Intel as a result.

Fan Tongxuan heaved a sigh of relief, as he humbly spoke: "Esteemed Yue Zhong, it would not be easy to say it all here. May we invite you to come with us, let us treat you properly, before we speak further?"

This was after all a wrecked mockery of the old "civilized" society. Here and now, lives were cheap. Fan Tongxuan wasn't some greenhorn who didn't know this. He had interacted with Enhancers before, and knew that most of them were brave and had a little bit of luck, which allowed them to become Enhancers.

Some were extremely tyrannical and oppressive, killing without a word. Fan Tongxuan did not want to accidentally offend this Enhancer in front of him due to lack of manners.

"Fine!!" Yue Zhong pondered a while, before nodding his agreement.

Even if he were to return to China, making his way back to Long Hai City would definitely be tough. Staying a while to gain some information at Fan Tongxuan's headquarters would not affect anything anyway. Gaining more local information could also potentially help save his life in the long run.

Under Fan Tongxuan's lead, Yue Zhong and his party came to a small 4-story bungalow that was built in the middle of nowhere. Countless weeds and wild grass were growing all around it in an unrestrained manner.

In the field, even though there were a lot of wild grass patches growing, they were not edible. If humans were to eat them, they would suffer from painful diarrhea, enough to make you scream. Some of the grass was even worse and could cause deadly poisoning. Therefore, Fan Tongxuan and his group could only try to find some of the safely edible ones within those patches. It was pretty much like searching for a proverbial needle in a haystack.

Yue Zhong's party arrived and went to the dining hall of the bungalow. All the males were seated at the table, and because of Yue Zhong, Chen Yao sat with them as well.

Not long after, a few scrawny boys and girls walked out, and sat huddled around a smaller table.

The women of the bungalow started serving and distributing the food to everybody.

The main staple food for the people here was a Mutant Sweet Potato that was the size of a wooden cask. Each male had 3 thin slices of the sweet potato as well as a soup.

The women had a slice as well as a bowl of soup.

The children needed nourishment, so they had 2 slices and a bowl of soup.

These women and children were savouring their meals quietly, no one had the look of being mistreated.

Seeing this, Yue Zhong nodded to himself quietly. Perhaps the whole world hadn't gone to shit. He could see that these survivors still had their basic decency, and were living as well as they could. In this post-apocalyptic world, women and children who were weaker were usually worse off, if they met a cruel leader, they would be killed or eaten.

Chen Yao looked at the food, and lost her appetite, instead she felt like throwing up.

The soup was made of wild vegetables, roots, slices of sweet potato, white rice, ants, grasshoppers and earthworms, sprinkled with a little salt. Seeing the dead insects floating atop the soup, Chen Yao instantly felt nauseous.

In truth, these bugs and insects were valuable sources of nutrients, the women only had clear soup. Only the men had such delicacies within them.

Fan Tongxuan looked at his portion, and his eyes lit up in delight, as he instantly slurped it down, while chewing on a grasshopper and said: "Today's soup sure is flavourful!"

Yue Zhong saw this and he couldn't help but raise his eyebrows, before passing his soup and sliced sweet potato to a pregnant lady as he said mildly: "This is for you!"

As entertainment was almost non-existent, the only form of activity for the adults was the most ancient of mainstays: Sex!

Amongst these Vietnamese women, there were 3 pregnant already. Compared to the rest of the women, these pregnant women only had twice the amount of sweet potatoes, and their soup had more ants or grasshoppers.

"Thank you!!" The pregnant lady immediately thanked Yue Zhong profusely. While these small foods weren't much to Yue Zhong, to these ladies, it was a source of nutrients that was hard to come by. Although she could not understand what Yue Zhong said when he spoke to her, she still thanked him.

"Take these!!" Chen Yao saw a way out, and immediately passed her plate and soup to another pregnant lady. She did not want to eat or drink that soup.

After Yue Zhong gave away those provided foods, he opened his own bag, and pulled out 2 sirloin fried potatoes (*3) and 2 bottles of flavored drinks. He then proceeded to open them up and started stuffing himself.

On the other side, Chen Yao also opened up a type 2 canned beast meat to eat.

At that time, Fan Tongxuan and the rest had just finished their own meagre dinner, and they looked on at Yue Zhong and Chen Yao, swallowing their over produced saliva.

Many of their gazes travelled to the bag that Yue Zhong placed on one side. In their eyes, that bag of food and drinks was more valuable than gold at this point of time.

Yue Zhong ate a few mouthfuls, before placing the can to one side, and spoke to Fan Tongxuan: "Can you tell me the important info now? I have food here, if you give me enough information, I will let you have the food you want."

Fan Tongxuan looked at the can of meat that Yue Zhong just took

a few mouthfuls of, and he swallowed his saliva before he asked:
"Are you still going to eat that? Can I have it if you don't want it
anymore?"

Chapter 312: Ambush!

Yue Zhong eyed Fan Tongxuan, then gave him the canned meat.

Fan Tongxuan received the canned meat, and in front of the jealous gazes of the rest, he put it away carefully. This half-eaten canned meat was enough to last a whole day.

After keeping the canned meat, he saw Yue Zhong staring at him fixedly, and his heart went cold, before he started telling Yue Zhong all he knew: "Lord, it's like this...."

As Yue Zhong listened to Fan Tongxuan, his eyebrows started to knit. It seemed that the road ahead was not going to be optimistic.

Nabu Town was part of Lang Son City, and was considered as part of the northern Vietnam's sphere of influence. The difference with the southern Vietnam was that, many of the Vietnamese here view China with hostility. After the Sino-Vietnamese War over 30 years ago, these parts of Vietnam hated the Chinese.

After the apocalypse set in, a genius by the name of Wuyan Hong rose up in these parts, and he managed to subdue the Vietnam Army by his own and formed a huge power of over 30,000 people as the main governing faction, possessing a mighty force with firepower.

Vietnam had many forests, and there were Mutant Beasts everywhere. Wuyan Hong had tried to recapture Lang Song City countless times but failed due to the Mutant Beasts and zombies. He had then readjusted his strategy, and went towards China's borders, attacking Friendship Town and obtaining countless firepower, instantly boosting his strength.

He was not only a genius of Vietnam, he was also thoroughly vicious and intensely patriotic. The Chinese people that he caught would be treated worse than pigs and dogs because of old country grudges. As long as he discovered the existence of a chinese person,

he would capture the person, either killing him or making him into a slave.

If Yue Zhong wanted to cross Friendship Town to get into China's place, he would have to pass by Wuyan Hong's borders.

Fan Tongxuan had known so much, because Ruan Minghou and Ruan Chunhua were survivors that had escaped from Wuyan Hong's stronghold. They had escaped because Ruan Minghou had offended one of the small powers within Wuyan Hong's stronghold, and he was afraid that he would not live to see another day, therefore they ran.

"This is going to be tricky!" Yue Zhong frowned, to cross a territory where all the regular people had hostility towards the Chinese, it was not an easy task by any stretch of the word.

Fan Tongxuan was observing Yue Zhong as he was pondering, and could not help but blurt out: "Lord, why don't you stay? As long as you stay, we're willing to follow you!!"

Yue Zhong heard Ruan Chunhua's translation and was taken aback: "I'm Chinese!"

Fan Tongxuan maintained his serious expression as he said: "I know! But as long as you can lead us to live better, even if you're Satan, we're willing."

Fan Tongxuan could tell that Yue Zhong wasn't some maniac who killed without reason, therefore he entertained the idea of following Yue Zhong. Many ordinary folks just wanted to survive in this post-apocalyptic world, whoever became their leader was of no concern, as long as they could give them a better life.

Yue Zhong shook his head and rejected: "No way! I'm heading back to China, I can't stay here long!"

Yue Zhong's establishments and friends were all in China, not Vietnam. Even if he put in the effort to set something up here, it would be to someone else's benefit, not his.

After hearing Yue Zhong decline, Fan Tongxuan was extremely dejected. With such a character as a leader, their group of survivors would definitely be able to live better. He could also relinquish the heavy responsibilities as a leader.

In this world, to be a morally upright leader with a conscience was incredibly tough. Finding enough food for the survivors was a problem in itself.

"This is for your information!!" Yue Zhong took out 10 assorted cans of meat, 3 bottles of milk, and a bag of rice as he gave them to Fan Tongxuan.

Fan Tongxuan looked at the pile of food and was shocked. You could even say he was elated! With this amount of food, as long as they ate sparingly, they wouldn't have to worry about food for another half a month.

Fan Tongxuan then pointed to Ruan Chunhua and Aina, asking Yue Zhong: "Lord, would you like to have some fun? They can do anything, would you like them to give you a good time? Just for a bag of salt, they can accompany you for three days."

Both Ruan Chunhua and Aina walked to Yue Zhong's front, Ruan Chunhua even hugged her ample chest tightly, her arms beneath her breasts, to give a clearer view of her voluptuous figure. She gave Yue Zhong a coy wink and proceeded to translate Fan Tongxuan's words. They weren't exactly unfamiliar with providing sexual services, and in this post-apocalyptic world, they had done it plenty of times. Furthermore, Yue Zhong wasn't like those normal handsome men, but he wasn't ugly either, and he was definitely stronger than most Vietnamese men.

Hearing Ruan Chunhua's translation, Chen Yao immediately scowled and spoke loudly: "No way!!"

All of their gazes landed on Chen Yao, and she flushed in embarrassment, before gritting her teeth and loudly proclaiming: "Yue Zhong is my boyfriend!"

*1

*2

*3

Ruan Chunhua looked at Chen Yao and smiled: "Miss Chen Yao! We don't mind, we can even join you with him. We promise to make you feel good."

To Ruan Chunhua, exotic things like an orgy wasn't exactly something new or anything.

Chen Yao grabbed onto Yue Zhong's arms and pleaded with him, his cheeks red with embarrassment: "Yue Zhong!! Reject them quickly! As long as you reject them, I'll give you a kiss!"

Chen Yao's pleading look was extremely cute and Yue Zhong was charmed, as he took out a bag of salt and threw it to Fan Tongxuan and said: "Alright, this is for you! As for them, it's fine. My girlfriend doesn't like it."

Fan Tongxuan accepted the bag of salt, and did not press Yue Zhong further, instead, he spoke attentively: "Lord Yue Zhong, since it's so late, would you like to rest here for the night?"

Yue Zhong and Chen Yao had arrived at this town late in the evening yesterday. Chen Yao had rested an entire day, and it was almost nightfall already.

Yue Zhong thought for a while and accepted the invitation.

With nothing out of the ordinary, Yue Zhong and Chen Yao were arranged to stay in a room together. Of course they were given the master bedroom and inside the room there was a huge fluffy bed. Chen Yao looked at the bed and couldn't help but pout: "Only one bed?"

"Why don't you sleep on the floor then, I'll sleep on the bed!" Yue Zhong chuckled, as he took off his coat, revealing the body armor made of the Type 2 Mutant Black Scaled Boar's hide, and

immediately sat on the bed. Being in such foreign places, Yue Zhong was always on the alert, and would not easily take off his protection.

Chen Yao then crawled onto the bed, as she rested her cheeks on her hands, and she let out an incredibly attractive smile: "You're so ungentlemanly! You want to let a beauty like me sleep on the floor? No way, why don't you sleep on the floor! Let me help you set the blanket down there."

Yue Zhong immediately closed his eyes and laid on the bed: "I'm going to sleep!"

Chen Yao came over to lightly nudge Yue Zhong, seeing there was no effect, and smiled : "Rogue!"

After which, she laid quietly by Yue Zhong's side, and looked at his face. Only 2 to 3 hours had passed since she awoke from her Evolution coma, and she was not in the least bit tired. However, as night had fallen, there was nothing to do, she could only look at him.

Soon after, sound of moaning came from the rooms below, sounding in Chen Yao's ears, causing her to flush red, as she laid on the bed tossing and turning, not able to sleep.

Wu Tongwen was hugging a long spear as he sat at the garden of the bungalow, keeping watch silently.

There were no zombies in the vicinity, but they had to be on guard for any Mutant Beasts. If there was no sentry, even a Mutant Cat could cause the survivors to perish at its hands.

Peng! Peng!

Following some gunshot sounds, the lock on the gate was shot. With a bang, the gate was kicked wide open.

A few militants came rushing in, carrying guns.

"Who are you guys?" Wu Tongwen saw these armed men with

ferocious expressions and he turned pale, his hands trembling as he was holding the spear, not daring to move. If he was not careful, he might just be executed on the spot.

The leader of this squad shouted at Wu Tongwen: "We are the vanguard team of the Great Empire of Vietnam! Go bring out your food and women."

Wu Tongwen eyes lit up as he replied excitedly: "Sir!!! I want to report!! There are 2 Chinese people who have run here, one man, one woman. The woman is extremely pretty!!"

The officer's eyes brightened up as well and said: "Pretty Chinese woman!?! Hurry bring us to her. We will go and capture her!!"

"Yes!!" Wu Tongwen replied zealously, and led the few vanguard members of the Great Empire of Vietnam into the bungalow.

The entire bungalow was soon filled with the astonished cries and moans of women.

These vanguard members weren't decent men, the moment they rushed into the bungalow, it was to start raping the Vietnamese women. This was the power and authority they exploited and enjoyed by being vanguard members.

The leader brought 7 soldiers and followed Wu Tongwen towards the room where Yue Zhong and Chen Yao were sleeping in.

The moment things started happening within the bungalow, Yue Zhong had already opened his eyes wide with wariness. He heard the noises and he immediately picked up his .03 rifle and Dark Magic Blade beside him.

The Black Tooth Blade was over 2m-long, and not suitable for combat within this cramped room. Therefore, he had prepared a Dark Magic Blade to keep by his side just in case.

At this time, there was an urgent knocking on the door. At the same time, Ruan Chunhua's anxious voice sounded out: "Lord Yue Zhong!! Lord Yue Zhong, hurry open the door!! It's me Ruan

Chunhua!!"

Yue Zhong gave a command to White Bones who was standing at a corner like a gruesome decoration and said: "Open it!"

White Bones went to open the door.

Chapter 313: The Army of the Great Empire of Vietnam!

The moment the door opened, Ruan Chunhua rushed in with an anxious look as she quickly called out: "Lord Yue Zhong!! There are men rushing up below! They are the vanguard team of the Vietnam Army! They're here to capture you!! Hurry and run!!"

Yue Zhong looked behind Ruan Chunhua as he spoke mildly: "Nah, it's too late, they're here!"

Ruan Chunhua turned around, and her expression turned to fright as she saw Wu Tongwen leading the 8 soldiers from the vanguard team. Wu Tongwen had the cold look of a hunting viper as he stared at Yue Zhong and Chen Yao.

The moment the leader of the vanguard saw Chen Yao, his eyes gleamed with an undisguised perverted glint, as he licked his lips and laughed coldly. "What a pretty Chinese girl! I want to train her to become my bitch!! Hahaha!!"

The other soldiers also had looks of desire on their face as they called out: "Captain!! Before you train her to be a subservient bitch, let us have fun with her as well!!"

"Yeah Captain!! Let us all have our turn!!"

"Captain!! Let us play with her too!!"

"....."

The 7 other soldiers had started hooting and calling out. They had never come across a beauty such as Chen Yao before. Chen Yao looked at the 8 men with their undisguised lust as she frowned and asked Ruan Chunhua: "What are they talking about?"

Ruan Chunhua had hidden behind Yue Zhong, as she translated the words of the vanguard team fearfully. Hearing it, Chen Yao's expression turned pale, and her eyes flashed with fury.

Wu Tongwen pointed to Ruan Chunhua and he asked the leader: "Sir!! Can I keep her?"

The leader replied lazily: "Sure I can let you play with her a few times. However, unless you can obtain some merit, you shouldn't even think about owning her!"

"Thank you....." Wu Tongwen bowed and thanked the officer for his graciousness, but as he straightened up, a gunshot rang out and his brains were drilled through and through. The bullet blasted out the wall and away as white bone flecks and red meaty brain-flesh splattered against the wall. His lifeless corpse slowly collapsed to the floor with a look of surprise forever frozen on its face

Before the rest even reacted, Yue Zhong was holding the Stinger pistol. He coldly ordered White Bones: "Other than the leader, kill the rest!"

White Bones charged into the midst of the 8 warriors, and it raised its hands as 5 incredibly sharp spikes shot out. Each spike was expertly aimed and pierced the heads of 5 of the men. The spikes hit so hard that they ended up splitting their skulls clean open, and made their brains see through!

Yue Zhong lifted his .03 rifle, firing 2 shots with his enhanced accuracy, and the bullets landed on the heads of the remaining 2, causing their Cranial sections to explode violently.

In just an instant, 7 people had died under Yue Zhong's hands, even before the officer managed to react! He was still trying to pull out the gun at his waist to counter attack.

It was just that the moment he moved, Yue Zhong had activated his [Art of Fear] skill, using a thick fearsome Spirit Wave to assault the mind of the officer, causing him to faint.

"Incredible!! He's too amazing!!" Ruan Chunhua watched Yue Zhong and White Bones slaughter the vanguard team with ease. They even ended up knocking a person out without even touching

him, and she was so excited that her entire body felt a thrill, and she even got a little wet! This man in front of her was without a doubt an extremely strong Enhancer, and she was terribly pleased to have made the right bet with him.

Ruan Chunhua was an intelligent woman. Since she and her brother were at odds with the Vietnam Army, if they were brought back, they would definitely not receive a good ending. Therefore she chose to rely on this man who had managed to kill a horde of zombies without batting an eyelid. After once again looking at the corpses on the floor, she knew she had won her bet.

"Tie him up!" Yue Zhong glanced at Ruan Chunhua, and threw a large coil of rope from his bag to her.

"Yes Lord!!" Ruan Chunhua replied with extreme reverence. She was now filled with admiration and idolization for Yue Zhong. His show of strength was worthy of her utmost devotion now.

*₁

Ruan Chunhua quickly tied up the officer tightly.

"Let's go!"

Yue Zhong left White Bones to protect Ruan Chunhua, while he swiftly made his way downstairs with Chen Yao.

At the moment, there was no one standing guard below. All the Vietnamese soldiers were on top of the local women, each one thrusting away profusely. The earlier gunshots above gave them the impression that the Chinese intruder must have been dealt with. They had enquired carefully, and confirmed that there was only a Chinese man up there. After all, they had 8 members who went up, and no one thought that it would be possible for a single Chinese Male to take down 8 fully armed men. *₂

Yue Zhong immediately shuttled into the midst of the connected bodies, his hand was firmly grasping his Dark Magic Blade as it flashed about. The heaving and grunting instantly grew quieter as

several of the Vietnamese soldiers were decapitated. Their bodies collapsed and their necks sprayed fresh, hot blood onto the shocked women below them.

"Ah!!" One of the women saw the tumbling head, and let out a panicked scream.

That shrill scream alerted the rest of the men who were still engaged in their rape of the other women, their gaze traveling towards Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong eyed those 6 soldiers and coldly ordered: "Chen Yao! Capture those 6 men alive!"

Yue Zhong's abilities were focused on offense, hence his strength was extremely oppressive. For him, killing was easier than capturing. Chen Yao's ability was, on the other hand, infinitely more suited to capture. Receiving his order, Chen Yao activated her [Plant Manipulation] Ability, and the seeds in her hands quickly grew out to become 6 long vines. She sent them snaking towards the 6 Vietnamese soldiers at a near lightning speed, tying them up efficiently.

Yue Zhong continued advancing forward, putting on some speed. He shot through the different groups all about the different stories, decapitating any soldiers he came across. In his wake, fountains of blood appeared as numerous heads fell to the floor, and the crimson rain came down, dyeing the entire place blood red. Yue Zhong was like a god of slaughter as he made his way throughout the bungalow, and pretty soon, the entire vanguard team was wiped out.

The entire bungalow was filled with fresh corpses. It gave people a sense of dread. "So strong! What a fearsome person!! Fortunately I did not offend him!!"

Fan Tongxuan had brought his 6 remaining male survivors over to help. As he saw the headless corpses lying around, and Yue Zhong wielding his Dark Magic Blade while not even looking out of

breath, his heart was shaken.

The Great Empire of Vietnam also needed to fill their ranks, so they had only tied up the male survivors, not killed them. Basically, they were bandits who also did not kill indiscriminately. Likewise, even some maniacal Enhancers might not stoop so low as this.

The 6 male survivors had pale faces as well, and as they looked at Yue Zhong, their gazes were filled with newfound respect and awe.

The women who were raped had also recovered by this time. They did not have any dismal or heartbroken expressions though, instead they dragged the corpses outside and started to bury them. It was not that they were kind-hearted. instead, if they did not dispose of these corpses properly, the scent of the blood could very well attract the unwanted attention of Mutant Beasts.

Yue Zhong sat on a chair, and he looked at the 7 captives, asking coldly: "Who are you guys?" Ruan Chuhuan stood at the side and translated, conveying Yue Zhong's and the captives' intentions back and forth.

"Pei!! Fuck your mother! You Chinese dog!!" One of the captives glared at Yue Zhong with a searing gaze. Yue Zhong's eyes flashed with iciness, as he gave an order: "What a tough nut! Then, you shall taste the punishment of having a broken back! White Bones, break his waist!"

White Bones immediately swung its axe, and chopped the captive in two at the waist.

"AH!!!!!!"

The captive immediately screamed out loud in soul wrenching anguish, as his innards and blood all splattered out. He didn't die at first, instead he continued to struggle in agonizing pain, holding in his intestines, until he died miserably in front of everyone present.

Chopping a person in two was definitely one of the most cruel

forms of punishment in human society, and could allow the person receiving the punishment to feel the maximum amount of pain. Seeing the agonized expression on their comrade as he died, the rest of the captives had a look of fear in their eyes. The rest of the inhabitants and Fan Tongxuan also looked at Yue Zhong with fear. In their eyes, Yue Zhong had suddenly transformed from that amiable strong Enhancer to a ruthless killing demon.

Yue Zhong eyed the rest of the trembling soldiers, and he immediately pointed to the one who was shaking the most and spoke: "Who are you guys? You! Speak!" The moment the soldier saw Yue Zhong pointing at him, his face turned ashen and he quickly blurted out: "I'll speak! I'll speak!!"

Right beside that softie, another Vietnamese soldier immediately reprimanded him fiercely: "Wutan Tong! You traitor!! You traitor!!"

Yue Zhong waved his hands, White Bones immediately shot out a bone blade, and chopped the soldier who had verbally lashed out. The attack split his head in half and spilled its contents on the floor with a PLOP! Seeing this terrifying scene, the weakling male broke down completely as he cried: "Lord!! Don't kill me!! I'll speak!! I'll tell you everything!!"

Following this, Wutan Tong told Yue Zhong all he knew. This vanguard team was one of the small teams deployed by the Vietnam Army towards Lang Son City to find survivors, at the same time, they were to gather intel.

When Wuyan Hong had attacked Friendship Town, he had captured many Chinese survivors along the way. He was a racist through and through, and kept them all as his personal slaves. At the same time, he was starting to lack manpower for his army, the government, as well as factories. Thus, he had sent out teams towards Lang Son City to gather survivors, and attract Vietnamese into his stronghold.

From Wutan Tong, Yue Zhong gained important information about Wuyan Hong's troops.

Chapter 314: A Sneak Attack

Wuyan Hong's Great Empire of Vietnam Army had a total of 14 battalions, numbering 7,000 soldiers. At the same time, the current number of survivors under his banner had reached 50,000, instead of the 30,000 that Fan Tongxuan said.

During the period of Ruan Minghou and Ruan Chunhua's escape, Wuyan Hong had launched many successful campaigns on various small survivor establishments, absorbing them into his own power, expanding and gaining more manpower.

Other than that, there wasn't only Wuyan Hong's power in this region, but many other powerful factions standing toe to toe with each other.

In the direction of Gaoping City, there was a Vietnamese called Lee Guangyi who had raised a Vietnam Revival Army. It was a stronghold with over tens of thousands of survivors as well.

In the direction of Taiyuan City, there was a faction calling themselves the Vietnamese People's Army.

And in the direction of Mongcai City, there was a faction called the Mongcai Revival Party.

These were all strongholds with over ten thousand survivors within them. Other than these major factions, there were countless other smaller powers as numerous as raindrops scattered throughout Vietnam now, and the power conflict was extremely complicated. It was almost as problematic as China now.

Wuyan Hong knew about the existence of these factions because of radio. However, due to the roads being unsuitable, these powers had refrained from engaging in all-out firefights, choosing instead to focus on swallowing smaller powers, and expanding their own reach.

Amongst them, Gaoping City's Vietnam Revival Army and

Taiyuan City's Vietnamese People's Army had expanded till they had come across areas under Wuyan Hong's control. Both sides have engaged in a few firefights, testing each other's strength.

After losing resources over such tests, all 3 parties had sent out negotiators and men to engage in a meeting and negotiation, finally coming to an agreement of an alliance.

After all, they were all Vietnamese, and there wasn't any form of blood debt between any of them. At the moment, they did not fully join each other, due to the differences in strength. As long as their power distribution reached a similar level amongst one another, the group would become a terrifying existence.

As long as these 3 Vietnamese forces worked together, they would become a powerful and tyrannical force in this post-apocalyptic times.

Hearing Wutan Tong's information, Yue Zhong's heart fell, as long as those 3 worked together, it was going to bad news.

Especially since amongst the 3 of them, Wuyan Hong was such a racist. If he became the leader of the 3 powers, to the Chinese in this post-apocalyptic times, it was going to be a disaster.

As long as a racist became the leader of a large power, to those who are subjected to his or her views, it would be a nightmare. The events of World War II due to Hitler's views and actions had proven it to be such a case.

Yue Zhong frowned, as he pondered a while, before he looked at Wutan Tong. He threw a tang blade in front of him, pointing to the captain of the squad, and ordered: "Go chop his head off! As long as you're my underling, you won't die! If he doesn't die, you'll have to!"

Since Wutan Tong had already given in once, his situation could not be salvaged. He took up the Tang Replica Sword, and his eyes flashed with fierceness, before he screamed angrily and lopped the

head of the captain off. He picked up the bloody head and he kneeled in front of Yue Zhong: "Your subordinate is willing to fight for you."

Yue Zhong nodded his head, as his gaze travelled to Fan Tongxuan: "Fan Tongxuan, if you want to rely on me, kill this man. As long as you kill him, you will receive my protection."

Fan Tongxuan hesitated a while, as he thought back to Yue Zhong's ruthless and vicious methods, before he received the Tang Replica Sword from Wutan Tong's hands. He immediately swung down on another captive, before turning around to proclaim loudly: "Lord Yue Zhong, I'm willing to serve you."

Yue Zhong saw that Wutan Tong and Fan Tongxuan had both submitted to him, before he faced Chen Yao who was standing beside him, asking: "Chen Yao, I'm going to go and raid Wuyan Hong's establishment. Are you going to come with me or stay here?" Chen looked at Yue Zhong, her eyes flashing with a resolute glint: "I'm coming with you!"

Yue Zhong pointed to another captive, saying: "If you want to come, kill this man!"

Chen Yao had been under Ji Qingwu's protection all this while, and had not actually tasted any hardship. While she did kill a number of zombies and Mutant Beasts under Yue Zhong's guidance, she had not yet killed another person. Without experiencing it first, she would never be able to grow into a proper combatant.

The soldier who was pointed at by Yue Zhong immediately wailed: "No!! Don't kill me!! Don't kill me!! I surrender! I'm willing to surrender!!"

Just now, those captives had seen it plainly for themselves. Whoever was pointed at would soon become a corpse, this led them to be filled with fear.

Chen Yao's face went white, as she looked at the captive, and a hint of reluctance showed in her eyes. She hesitated a while, but in the end, she still activated her Plant Manipulation Ability, and the vine shot out to pierce his brain, nailing him to the ground. He was dead.

Chen Yao looked at the miserable plight of the captive, and she immediately felt nauseous, as she turned around to vomit, her face ashen. Although she had seen countless deaths, it was the first time she actually killed someone with her own hands.

The remaining captives were then killed by the other survivors under Fan Tongxuan as a form of guarantee of their subservience.

Yue Zhong brought out the equipments worn by the vanguard team and handed them out to the few survivors: "These are your weapons!"

Even Ruan Chunhua got a handgun and rifle.

Fan Tongxuan and those who got guns were extremely excited, as they played around with the guns in their hands. In this post-apocalyptic world, guns represented power, there were many who dreamt of owning a gun.

As for those who did not get any guns, they looked on enviously at Fan Tongxuan and the rest, their eyes filled with jealousy. Oh how they regretted not killing the captives to prove their worth earlier. After distributing the guns, Yue Zhong brought Wutan Tong, Chen Yao and White Bones as the 4 of them disappeared into the darkness.

Conducting military operations in the dark of the night was one of the most dangerous things one could do. However, to Yue Zhong who possessed the [Night Enhancement] ability, it was the best cover.

Wutan Tong pointed to a small camp that was lit up amidst the huge blanket of darkness and spoke: "That's the camp of the

vanguard teams, there is a battalion currently resting inside! Lord Yue Zhong, are you really going to go? There's a battalion there you know."

Yue Zhong looked into the distance and saw the small town and the small group of patrol men currently outside.

Yue Zhong eyed Wutan Tong and said indifferently: "Your task is completed! Wutan Tong, stay here and wait for my victorious return. Of course, you can choose to escape as well, but if you escape, you better not let me see you again, otherwise, it will be your death the moment I catch sight of you."

As Yue Zhong wanted to launch a sneak attack on Wuyan Hong's establishment, he naturally would not bring along this unstable factor who had just joined him. If he had to use this person who had just recently betrayed his own force, who's to say if he would suddenly shout loudly during the ambush? Then that would be even more troublesome.

Wutan Tong's eyes flashed with understanding, as he lowered his head respectfully: "Yes Lord! I will not run!!"

Although Wutan Tong did not feel that Yue Zhong would be successful, he did not wish to infuriate this exceptionally strong person. After all, his own life was the most important to him.

Yue Zhong observed the small town for awhile, before bringing White Bones and Chen Yao towards it.

This vanguard camp could still be considered to have some tricks up their sleeves. They had 20 hidden sentries around, and their position was quite secretive. Furthermore, it was in the middle of the dark so few Enhancers would be able to detect it.

However, all these were nothing to Yue Zhong who had the [Night Enhancement] ability. He could clearly detect the positions of the hidden sentries, as he went around silently beheading each of them.

After he took care of those sentries, Yue Zhong, Chen Yao and White Bones walked carefully towards the entrance of the town.

At the entrance, there were currently 4 soldiers standing guard there, while 2 others were playing poker.

Atop 2 high watchtowers, there were also Vietnamese soldiers looking around their surroundings in a bored manner. No one thought that they would be attacked, and they were more worried about the fearsome Mutant Beasts.

Yue Zhong pointed at the soldiers atop the 2 watchtowers. The distance between him and them was about 700m, he could use his Devil Fire to burn them, but it would cause a huge disturbance.

Chen Yao nodded, and activated her [Plant Manipulation] ability, as her vines noiselessly shot towards the entrance using the grass as cover.

The 8 soldiers did not even notice a thing, as the 8 vines had already crept up near them silently. Chen Yao looked at the 2 soldiers atop the watchtower, and with just a thought, they shot upwards explosively like 2 arrows and pierced the soldier's heads, causing them to die on the spot.

After assassinating them, Chen Yao shifted her gaze and with another thought, the remaining 6 vines shot towards the 6 soldier's located on the ground.

Of the 6 vines, 3 immediately penetrated the brains of the soldiers, causing them to die without a sound. The remaining 3 vines did not kill the other 3 as Chen Yao's control over her ability was not yet polished.

Seeing that the 3 soldiers were about to shout out in their moments of death, 3 sharp bone spears shot out from the grass, causing their heads to be lopped off.

Chapter 315: Sneaking Into Town

"I'm sorry!!" Chen Yao quickly apologized to Yue Zhong in a small voice. She did not manage to kill off the 6 of them in one fell swoop, and it almost cost them the entire operation. A sneak raid and a frontal assault were two entirely different battles. Yue Zhong could wipe the entire battalion out in a sneak attack, but in a frontal assault, they could only quickly leave the place.

Yue Zhong smiled and consoled her: "No need to apologize! You already performed well! When you killed those soldiers in the watchtower, you had already completed your objective!"

Chen Yao was still inexperienced in battle, doing this much was considered pretty decent. Yue Zhong had already made plenty of preparations, getting White Bones to clean up what she might miss. As for himself, he was saving his strength to deal with any serious situation that might crop up.

"Let's go!!" Yue Zhong swiftly rushed into the entrance of the town.

The defence of the town was tight on the outside, but slack inside, the moment Yue Zhong entered the town, he, Chen Yao and White Bones quickly followed the small path leading towards the centre of the town.

Wutan Tong had already given the details about the layout and manpower distribution to Yue Zhong beforehand, as well as a crude map. Yue Zhong simply followed the map and arrived at one of the camps pretty quickly.

Only, he discovered that within the camp, the lights were all lit, and there were sounds of men shouting in delight while women were crying and moaning filled the skies.

Yue Zhong looked out from the corner of a small alley, and saw that there was a wide open space, and there were many women

sprawled on the ground like dogs, as a bunch of Vietnamese soldiers were surrounding the campfire and hooting in excitement and delight, raping the women in all sorts of ways and manner.

There was a Vietnamese who was riding on top of a woman, using his shoes to whip the lady, causing her to crawl forward and crying out desperately: "Don't hit me!! Please stop hitting me!"

Yue Zhong's vision was exceptionally accurate, and he could see that the woman was riddled with scars throughout her body, at the same time, her lower body was bleeding for some reason.

The surrounding Vietnamese soldiers looked on and laughed loudly, finding it funny. After losing all sense of moral values and discipline, these Vietnamese soldiers became like beasts. Just like the Indonesians during the 98 Riot, where countless frenzied Indonesians went on a rampage.

Chen Yao saw the scene, and her heart was filled with fury, and she gritted her teeth. She almost rushed out to slaughter those Vietnamese soldiers and instead spat out a word with intense disgust: "Beasts!!"

Yue Zhong's eyes were filled with an consuming anger as well, because he could hear the words of the woman who was being tortured by the Vietnamese soldier, and she was speaking in Chinese! These beasts were actually raping his fellow countrymen!

Yue Zhong breathed in deeply before grabbing Chen Yao's hands: "These beasts will be punished by me personally later! Let's bear with this for now! Heed my command!"

Chen Yao nodded while still gritting her teeth. She was an intelligent girl, and knew that with just the two of them, they're not a match for these Vietnamese soldiers, therefore they had to tolerate it.

Right at this moment, the woman who was treated like a sex horse suddenly shuddered, and she fell to the ground. Her weak

body had obviously given way due to the torture and could not bear the load anymore.

The soldier who was mounted atop her also fell to the ground, leading the other soldiers to roar with laughter at his misfortune.

The Vietnamese soldier was enraged, as he immediately pulled out a handgun and opened fire at the unfortunate woman.

With a 'bang', the Chinese lady was executed at point blank range after such torture, simply because he was laughed at. As she died, her lifeless body slumped to the floor.

Seeing such a merciless scene, Chen Yao's pale face started to flush red with fury, as she grabbed Yue Zhong's hands tightly, her entire body trembling with rage. Even though she had seen so much darkness and cruelty, she still could not get used to it. Yue Zhong pulled Chen Yao's hands as they swiftly left, making their way towards the dormitories.

Soon, Yue Zhong, Chen Yao and White Bones came to a room where there were Vietnamese soldiers sleeping. Yue Zhong activated the Devil Flame with his right hand, causing the door knob to melt.

He quietly pushed the door open, before swiftly and expertly waving his Dark Magic Blade, decapitating the soldiers who were laying down slumbering.

It was already late in the night, and other than those engaging in their rave at the open area, the rest of the soldiers were already sleeping or resting.

Without a sound, 320 soldiers were beheaded by Yue Zhong and White Bones in a matter of minutes, turning into a dormitory of headless corpses.

After killing all those Vietnamese soldiers who were sleeping, Yue Zhong ordered White Bones to stay behind to take care of those who would come back later, as he himself brought Chen Yao

and left towards the armory.

The firepower of an army was the most important thing during a battle. With ample ammunition, Yue Zhong would be able to deal at least twice the amount of damage and hold out longer on the battlefield. With his Level 6 Treasure [Storage Ring] he could only keep those of use, and it was one of his trump cards.

Yue Zhong and Chen Yao quickly came to the room in front of the armory.

Chen Yao looked at the huge lock on the doors, as she activated her [Plant Manipulation] ability, and the thin vines shot into the lock, shaking it open. Chen Yao's ability enabled her to be versatile in many different situations, and her ability could be considered extremely useful.

Yue Zhong's Devil Flame was concentrated on offensive power, and was extremely tyrannical! Likewise, its defensive and other properties were lacking.

Yue Zhong pushed open the door into the armory, and saw the countless rows of guns displayed neatly.

Amongst the weapons in the armory, there were plenty of Chinese AK-47s

which were lethal on the battlefield. These AK-47s were extremely stable, and we're well-suited for battle in Vietnam which had plenty of loose ground and mud. Other than the famous AK-47s, there were various other Russian and American heavy-duty rifles.

Putting aside these assault rifles, the armory was filled with plenty of sniping rifles and grenade launchers. Amongst them, there were even 3 Barrett Snipers.

Vietnam had been purchasing firearms and ammunition in the recent years. Although their military equipment was still a distance away from other domestic forces, it wasn't to a point

where it's incomparable.

Yue Zhong went ahead and kept the sniper rifles, the grenade launchers and other heavy firearms, as well as 200 AK-47 rifles into his storage ring, before he looked back at the remainder and hesitated. In the end, he did not activate his Devil Flame to burn everything down.

Yue Zhong and Chen Yao quickly opened another ammunitions store, within it, Yue Zhong did not discover any ammo for the PF98, but he found loads of other types of ammo, including hand grenades, grenades and even some other rockets.

Yue Zhong made full use of his storage ring as he absorbed all that he wanted into the ring, packing it fully.

After he replenished the ammo within his ring, he held his Dark Magic Blade in one hand and an .03 rifle in the other as he and Chen Yao continued advancing in the dark of the night.

With the flash of his blade, 2 sentries standing guard in front of a prison crumpled to the floor noiselessly.

The prison was in fact just a huge warehouse. After Yue Zhong killed the Vietnamese soldiers in front of the warehouse, he hacked the door lock open with just a swing of his Dark Magic Blade, and pushed the door wide open.

The moment the door was opened, a rank smell consisting of human sweat, feces, urine and even blood that would cause anybody to vomit violently wafted out the door.

Yue Zhong looked into the warehouse, only to see that the warehouse actually looked cramped because it was actually filled with over 200 Chinese, Caucasians and africans.

These Chinese, Caucasians and africans were all riddled with scars, their bodies emaciated, and some had even been tortured till there's hardly any skin left. Their bones could be seen, and their entire bodies had become deformed.

The moment the door was opened, the people inside fell numbly to the floor, some not even getting up. A portion looked at Yue Zhong fearfully, unsure of who was going to be pulled out next, to be tortured till death.

Yue Zhong looked at these 200 survivors who had suffered greatly, as he suppressed the fury billowing within him with difficulty and said: "I am Yue Zhong from China!! Whoever is willing to go kill those Vietnamese beasts come with me!!"

Hearing those words, the Chinese within the warehouse started tearing up, as their eyes flashed with a desire for revenge, and some started to walk out shakily like zombies. Some could not stand, but they used their hands to support themselves as they dragged their bodies towards Yue Zhong.

Even the Africans and Caucasians used all their energy to climb towards Yue Zhong.

Wuyan Hong pursued a policy of extreme nationalism, other than Vietnamese, all other people who were caught were treated like slaves and tortured. All these people had to eat was grub for pigs. They could only drink urine and dirty water. Their eating, drinking and even their business was all done within the confines of this warehouse, adding to the heavy labor, these survivors' health was on the verge of collapsing.

Because of this, this armory only had 2 soldiers to keep watch. Those 200-over survivors were basically living corpses, and they would not be able to put up a fight against anybody.

"Everybody gets one! No fighting over it!" Yue Zhong looked at those emaciated survivors, as he brought out his huge backpack, taking out cans of Type 2 Mutant Beast meat and distributed them.

If these emaciated survivors didn't regain their health, then they would just be a burden to Yue Zhong, and would be of no use in the battle to come.

Chapter 316: Survival!

The survivors each took a can of Type 2 Meat, as their grimy hands trembled and greedily stuffed it into their mouths. They were famished, and the only thing on their minds right now was to consume that can of Type 2 Mutant Beast meat.

Upon consuming the meat, the survivors regained a bit of health, and their ashen faces regained some colour.

One tanned-skin, scar-ridden military man with a blind left eye stepped up, his gaze full of vengeance, as he talked in a raspy voice: "I'm Gan Tao, the squad leader of XX Army XX Battalion 3rd Company 4th Platoon! Yue Zhong, as long as you can bring us to kill those Vietnamese beasts, the entire 4th Platoon brothers will give you our lives!! All 12 of us!!"

One by one, a few withered looking men with a burning hatred in their eyes stood up behind Gan Tao, their expectant gazes on Yue Zhong. They had grown desperate and desolate, and Yue Zhong had suddenly appeared in front of them, bringing with him a glimmer of hope. As long as they could kill those Vietnamese soldiers, they were willing to pay any price.

Yue Zhong eyed the 200 survivors, as he frowned and asked: "Amongst you, who can operate a firearm right now and engage in battle?"

Yue Zhong had planned to free the captives, and make use of the firearms and ammunition he took from the armory to arm the captives. It seemed as though right now, even making use of 20 of them was the best case scenario!

The survivors' eyes were filled with fury and vengeance, as a few of them raised up their bony arms, some even had deformed hands, looking towards Yue Zhong expectantly. These 200 survivors had suffered greatly, and desired battle now, to make those who humiliated and tortured them pay.

Yue Zhong left the warehouse, and came back with 2 huge bags, one of them stuffed with guns, and another with bullets.

"What's your name" Yue Zhong pointed to a man with 2 deep scars on his face, his figure a little on the skinny side, and asked.

The man with the face of scars, who was Chinese, replied: "I'm called Zhao Qing!!"

Yue Zhong stared at Zhao Qing and replied in a heavy voice: "From now on, you're the temporary leader of this warehouse, I need you to stand guard here and protect the rest of them, all the way till the battle is over! Any questions? I will leave you with 20 AKs, and 600 bullets."

Even after consuming the Type 2 Mutant Beast meat, those who were tortured heavily could not possible regain their full vitality and be robust in just a short while.

Yue Zhong looked around and estimated that about 30 of them regained their health to an acceptable level for combat after the nourishment of the Type 2 Meat. Which was to say that, the majority of the prisoners could not stray too far from the warehouse currently, nor were they in a position to fight. If these 200 survivors were to regain their health, they could become loyal subordinates to Yue Zhong, and a trustworthy and usable force. Zhao Qing grinned: "Boss Yue, rest assured, as long as I'm alive, I will not allow those Vietnam dogs to enter this warehouse."

Yue Zhong nodded slightly, and left 20 AKs and 600 bullets to Zhao Qing, before taking Gan Tao and 25 other survivors who could move and fight as they made their way out.

As they passed the ammo store and armory, Yue Zhong left another 10 of the weaker soldiers to guard these 2 important places.

As long as they can maintain control over these 2 buildings, Yue Zhong could fully equip and arm those 200 survivors, and boost

their combat ability.

After finishing these preparations, Yue Zhong brought the remaining 16 warriors towards the open square, and they made their way there carefully.

Currently, at the open square, a group of 100+ Vietnamese soldiers were still engaged in a crazy party, unaware of the danger that was about to befall them.

The cries and moans of the women and the hearty laughter and grunts of the men filled the entire square.

With just a thought, Yue Zhong summoned White Bones from out of nowhere, as he pointed to the Vietnam soldiers and gave the order coldly: "Kill every single man there!"

Receiving Yue Zhong's orders, White Bones charged forwards like a tornado towards the Vietnamese soldiers.

White Bones had a speed that surpassed that of a normal human being by a few times, so the moment it exerted all its strength, crossing a 100 metres only took a few seconds. Before those Vietnamese soldiers even had the chance to react, White Bones had already raised its right arm and 5 incredibly sharp bone spikes shot out. The expertly aimed spikes pierced through the heads of the intended soldiers like white lightning.

At the same time, Chen Yao had already manipulated her vines to shoot out, wrapping around the necks of 5 Vietnamese soldiers before wrangling them hard, killing those soldiers.

Yue Zhong had taken out his .05 submachine gun and charged towards where the Vietnamese soldiers were heavily concentrated as he used the old "Spray and Pray" method. Under the barrage of the bullets, 10 of them were hit by the bullets, 3 dying instantly, and the other 7 falling to the ground. The remainder were heavily wounded by not yet dead.

Gan Tao and his other mates ignored the weaknesses of their

bodies as they fired continuously, shooting at the Vietnamese soldiers.

Those Vietnamese soldiers were sitting around the campfire, and as they were illuminated brightly, they became easy targets, being shot at by Gan Tao and the rest.

When they were suddenly ambushed by Yue Zhong and the rest, a large number of them perished in the first wave of lead. Somehow the rest reacted quickly, as they hollered and ran about, looking for cover.

Some of the Vietnamese soldiers immediately grabbed up their guns, and shot towards the darkness, providing some suppressing fire against Yue Zhong's group.

Other than that, more soldiers were starting to take up arms, as they started to attack the lone axe-wielding White Bones who had charged into their midst.

A large number of the bullets bounced off when they hit White Bones' body. It was like a killing machine, one hand wielding its axe, the other shooting out Bone Spears everywhich direction. Its mighty axe swings beheaded soldiers left, right, and centre each one spraying fresh blood into the air and puddling on the floor. No one could defend against it, and accordingly, no one could even impede its movements.

Seeing that their bullets were ineffective and their friends dying miserably, the remaining soldiers lost their morale and they started to escape in various directions. White Bones shot forward, killing those who wanted to try and escape. Every second, there was a soldier that was felled by White Bone's axe.

Gan Tao brought his men to give chase, but he had just stood up before he felt dizzy and fell to the ground again. The Type 2 Meat had helped him regain some energy, but it could not support his continuous battle.

"You guys stay here. I'll go take care of them! Chen Yao, go gather the women and equipment." Yue Zhong eyed Gan Tao and the rest as he left his customary few words before making his way out.

Those women who were tortured miserably could still get their share of food, hence they weren't as emaciated as Gan Tao and the rest of the male survivors whose bodies were almost completely broken. After handing them some rations, they would regain some form of fighting ability.

And while Gan Tao and the soldiers had no energy to give chase, they could still operate their firearms, therefore Yue Zhong was not worried about their safety.

Chen Yao quickly went to the open square and gathered the women to safety after Yue Zhong left.

In the square, there were over 80 women, everyone of them had extremely dirty bodies and a nasty body odor. When Chen Yao had approached them and said that they were being rescued, every single one of them started crying tears of relief. They had been tortured and raped until they were devoid of all dignity, and had suffered greatly, now they were finally free from the nightmare.

"What a pity!! There's not enough manpower, some were actually allowed to escape!" Yue Zhong shot the last one, an escaping Vietnamese soldier who was within his sights, as he frowned.

With just Yue Zhong and White Bones, they had killed over 20 soldiers who had escaped, but there were some who had long escaped into the darkness, hiding in goodness knows what places.

By this time, the entire town had awoken due to the sounds of gunfire. It turns out, there were actually 2,000-Vietnamese survivors, and they started engaging in riots, murder, rape and robbery. Regardless of the country, the events that occur due to chaos would always be the same.

Yue Zhong instantly executed a dozen of those troublemakers as

he shouted: "Get lost back into your own house, there is a curfew now! Whoever is seen outside their houses will be shot dead!!"

Yue Zhong was speaking in chinese and most of the Vietnamese did not understand. However, as he walked towards them he was constantly executing those Vietnamese who were causing trouble. Seeing this, they understood his meaning, and many of them hurried back into their own homes, while looking at the killing demon that was Yue Zhong as they trembled in fear.

Yue Zhong and White bones went around executing the remaining Vietnamese soldiers and any other troublemakers for the next 3 hours like some kind of Apocalyptic Grim Reapers, and after the deaths of nearly 200 other people, did the chaos in the town mellow and peace settled in again.

"Pity!! I still don't have enough manpower!! If only I had more men, controlling this town would be a piece of cake!" Yue Zhong casually whipped his gun backwards over his shoulder and shot a rioter in the head, as he thought to himself while full of regret. *1

By this time, the town had fallen back into its normal routine as though nothing had happened. However, Yue Zhong was very clear, if he didn't do anything, this town would be snatched back by Wuyan Hong again. He had successfully eradicated an entire battalion of Wuyan Hong's, but to deal with his total troop size of over 14 battalions, he alone was not enough.

*1 [Ulamog] arrrrrgh! This is like puuuure spy style badass stunt mode here! *whip gun on to shoulder holding the handle pointing to the sky, barrel pointing backwards... and peng! Right between the eyes. Without even looking, AND im planning the dinner menu also at the same time kind of style of badass.

Chapter 317: Moving Forward

Yue Zhong and White Bones came back to Chen Yao with their bodies covered in blood, as Yue Zhong spoke sternly: "Chen Yao! I'm handing this town to you! I'll give you one day, I need you to completely control this town in one day. Make sure that all the Chinese regain their vitality, can you do this?"

The current 200 prisoners that were mostly made up of Chinese were extremely weak, even after wolfing down the Type 2 Meat, they still required a day's rest to recover. Without a whole day's rest, they would not be able to embark on any journey, in fact they might just perish along the way.

Chen Yao's eyes flashed as she spoke resolutely: "No problem! Yue Zhong, set your mind at ease! I will take care of this town properly!"

After going through such tempering, Chen Yao was starting to grow quickly. She was already intelligent in the first place, and had the talents and ability. However, she had always been focused on chasing after being more glorious than Ji Qingwu. During the post-apocalypse, her combat ability had been subpar, and she was even overshadowed by Ji Qingwu. Now that she was forced by circumstances, her latent ability had showed itself.

Chen Yao looked at Yue Zhong and asked: "Where are you going?"

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed coldly as he replied: "I'm going to go carve a new hole in that Vietnamese beast Wuyan Hong, and attract their attention, buying some time for the people here to recover."

Time! What Yue Zhong and the rest needed now was time! Without enough time to rest, those prisoners in the warehouse would be unable to recover their fighting strength, and just based on Yue Zhong and Chen Yao, they would be unable to taken on

Wuyan Hong's army. Yue Zhong had to buy some time and obtain even more strength.

Yue Zhong looked to his left and right, and ensured that there was nobody, before he lowered his head to Chen Yao's ear and whispered: "I will leave White Bones to protect you. If things get to a non-salvageable state, abandon everyone, and leave by yourself."

Yue Zhong was after all not a saint, he had his own motives as well. Those 200 survivors that he rescued could not be compared to Chen Yao. If he had to make the decision to sacrifice, he would not hesitate to exchange the lives of those 200 survivors for Chen Yao.

"En! I know! But, Yue Zhong, you should take White Bones with you! You alone having to deal with Wuyan Hong and the rest of those animals will definitely be tiring." Chen Yao's hearts filled with sweetness when she heard Yue Zhong's words, and she replied in a soft voice.

"Don't you worry about me, you just have to control this town!" Yue Zhong smiled, and he hopped on a motorbike and made for the closest town that Wuyan Hong also controlled, Chengya County.

The Chengya County was the main base of Wuyan Hong, housing 50,000 survivors and 12 battalions. Also, the special Wolf Fang battalion consisting entirely of Enhancers can be found there.

The Wolf Fang Battalion was like Yue Zhong's own Special Combat Forces, they all possessed special abilities, each of them having undergone countless battles. They possessed shocking combat prowess, and Yue Zhong did not dare say that he could take on any single one of them easily.

"This is gonna be tricky! Should I just charge in?" Yue Zhong laid prone atop a small mountain, as he looked at the county in the distance, his brows furrowing.

It was now dawn, and the entrance of the county had signs of

people travelling in and out, hence it wasn't the best time to launch a sneak attack. Without the cover of the night, Yue Zhong would find it hard to launch an attack and wipe out a battalion.

Also, the county had some defensive walls that was constructed, as long as the people in the city closed the city gates, anyone who charged in would find themselves trapped. Regardless of how strong the expert maybe, being surrounded by the soldiers would only spell death.

Right at this time, a short man came running towards the city gates with an inhumane speed.

Chasing behind that man closely was an alarming number of Mutant Forest Lizards.

"Level 21 Mutant Beast: Mutant Forest Lizard. They possess a tough hide and quick speed, at the same time, their bite contains bacteria, if one gets bitten, there's a high chance of dying due to falling ill."

Seeing the huge group of Mutant Forest Lizards coming towards them, the Vietnamese were all frightened, as they couldn't help but curse and tried to escape back towards the city.

Although the city walls could not defend against an assault from modern weaponry, it was extremely effective against Mutant Beasts and zombies. Therefore most major powers would construct such defences that were abandoned with the passing of centuries. They all built walls on the outskirts of their cities.

One Vietnamese soldier came to the top of the city gates, and he used his gun to fire at the man who had attracted the horde of Mutant Forest Lizards over here, intending to kill him and hopefully stop the Lizards charge.

However, the man in question was extremely nimble, dodging the bullets fired at him easily, causing most of the bullets to miss by huge margins.

"This man must be an Agility-based Evolver, and he must have the [Danger Perception] ability!" Yue Zhong eyed the man, and managed to evaluate some information from him, as he immediately pulled out his Barrett Sniper, and fired a shot at the Vietnamese soldier. The enemy of his enemy was an ally, and since the Vietnamese was firing at a human, Yue Zhong felt that he had to save him.

With a 'peng', the Vietnamese soldier's head exploded, as he fell from the city walls.

Seeing their comrade dying from a headshot, the rest of the Vietnamese soldiers started to panic, as they hid behind their walls for cover. Above the wall, there were still a few other soldiers firing non stop at the man.

The man continued to increase his speed, accelerating by another 30 percent, as he dodged the bullets and threw 3 lizard eggs at the city gates, causing them to burst open.

After which, the man swiftly zipped off into a nearby forest, and disappeared without a trace in just a few moments.

When those lizard eggs broke, the huge horde of Mutant Forest Lizards were enraged, as they charged at the city entrance that was filled with many people.

The soldiers above the city walls started focusing their fire on the Mutant Forest Lizards in a frenzy, and a hot leaden hail of bullets rained onto those Mutant Forest Lizards, creating countless bloody wounds.

Unfortunately, since these Mutant Forest Lizards were Level 21, the bullets could not deal much damage to them after penetrating their outer hide. Unless it was a shot to the head, these Mutant Forest Lizards would not die so easily. Instead, they became even more infuriated, and rushed towards the city entrance and started biting the Vietnamese people.

Those Vietnamese survivors who were bitten cried out in agony, as they were chomped on by the Mutant Forest Lizards, and even more lizards leapt and slammed their bodies down on them, pinning the soldier's to the ground.

The Mutant Forest Lizards were extremely ferocious, after charging into the city entrance, they started embarking on a killing spree within the walls.

Right at this time, the city gates suddenly started to close, sealing off the entire city. Those Mutant Forest Lizards that were halfway through the city gates were immediately vivisected in two.

Above the walls, the soldiers continued to fire rapidly at the remaining Mutant Forest Lizards, hunting them down one by one.

The total number of Mutant Forest Lizards were about a thousand, and under the hail of bullets, they began to be felled one by one. Below, no matter how they charged at the walls, there was no effect. They had to leave helplessly.

When those Mutant Forest Lizards had assaulted the city, Yue Zhong had sniped 3 of the Vietnamese soldiers, causing the soldiers to not dare stick their heads out.

Not even a few moments passed after the deaths of those Mutant Forest Lizards when a dense flock of Mutant Birds the size of wild chickens, all with black feathers flew over. Half the flock flew to the city entrance and started to feast on the corpses of both the Mutant Forest Lizards and humans, and the other half went into the city, and started attacking the inhabitants of the city.

"Level 14 Mutant Beast: Corpse-Eating Sparrow. A mutant beast that chases after the scent of blood and food in flocks."

Almost immediately, the sounds of concentrated firing resounded out from the city walls, as the anti-air guns started spewing bullet fire, causing a large number of the Corpse-Eating Sparrows to be shot down from the skies.

However, those machine guns could not possible protect the entire city, and within the city, there were many survivors who were speared and pecked on the heads by the Corpse-Eating Sparrows, dying on the spot.

The soldiers who were bending down on top of the walls could not deal with those Corpse-Eating Sparrows, as the moment they stood up, they would be sniped by Yue Zhong.

After sniping another 2 members of the Vietnamese soldiers very casually, he suddenly felt an intense gaze locked on him, looking towards the source of it, he could see a 31-year old male bringing out 50-plus members decked in military garb, every single one of them emitting a fierce aura with killing intent looking at him.

"The Wolf Fang Battalion? They're indeed experts!!" Yue Zhong only took a look at those 50-over men, and immediately sucked in a breath of cold air, as he could feel the fearsome strength of the group. They were definitely Enhancers who had gone through countless battles, and not a single one of them could be said to be weaker than his own Special Combat Forces.

In these parts of Vietnam, there were forests and swamps everywhere, hiding all sorts of Mutant Beasts. As long as one was willing to forge his subordinates through countless fighting with these Mutant Beasts, a power faction could quickly groom a few high-levelled Enhancers. The only downside to this method was that, the moment one got unlucky, a huge number of elites might perish at the hands of a Type 2.

Wuyan Hong had made use of this method, after paying the price of over 2000 survivors. With this vile method he formed this Wolf Fang Battalion of not more than a hundred people, each one of them above Level 30. Every single Wolf Fang soldier was an expert in the forest, and had killed countless Mutant Beasts, their power shocking to the extreme.

Chapter 318: Fighting for ones Life!

Just as Yue Zhong caught sight of the Wolf Fang Battalion, he suddenly felt an intense danger, as he immediately dodged to the side, and out of their sights.

Peng! Peng!

Following the sounds of 6 gunshots, 6 bullets landed on Yue Zhong's original position. These were bullets fired by the snipers of the Wolf Fang Battalion hidden away from plain sight. If he had reacted just a little slower, he would have likely been shot dead.

The commander of the Wolf Fang Battalion, Wu Dahui, looked to his short comrade of not more than 1.5m beside him and asked: "Chang Xin, did you manage to memorize his features? What's his background?"

Chang Xin possessed an eidetic memory, and he had the active ability [God's Eyes]. The moment he activated this skill, within his field of vision, he could see up to a distance of 6km, even something as small as a single needle on the ground.

Chang Xin nodded: "I have already memorised his features. However, he's not any of the Enhancers we have encountered before."

Wu Dahui ordered 7 of his subordinates: "Da Yang, Chang Xin, Yue Qing, Long Feng, Ma Huijia, Li Bingyan and Wang Man. The 7 of you shall go and get rid of that sniper!"

These 7 soldiers were all Enhancers above level 30, and every one of them had their own killing moves, just by teaming up, they could even easily dispose of a Level 40 Enhancer. Furthermore, Chang Xin had the rare ability [Pursuit], as long as he can remember the features, when he activated the skill, as long as the target was within a range of 5km, he could sense the existence and position of the target.

Chang Xin was in charge of pursuit, while the rest of them can focus on surrounding and killing the target. This method had ensured the deaths of over 13 strong experts who had gone against Wuyan Hong. Amongst these 13 experts, one was even a powerful Evolver that was above level 40.

"Yes!" The 7 of them responded and swiftly left the County towards Yue Zhong's direction.

When Yue Zhong saw the arrival of the experts of Wolf Fang Battalion, he had immediately retreated, and quickly. He was confident of sniping any single one of the experts, but the moment he was surrounded, facing a frontal assault was something he had no confidence of winning.

Chang Xin's right eye flashed with a strange glow, as he looked to the distance and laughed coldly: "What an irritating bug, to run so fast!!"

One of the warriors, Da Yang, who was 1.73m tall and carrying a blade scar on his face, looked at the beautiful Li Bingyan beside him as he was running. She was decked in protective wear, and while her figure was petite, she had a curvy figure, voluptuous chest and sexy bottom, a healthy skin colour, and her features exquisite. Da Yang swallowed his saliva and laughed: "Bingyan!! After killing that bug, how about you come sleep with me tonight? Recently, I'm sick of playing with those Chinese ladies."

Da Yang was a Level 39 Enhancer, and was just lacking that little bit of experience to reach Level 40. He was also the strongest within this small group, and hence, he could shamelessly propose such a lewd deal with this beauty that he coveted for a long time.

With such a figure and looks, plus such power that placed her within the ranks of other strong Enhancers of the Wolf Fang Battalion, not to mention the ability to protect herself, she was a rare person indeed.

Li Bingyan shot Da Yang a cold glance and laughed icily: "If

you're not afraid to lose that dirty thing of yours down there, you can come over tonight!"

Hearing Li Bingyan's words, Da Yang shuddered involuntarily, as he laughed dryly: "Just a joke, a joke!"

Although Li Bingyan was extremely beautiful and had a smoking hot figure, she wasn't a pushover. Previously, 2 members of the Wolf Fang Battalion had designs on her, one of them had his lower member cut off slowly with a knife the other had his head violently chopped off. After these 2 incidents, 'Beautiful Viper' Li Bingyan gained a foothold within the Wolf Fang Battalion."

Furthermore, the commander Wu Dahui was the childhood friend of Li Bingyan. With his protection, even if Li Bingyan caused some trouble, as long as it didn't anger Wuyan Hong, she would not be punished.

All of a sudden, Chang Xin stopped, and his eyes flashed brightly as he said: "That damn bug has stopped! Seems like he discovered something! Everyone prepare for battle!!"

Hearing Chang Xin's words, the 6 other members of the Wolf Fang Battalion grew cautious. They were well-experienced soldiers, and would naturally not underestimate Yue Zhong.

"What annoying fellows!!" Yue Zhong had climbed atop a tree, and kept his sniper rifle, his brows furrowing. Those 7 warriors who had given chase had almost entered his scope of vision when they suddenly hid in a clump of grasses, and continued moving towards him under cover.

Under such circumstances, unless it was Bai He who was a sniper by specialization, it would be difficult to hit any of them. Yue Zhong had trained his sniping skills to be on par with those snipers from before the apocalypse, but he was also powerless to snipe the 7 experts with such circumstances.

"Fighting them in this jungle is really disadvantageous for me!"

Yue ZHong swiftly made a judgement, as he observed his left and right, before rushing towards a highway in the distance.

These Vietnamese experts were after all locals, and had fought against countless Mutant Beasts and zombies within the forest, if Yue Zhong wanted to fight against them on their familiar turf, it was a stupid move.

Chang Xin asked Da Yang: "That bug started moving towards the highway. Seems like he's not very confident of fighting in the forest! Da Yang? Shall we exterminate him before he leaves the forest?"

"Of course!! Let me personally go shoot down that inferior piece of shit!" Da Yang laughed coldly, before he activated his [Forest Ranger Transformation].

With a flash of green light, Da Yang's body started sprouting a layer of green leaves, covering his entire body, leaving only 2 eye slits and his nostrils that were not covered. At the same time, there were strange runes that looked to be a bow and arrow made out of green leaves etched on his body.

The layer of green leaves covering Da Yang continuously twisted and changed, morphing Da Yang into something that looked like part of the forest. At a distance of more than 10m, if one did not look carefully, it was almost impossible to discern his existence.

After transforming into a Forest Ranger, not only could it boost the physical prowess of the user, it just so happened that the covering of leaves could distort the light, making it difficult for others to detect and pinpoint the position of the Forest Ranger.

Other than Da Yang, Yue Qing, Long Feng and Ma Huijia, the remaining members had all transformed into Forest Rangers as well, their backs carrying huge bows, as they started moving swiftly towards Yue Zhong.

After transforming into Forest Rangers, Da Yang and the rest became experts at archery, and the power from their archery became even more threatening than their firearms. Therefore, they had chosen to swap out their cold weapons for sturdy bow and arrows.

Li Bingyan wielded 2 black revolvers in her hands, as she moved towards Yue Zhong with her icy gaze.

Wang Man was a Summoner, and he activated his [Summon Wolves] ability, constantly conjuring wolves that chased after Yue Zhong.

The [Summon Wolves] ability was a Level 2 skill, but it was incredibly useful. Summoning one wolf only required 2 points of Spirit, and maintaining the wolf for 30 minutes expended another 1 point of Spirit. As long as the Spirit was not exhausted, one could summon indefinitely.

Wang Man had high Spirit values, and in one breath, he summoned 25 wolves, which charged towards Yue Zhong from different directions.

These wolves could not only drain Yue Zhong's energy through chasing, they could also detect his position, assisting the team in locating him. It was truly troublesome.

Yue Zhong was running straight for the highway, when suddenly, a huge sense of crisis arose in his heart, and he immediately stopped, before exploding out with extreme speed, throwing himself towards a tree.

3 extremely sharp arrows that were made of Mutant Beast bones instantly arrived at Yue Zhong's earlier position, both hit at a step forward as well and a step backwards.

If Yue Zhong had reacted just slightly slower, or moved backwards more or run forwards, he would have been pierced by

any one of those arrows.

"His reaction is truly fast! However, it's too late!" Da Yang saw that Yue Zhong had indeed made for the huge tree just as he expected. He laughed coldly, and released his arrow. The Mutant Beast bone bow was stretched to its max, and a white bone arrow blasted out like a shooting star, piercing through the huge tree that Yue Zhong was hiding behind, aiming to penetrate him.

By the time Yue Zhong felt the danger, it was already too late, as the fearsome bone arrow had lodged itself above his abdomen, sending him flying forwards for a few metres, as he slumped to the ground.

"Done!!" Da Yang's eyes flashed coldly, as he thought to himself quietly. This arrow was called Sundering Arrow, and was a skill that he created himself as a Forest Ranger. Generally it was reserved as his ultimate killing technique. Just like Yue Zhong's Devil Flame Sword and Devil Flame Spear, the Sundering Arrow possessed immense power, and could not be used consecutively. However, the moment it was used, it was extremely powerful! Previously, the level 40 Evolver had met his death with this arrow as well. After transforming into a Forest Ranger, only Wuyan Hong and Wu Dahui were Da Yang's opponents. Facing a simple Enhancer, while he was still cautious, he had subconsciously viewed Yue Zhong with contempt.

Da Yang relaxed his guard, while Yue Qing, Long Feng and Ma Huijia did not, as they raised their bows and aimed at Yue Zhong. They wanted to turn his body into a sieve, only then would they relax.

Yue Zhong suddenly opened his eyes wide, as he wielded his .05 submachine gun and fired wildly at the direction of Yue Qing, Long Feng and Ma Huijia's position.

With the cover of their Forest Ranger Transformation skill, Yue Zhong had difficulty pinpointing their exact location, but his

abundant combat experience enabled him to discern their rough position.

*1TN: It's Morphin Time!

*2 Ulamog: Go go Forest Rangers! Mighty Morphin Forest Rangers!

Chapter 319: Rain of Bullets

Under the dense rain of bullets, Yue Qing, Long Feng, Ma Huijia swiftly retreated to behind a tree, and dodged the attack from Yue Zhong.

"Damn bastards!! So hard to deal with!" Yue Zhong felt a coppery sweetness arise in his throat, as he spat out a mouthful of fresh blood. The arrow from Da Yang earlier had been truly powerful, and exceeded Yue Zhong's expectations, injuring him.

In fact, if it wasn't for the Type 2 Mutant Black Scaled Boar's hide, Yue Zhong might have been pierced and nailed to the ground.

Yue Zhong had not the time to take a breath when a flurry of strange arrows shot towards him from different directions, forcing him to evade with his maximum speed, without any time to catch his breath.

Each time Yue Zhong looked towards the direction where the arrows were shot from, all he could see were green leaves, long wild grass, and he had no way of discerning the bodies of the 4 Forest Rangers.

"If this continues, I'll be played to death by these fuckers!" Yue Zhong activated his [Shadow Steps], and began to zip about within the forest. However, the 4 Forest Rangers followed him closely behind, continuously fired arrows and forcing his hand to the extreme, while wearing down his Spirit and Stamina.

It was the first time that Yue Zhong was actually forced to this extent by 7 other experts. There were only trees and grass everywhere within the forest, of course this severely impaired his combat ability. He simply could not accurately fire his weapons. On top of that, these Vietnamese experts had transformed into Forest Rangers, taking to the forest like Turtle to water. Everything added up to become more and more unfavourable for Yue Zhong.

At this time, within the forest, there were 25 wolves coming right for Yue Zhong! The wolves were for providing assistance and letting the 4 Forest Ranger Enhancers know where Yue Zhong was.

"Since the forest is your terrain, watch me simply raze it to the ground!!" Yue Zhong looked at the 25 wolves charging at him, and with fury in his eyes, he activated his [Devil Flame] ability. 2 dancing balls of Devil Flame arose in his hands and he flung them on a tree making it start burning furiously.

Yue Zhong kept running around, letting his Devil Flames burn, as he threw them towards the trees and grass around him. The goal was to cause everything to start burning.

As it was late autumn, the autumn winds were dry, and the trees and wild grass burned up easily. Very soon, the entire forest started to crackle with fire.

Yue Zhong glanced at the roaring flames and activated the [Hurricane] ability from his necklace. A huge hurricane appeared and sucked up huge amounts of Devil Flame as it formed and began blowing and moving towards the 4 Forest Rangers.

"Ah!!!!" a blood chilling scream of supreme agony sounded through the forest. The expert closest to Yue Zhong was Yue Qing, and he was immediately consumed by the flaming hurricane. Deep within it, you could still see his silhouette as bits of his body ignited and burned off into ash. Enduring this pain was beyond human means and he let out another anguished cry.

Yue Zhong raised his Stinger and fired a single shot.

With a bang, Yue Qing's brains were blasted out into the flame winds and his lifeless corpse fell to the ground limply!

Within the relentless forest fire that he had started the wolves summoned by Wang Man were all trapped by flames and swallowed up, turning into ashes. Indeed they wholly disappeared from the world.

"Damn pyromaniac bastard!! Does he want to destroy the whole forest??" Da Yang let out a furious curse, as he retreated from the Devil Flames explosively. *1

Fires in the autumn weather were the hardest to put out, the moment it flared up well, the entire forest would most like be burnt and destroyed. There were various lifeforms within the forest, including Mutant Beasts that could become meat, and wild vegetables, small animals, and many worms. To the Vietnamese, the entire forest was a treasure trove. Allowing Yue Zhong to destroy it all made Da Yang extremely miserable.

Yue Zhong continued dodging attacks, and within the flames, his body could be seen moving constantly with the Devil Flame covering him. He had no fear of the flames that he created, and would not be affected by the destructive properties of it. He charged towards the surroundings of the forest, causing large patches to flare up as he ran through them.

The forests were impeding his battle ability, if he could cause them to be destroyed, then he would have an easier time facing Da Yang and the rest of the experts.

"Kill him!! We cannot let him destroy our forest!!" Da Yang let out a furious roar, as he stared at Yue Zhong. Pushing his Spirit to its extreme, he pulled his huge Bone Bow back , and released another Sundering Arrow at Yue Zhong.

Right when Da Yang had set his sights on Yue Zhong, Yue Zhong already felt the immense sense of danger from behind. He exerted all his strength and flipped at a backwards-sideways angle, twisting his body to shoot to one side.

The Sundering Arrow brushed past Yue Zhong's left shoulder, tearing a small hole in that incredibly tough Black-Scaled Boar hide. This indicated shockingly enough, that the power output of that Sundering Arrow by Da Yang exceeded even that of a 25mm rocket.

The fearsome Sundering Arrow shot through a huge tree, before finally lodging itself halfway into a second tree before stopping.

As Enhancers and Evolvers levelled up, they would continuously improve and enhance their skills. Their basic power and strength was also not weaker than most modern weaponry. There were some Enhancers who didn't even need to use any modern weapons to overcome people who used them.

"That side!" After Yue Zhong dodged that damned lethal arrow, his right hand raised towards the general direction of Da Yang and he conjured a Devil Flame storm that shot towards Da Yang's location.

Da Yang had also felt the intense danger. After he shot that arrow to no effect, he immediately leapt, like an agile monkey, landing on top of another tree. After transforming into Forest Rangers, they became the masters of the forest, and possessed all sorts of strange abilities. One of the cons though, was that they possessed weak defence, and could not protect against even normal bullets unlike the Werewolf Transformation.

The terrifying Devil Flame Storm landed on thin air, but the fearsome flames caused that entire patch of forest to start burning up, as billowing smoke rose to the skies, enveloping the entire area with poisonous fumes.

"Cough cough!!" Under that blanket of poisonous fumes, the 3 Forest Rangers could not stop coughing, even tears were coming out of their eyes. It was the first time that they had come across such a fearsome enemy. Specifically, one that was able to burn the entire forest.

Just as the entire forest was crackling merrily with flame, Yue Zhong suddenly rushed towards the highway.

"Give chase! Don't let him escape!!" Da Yang shouted out furiously, as he flashed forward, routing around the burning patches of forest to chase after Yue Zhong.

Long Feng and Ma Huijia also followed under the cover of the forest, chasing Yue Zhong.

When Yue Zhong had ran for 50m towards the highway, he suddenly turned back, laughed coldly, and activated his [Devil Flame] ability again. He conjured 2 extremely terrifying Devil Flame Storms, shooting them towards the parts of the forest that were not yet burning.

With that blow, the remaining parts of the forest were entirely blanketed by flames, and started burning furiously.

Da Yang, Long Feng and Ma Jiahui could not dodge in time, and were caught in that instant combustion of flames. However, as Yue Zhong had controlled his Devil Flame to envelop the forest, there was no way they could be burnt instantly.

"Go to hell!!" Yue Zhong's gaze was cold as he pulled out his Stinger and aimed it at Da Yang who was the closest to the edge of the flames. His silhouette could be seen quite clearly. "No!!!!" Da Yang's eyes were filled with unprecedented fear, as he wailed loudly.

With a peng, Da Yang's brains were blasted to smithereens. The Enhancer that was considered one of the top 6 experts within the Wolf Fang Battalion was killed just like that by Yue Zhong.

After disposing of Da Yang, Yue Zhong aimed at Long Feng and fired another shot.

Without any suspense, Long Feng's brains were similarly blasted, and his lifeless body slumped to the ground.

Just as Yue Zhong wanted to take care of the remaining Ma Huijia, a sense of danger suddenly arose in his heart, as he leapt backwards.

Peng! Peng!

2 gunshots rang out, and 2 bullets came shooting by where Yue Zhong's head was just a second ago.

Yue Zhong refocused his sight and discovered Li Bingyan rushing towards him like a spectre, her hands holding revolvers, and firing at him as she was rushing forwards.

Li Bingyan was extremely well-versed in close combat. Her gaze frosted over, as she fired her revolvers without stop. Her shooting angles extremely strange, forcing Yue Zhong to continuously retreat, and he dodged behind a huge tree to evade her shots.

Right when Li Bingyan was about to come near, Yue Zhong suddenly shot out from between two trees like a cheetah, waving his huge 2m-long Black Tooth Blade. He slashed out towards Li Bingyan without a shred of mercy. If his blow landed, Li Bingyan would face a fate which did not include her lower body.

Li Bingyan's eyes flashed with a strange glint, as she laughed coldly. That tight body suddenly arched backwards as though she had no bones in her waist, dodging his terrifying slash, before rolling to a side, and jumping back towards Yue Zhong like a leopard, her hands clawing at Yue Zhong's throat.

Yue Zhong threw his blade to the side at the first notice, and his left fist punched forward explosively at her.

Li Bingyan caught Yue Zhong's fist agilely, locking his left fist, then swinging him with all her strength, throwing this man with twice her bodyweight towards a huge rock.*2

Li Bingyan's speed and technique was incredibly scary, as she forcefully swung Yue Zhong towards that huge rock, the tremendous impact travelled throughout his body, shaking his internal organs, as he spat out another mouthful of fresh blood.

Li Bingyan shot forward like an arrow, her right hand waving, and in it, a dagger appeared, before she slashed towards Yue Zhong's throat without mercy. Yue Zhong's throat was after all not protected, the moment she slashed it, he would definitely die.

Yue Zhong was an experienced combatant though, his eyes

showed a furious gleam, and a flash of light appeared in mid-air, as White Bones stepped out and stood in front of him.

Li Bingyan's blade slashed onto White Bones ribs before it was deflected off!

Chapter 320: Unexpected

White Bones immediately shot out his 2 Bone Blades and slashed towards Li Bingyan. Li Bingyan again displayed her flexibility as she twisted at an incredible angle, dodging the slash of those 2 Bone Blades.

Yue Zhong heaved a sigh of relief, as he activated his [Art of Fear], and a huge terrifying Spirit attack weighed down on Li Bingyan.

As long as it wasn't an Spirit-based Evolved or transformed Enhancer, or Summoner-focused Enhancer, the [Art of Fear] ability could totally decimate any Enhancer without a high enough Spirit stat due to Yue Zhong's own Spirit stat.

In that instant, Li Bingyan was enveloped by just such a terrifying Spirit attack, as all sorts of torture images and scenarios played out in her head, attempting to drive her insane.

Li Bingyan was considered a strong person with incredible willpower, and she had plenty of equipment that boosted her Spirit attribute. Considering this, she was not like a normal person without any defence against the [Art of Fear] ability. She bit down harshly on her own lips, splitting them and spilling blood, making use of her own pain to regain her senses.

Right when she woke up from the fearsome illusion, Yue Zhong had already activated his [Bone Encompassing Armor] and stepped in front of her, sending his right fist covered with bone studs, explosively towards her abdomen.

By this time, Li Bingyan had no way of dodging that blow, as her abdomen was bent slightly in by about 5cm.

Yue Zhong's right fist had landed harshly on Li Bingyan's abdomen, and his 60+ points of strength exploded without mercy.

Li Bingyan immediately flew backwards spraying blood from her

mouth, knocked into a tree with a huge impact, and slumped to the ground powerlessly.

If it was a contest of close quarters combat, Yue Zhong could not hope to defeat Li Bingyan. However, to the Yue Zhong who was infinitely closer to Level 50 and had all sorts of abilities and ultimate moves? He completely dominated Li Bingyan, not giving her a chance to even respond.

Yue Zhong glared coldly at Li Bingyan, pointed at her, and 2 Bone Spears shot out from his finger, penetrating her shoulders and completely shattering her rotator cuffs in her arms!

"Ah!!!! My arms! My arms!!" Li Bingyan let out an anguished shriek, as her arms flopped by her side, her lithe and sexy body squirming and struggling, as tears rolled down from her eyes.

Yue Zhong eyed Li Bingyan struggling in pain, as he pointed and shot a bone spear near her throat. As long as he swung, he could instantly slash the throat of this beauty from the Wolf Fang Battalion: "Stand! From now on, you're my captive! Of course, if you wish to die, I don't mind sending you on your way!"

Li Bingyan gritted her teeth, as she stared at Yue Zhong with intense hatred, before she slowly stood up. She did not want to die, even if she was humiliated in his hands, as long as there was a chance, she could get a chance for revenge. Amongst the Vietnamese, there were many who understood Chinese as well, and Li Bingyan was one of them.

Yue Zhong did not look at Li Bingyan for a moment longer, instead he casted his gaze towards a patch of forest still untouched by the blazing flames, and his eyes were full of caution as he said: "Friend! Have you seen enough? If you're still not going to come out, I'm going to treat you as an enemy! My treatment of my enemies includes the usage of guns and heavy firepower to wipe them out!" "Free of charge of course."

Yue Zhong grinned.

There was a bit of rustling of the tree branches, as a 1.7m-tall man decked in a camouflaged uniform appeared. He was clean-shaven, with a bright clear gaze, aged about 27-28. He stepped out revealing a smile as his hands held the head of a Vietnamese soldier.

"Friend! Don't be nervous! I'm not Vietnamese, in fact, I'm Chinese. We share the same enemy, who knows, we might even become good friends! This guy here is called Chang Xin, he possessed the [Pursuit] ability, and a number of our brothers have died because of this beast's ability. This time, it was thanks to you attracting the attention of the rest, that's how I managed to kill him."

This Zheng Qiang was the Enhancer that had attracted the swarm of Mutant Forest Lizards to the Tooth County, as he smiled at Yue Zhong, he threw the head of Chang Xin that was mangled and smeared with blood to the ground for inspection. Chang Xin's own combat ability wasn't high, his main ability [God's Eye], was an ability extremely hard to deal with. Based on this, he was even more troublesome than Da Yang.

Zheng Qiang flashed a laughing smile at Yue Zhong, while his bright gaze travelled to Yue Zhong's [Bone Encompassing Armor]. On inspection of the armor, his own muscles tensed up, immersing himself in the optimal condition to fight or flee should the need arise. "I'm Zheng Qiang! I'm from the Chinese Association! This brother must be Chinese as well! How should I address you?"

Yue Zhong eyed Zheng Qiang, asking without batting an eyelid: "How do you know if I'm Chinese? Amongst the Vietnamese, there are many who understand Chinese."

Zheng Qiang replied mildly: "Wuyan Hong is pretty caring of his fellow Vietnamese. Most of the Vietnamese experts around these parts have joined him. Those who possess the ability to kill his Wolf Fang warriors can only be us Chinese that he refers to as pigs and dogs."

"I'm called Yue Zhong! Chinese indeed. You want one?" Yue Zhong observed Zheng Qiang carefully, before deactivating his [Bone Encompassing Armor] with a thought, and taking out 2 canned Type 2 meat. He threw one to Zheng Qiang, before opening his own and sitting on a huge stone he started wolfing down the meat.

Zheng Qiang observed Yue Zhong a while, before taking a careful look at the can of Type 2 meat. Seeing no holes or seal damage, he chuckled good-naturedly, and also opened it to take a bite.

The moment he savoured that meat, his eyes brightened up, as he praised: "Type 2 Mutant Beast meat! Good stuff!!"

Zheng Qiang wolfed down a few more bites, before directly extending an olive branch to Yue Zhong: "Yue Zhong, moving solo to take down Wuyan Hong is definitely impossible! Why don't you join our Chinese Association? Let's join hands to deal with that monster, how about it?"

Humans who worked alone were always at a disadvantage. Even someone as strong as Yue Zhong, when dealing with the entire Wolf Fang Battalion, he would almost definitely be forced to retreat. He could not fight them head on. If Wuyan Hong deployed his entire army, Yue Zhong could at most cause some harassment, and if he wasn't careful, he might end up dying.

Yue Zhong did not reply immediately, instead he asked: "Who is in the Chinese Association?"

The Chinese Association wasn't some secretive group anyway. Zheng Qiang quickly highlighted some of the main information about the association to Yue Zhong.

Wuyan Hong hated the Chinese to the core, as long as he caught any Chinese, they would be used as slaves, undergoing all sorts of torment and torture, often worked till their deaths. Under his tyrannical rule, many Chinese were forced to work until they were helpless, and hence started to rebel. These people created the

Chinese Association to go against Wuyan Hong.

Other than the Chinese Association, there were: the Freemasons, Green Triad, Tiger Triad, Leopard Triad, Big Blade Triad, etc; all sorts of Chinese gangs. The biggest one was the Chinese Association.

However, as these individual groups were not that powerful, plus they weren't as united, they could not possibly match up against Wuyan Hong's Great Vietnam Empire. They could only continuously carry out harassing activities, though in some of the operations, their own experts had been killed by the members of the Wolf Fang Battalion.

This time, Zheng Qiang had actually witness Yue Zhong killing the entire team by himself, and he had hence proposed that he join.

It must be clear that these 7 members of Da Yang's team were not easily killed. 3 Evolvers of the Chinese Association had actually been killed by these 7 Enhancers. Yue Zhong could single-handedly deal with them, it could be seen that he was truly fearsome.

Yue Zhong just said a sentence in an indifferent voice: "If I were to join the Chinese Association, can I become the leader?"

Zheng Qiang laughed awkwardly: "No! But Yue Zhong, based on your strength, as long as you obtain enough merit, in 2 years time, becoming the vice-leader is not an issue."

After all, to them, it wasn't some period of where strength rules, and the one who could fight the best would become the leader. Even if Yue Zhong was strong, if he joined the Chinese Association, he couldn't possibly become the leader in one step. *1

Yue Zhong shook his head: "Then forget it! I'm not interested in becoming someone else's underling. Let's just form an alliance!"

Zheng Qiang sighed, most Chinese did indeed abide by the saying 'One would rather be a chicken's head than a cow's behind.' Those

gangs like the Freemasons, Green Triad, so on and forth, every one of them had a leader that was an Enhancer above Level 15, and they were not weak in combat. However, they were all unwilling to join the Chinese Association, and had only agreed to an alliance. Furthermore, within those smaller gangs, there would be infighting almost everyday, and a grand battle would be staged every few days.

Zheng Qiang stole a glance at the captive Li Bingyan, and a heat could be seen in his eyes as he asked Yue Zhong: "How do you plan on dealing with this Wolf Gang Battalion beauty? Why don't you give her to the Chinese Association? We can give you 20 AKs and 2,000 bullets."

Yue Zhong's eyes brightened, as he looked carefully at Li Bingyan, and started to think.

Li Bingyan saw Yue Zhong's calculating look and her skin crawled, as she immediately used fluent Chinese to speak to Yue Zhong: "Yue Zhong!! Let me go. As long as you're willing to let me go, I'm willing to give you 50 tonnes of rations, 20 AKs, and 4,000 bullets to exchange for me!!"

Yue Zhong laughed and suggested to Zheng Qiang: "Zheng Qiang, do me a favour. Let your guys go and approach the Wolf Fang Battalion for a trade. Get them to send 300 tonnes of food in exchange for this Beautiful Snake Li Bingyan. As your compensation, you guys get 30 tonnes of rations. How's that?"

Zheng Qiang thought for a while, and knew that there wouldn't be any loss for the Chinese Association, therefore he nodded and agreed: "Fine!"

In this post-apocalyptic world, any faction would not turn down food. 30 tonnes was not a small amount after all. Just by putting in a little effort, they could get such a sum? The Chinese Association would definitely not have any issues.

The Wolf Fang Battalion commander Wu Dahui instantly exploded out with anger upon receiving a military report. "What??! Da Yang's team was annihilated and Bingyan was captured??"

Chapter 321: Seeking Instructions

The soldier that was in charge of reporting the intel was trembling and broke out in cold sweat as he faced the pressure emitted from Wu Dahui's body, and he panted as he continued to speak "Yes!! That person also wanted to pass a message saying that we have to take out 300 tonnes of rations to exchange for Li Bingyan."

Wu Dahui's face turned steely, as he grabbed the soldier tightly and asked: "Who was this "guy" who killed Da Yang and the rest?"

Da Yang was after all one of the top ten experts amongst this group of experts in the Wolf Fang Battalion. This small team had every single type of utility available! These included close combat, ranged combat, pursuit, and summons. Even powerful Evolvers had died at their hands! Yet somehow this elite team was actually wiped out by this single person called Yue Zhong, and Wu Dahui could not believe it.

The soldier immediately replied: "The person who killed them all was a Chinese man! His name is Yue Zhong!"

Wu Dahui's gaze turned cold, as he emitted out a killing intent: "Yue Zhong!!!

Go back and tell them! I will take out 300 tonnes of food to exchange for Li Bingyan. Tell Yue Zhong, if he dares to hurt even a single hair on her, I will not let him go!" "Yes!" The soldier affirmed and quickly dismissed himself.

A tanned dwarf with a height not even 1.4m stepped out. With a frown, as asked Wu Dahui: "Dahui!! Are you really gonna exchange 300 tonnes of rations for Li Bingyan?"

This dwarf was called Li Yuanda, and he was an Agility-based Evolver. He was also the vice-commander of the Wolf Fang Battalion, as his combat prowess was second only to Wu Dahui.

With his fearsome technique and speed, he had once single-handedly wiped out an entire line of soldiers who were fully equipped.

Amongst the Wolf Fang Battalion, his views were treated with respect as well, and his teamwork and cooperation with Wu Dahui was extremely tight.

Wu Dahui's face broke into a cold grin: "Of course not!! I want to use the 300 tonnes of rations as bait, and thoroughly mess with that Chinese pig Yue Zhong! I will turn his bones into dust!!"

As they say, the same type of men flock around a leader of their own hearts. Wuyan Hong's racism against China and her people was extremely apparent, and he exclusively viewed the Chinese as slaves. Wu Dahui and the rest of his subordinates were likewise, and didn't view the Chinese as people but rather something closer to a sub-human. It was almost like the Germany of World War II.

Hearing Wu Dahui's words, Li Yuanda did not speak up anymore. He just wanted to kill people, as long as Wu Dahui did not go against his few principles, he would not interfere with Wu Dahui's actions. It was because of this, these 2 had such a great working relationship, and did not have any conflict because of power.

Not long after, huge trucks drove out of Tooth County, and they were packed filled with rations as they drove towards the mountain top that Yue Zhong had designated. 300 tonnes of food was after all not a small sum, and the fleet of trucks had to travel slowly for a few hours before arriving at the summit.

Wu Dahui deployed troops to block off the mountain top, and swiftly arranged for the warriors of the Wolf Fang Battalion to get in position at different key points on the mountain. At the same time, there were 2 assault helicopters hiding within the forest, preparing to take off at any moment and commence an assault on Yue Zhong.

Wu Dahui did not dare underestimate this Yue Zhong that could

decimate his elite team, and though this type of strong character could not possibly take on Wuyan Hong's army, when it came to guerilla warfare, it could cause problems for the Great Vietnam Empire.

The Wolf Fang Battalion had killed a number of experts who had gone against Wuyan Hong, but these experts had given them a fair bit of trouble, over a hundred soldiers had died at the hands of these experts. These opposing experts had also caused quite the delay for some of his troops.

As time passed, the important Yue Zhong still had not appeared.

"Damn that Yue Zhong! What the fuck does he want?" After 3 hours, Wu Dahui was starting to feel impatient, his brows furrowing and he cursed out loud.

"Commander!!" Right at this time, a soldier ran forward from a small road, as he reported: "Yue Zhong had sent someone over! He said since we have set up traps and ambushes, we don't have sincerity. He wants us to move everything to Bamboo Peak now."

Wu Dahui's expression was steely, as the fear towards Yue Zhong increased by another fold. "Was it seen through by him? He sure is cunning!!"

Another soldier asked: "Commander! What now?"

Wu Dahui pondered a while, this small hiccup was also within his calculations, and he gave an order: "Let's go along with his wishes for now. Bring everything to Bamboo Peak. This time, none of you follow!"

"Yes!" The soldier replied with respect.

"As long as you're still greedy for this 300 tonnes of food of mine! You will not be able to escape from my clutches!" Wu Dahui thought fiercely in his heart. Out of these 300 tonnes of rations, mostly were real rations, but there were 30 boxes which hid the experts of the Wolf Fang Battalion.

As long as Yue Zhong sent someone to retrieve the 300 tonnes of rations, the experts in the boxes could then slaughter their way out, and with the support of the 2 assault helicopters, they would be enough to take down even an entire battalion of untrained soldiers.

The Vietnamese soldiers abided by Wu Dahui's orders and moved the 300 tonnes of rations to Bamboo Peak, wasting another few hours in the process.

"Commander!! Yue Zhong wants us to send the rations to the Lizard Forest." After the entourage had arrived at Bamboo Peak and waited for an hour, a soldier came running to Wu Dahui and reported.

"Fucking Yue Zhong!! You dare to mess around with me!! Once I catch you, I'll make you die a slow and horrible death!!!" Wu Dahui's face was twitching with anger, and he lashed out on a huge tree. With a 'hong', his punch caused the tree to be split apart. He now knew Yue Zhong had no intentions of dealing with him in the first place, otherwise he wouldn't play him around like this.

Wu Dahui gritted his teeth with his ashen expression and said: "Let's go back!"

Under Wu Dahui's command, the warriors of the Wolf Fang Battalion and the rest of the Vietnamese soldiers went back amidst their exhaustion.

At this time, Yue Zhong had actually brought Li Bingyan along with him as they went towards the direction of the small town that was the living quarters of the vanguard team. He had already accomplished his objective of observing the situation in Tooth County for a day, and he had to return back to organize a retreat and leave the town.

Yue Zhong could only cause a little disturbance for the troops of Wuyan Hong, as he was not able to face the entire army.

As long the Wolf Fang Battalion set out against Yue Zhong, they could easily wipe out Yue Zhong's current troops.

Li Bingyan stared at Yue Zhong heatedly and said: "You're untrustworthy! Didn't you promise that as long as there was 300 tonnes of rations, you would let me go? Didn't our men bring the 300 tonnes of food for you? Why didn't you deal with them and then let me go?"

Yue Zhong had not gone to the designated exchange points, and this had infuriated Li Bingyan. She was clear, that the moment Yue Zhong stepped into the exchange location, it would only be death for him. She had held on to that hope, but her hopes were dashed because of Yue Zhong's actions.

Yue Zhong eyed the angry Li Bingyan and coldly retorted: "Shut up! It's your Wolf Fang Battalion that cannot be trusted, they actually set up an ambush, and hence caused the deal to fall through. Don't blame it on me."

From their ready agreement, Yue Zhong knew there wasn't a chance for the negotiations to go through. 300 tonnes, it wasn't a small sum after all. Furthermore, if their positions were swapped, if Yue Zhong were in Wu Dahui's shoes, he would also think of ways to get rid of that greedy bandit.

Li Bingyan stared at Yue Zhong with hate, before lowering her head, with a humble expression, her heart was however, filled with thoughts of killing Yue Zhong countless times.

After Yue Zhong brought Li Bingyan into the town, he saw the Chinese, Caucasians and African survivors all had recovered a little of their health, as their hands held weapons, patrolling the town, instilling fear in the Vietnamese survivors.

Throughout the streets, there was not a soul in sight, instead, there were some sandbags, barbed wires and a few soldiers.

Seeing Yue Zhong walking over, those gun-wielding soldiers all

saluted Yue Zhong, as their eyes filled with reverence and gratitude. This man in front of them had actually saved them from their captivity and given them food, health, and their dignity. His actions allowed them to live once more as humans, and not like pigs or dogs. This caused them to be deeply thankful to Yue Zhong.

One of the Chinese soldiers with a huge burn scar mark on his face that gave him a ferocious appearance, came up and saluted Yue Zhong with idolization and gratitude in his eyes. He spoke, saying: "Boss Yue!! Miss Chen Xue is over there, please come with me!"

Those 200+ non-Vietnamese had led lives that were worse than pigs and dogs, and every one of them carried scars to show for it, not many were unblemished.

"What's your name?" Yue Zhong walked along with the soldier as he asked.

"I'm Pan Jinyong!" The soldier swiftly replied.

Yue Zhong lightly smiled: "Are you willing to be my personal guard?"

Pan Jinyong's expression would become even more ferocious at the mention of the Vietnamese, and he spoke with killing intent: "Of course I'm willing!! But Boss Yue! I want to be on the frontlines to kill those Vietnamese dogs even more!!"

Those bullshit professors who talked about 'retribution when the time comes' and 'revenge would not solve anything' were simply talking. They did not suffer any form of harm, and could naturally engage in debate and theoretical talks. If their daughters or wives had been raped or hurt, if they could still maintain their calm and forgive the perpetrators, then that would be more convincing. *1

Yue Zhong had rescued these 200 people from the clutches of the Vietnamese, and it was normal for them to be filled with hatred for the Vietnamese. They could not wait to kill those who had caused

them such suffering.

Hearing Pan Jinyong's words, Li Bingyan frowned, she was after all Vietnamese, and hearing everyone scolding the Vietnamese as dogs, she was naturally unhappy.

Yue Zhong patted Pan Jinyong's shoulders, and didn't force it: "Then fine!! Focus on recovering first! In the future, kill more enemies!"

Chapter 322: Suspicion!

"Who're you?" Right as Pan Jinyong brought Yue Zhong before the town government building, 4 women wielding guns blocked their way and barked out coldly.

Pang Jinyong stepped forward to declare: "This is Boss Yue, he's the man who saved us last night!! He's Miss Chen Yao's boyfriend!"

These female survivors had been saved by Chen Yao personally and did not see Yue Zhong.

"Many thanks Boss Yue, for saving us!!" The 4 gun-wielding women looked at Yue Zhong, tears of gratitude welling up in their eyes, as they all got down on the floor and expressed their thanks with a huge bow. If Yue Zhong had not taken action, they would have been tormented to death without a shred of dignity.

Yue Zhong sighed lightly: "Get up! It's what I should do." The women stood up only then. Yue Zhong allowed Pan Jinyong to lead him into the building.

Out of the 4 women, 2 were assigned to follow Yue Zhong, just in case he turned out to be a fraud, and had bad intentions towards Chen Yao.

"Yue Zhong you're back!" In that office, Chen Yao was currently assigning responsibilities and duties to some female survivors, the moment she saw Yue Zhong, she squealed out in delight.

Chen Yao had been under stress having to get things in order. In this town, the number of Vietnamese numbered above 2,600. The total non-Vietnamese were about 400. Most of these 400 had also been tortured and tormented, their bodies and health having suffered, and required time to recuperate. If the 2,000+ Vietnamese decided to revolt, wanting to put down the rebellion with only the 400 weak non-Vietnamese would be difficult. Other than that, Chen Yao had to be constantly worried about the

potential threat of Wuyan Hong's troops. In the forests, the Mutant Beasts could attack at any time. The distribution of the food amongst the survivors. All were matters weighing on her mind.

Being the temporary leader, Chen Yao discovered that she had to consider so many issues within a short space of time. She finally understood the difficulties of Yue Zhong who had to shoulder so many things all along.

Seeing Chen Yao's pleased expression, the women in the room all took a deep look at Yue Zhong, committing the features of this man who saved them into their memory, before exiting the room tactfully.

Yue Zhong lightly smiled and walked to the sofa beside Chen Yao and sat while praising her: "Chen Yao! Good job! Seems like the entire town is under your control."

Not anybody could just make use of a small force to subdue an entire town. Chen Yao had managed to do so without a big fuss, it showed how capable she was.

Chen Yao looked to Yue Zhong and smiled sweetly, as she sat beside him, and narrated how she went about doing things.

After Yue Zhong left, Chen Yao had swiftly allocated all those survivors who could move and fight to control the important channels within the town.

At the same time, after rounding the women who were treated like playthings by the Vietnamese soldiers, she distributed weapons to them. Although they were deemed as playthings by the enemy, they could at the very least eat decently, and while their bodies were weak, they had enough strength for combat.

With the 200+ female survivors wielding weapons and patrolling in town, the Vietnamese survivors were kept in check. Chen Yao had also imposed martial law, executing anyone who walked on

the street, and all the Vietnamese survivors were forced to remain within their own homes, preventing them from engaging in any events.

After employing various measures, Chen Yao could then considered herself to have fully tightened the control over this small town. This was after all Northern Vietnam, where the Sino-Vietnam War had only occurred 30 years prior. Even still, many of the people here were still filled with hatred against the Chinese. In this area, being Chinese, the moment Chen Yao slipped up, she would face the wrath of these Vietnamese.

At the time when Vietnam had fought against France and America in the Vietnam War, China had tightened their belts and sent war aid of over 20 billion yuan worth of supplies, volunteers who had helped in combat, and improved the relationships between the officers and fighters. It was all forgotten.

Of course, the Southern part of Vietnam which was not as affected by the war had different sentiments. The Vietnamese there were still on fairly friendly terms with the Chinese.

After a day's rest, those who consumed the Type 2 Meat had started to recover a huge part of their health, and could engage in low-intensity combat should the need arise. Of course, based on their current constitution, it was too much to hope for them to fight out a prolonged battle.

Chen Yao's beautiful eyes flashed with anxiety, as she stared fixedly at Yue Zhong: "What do we do now, Yue Zhong?"

The situation did not bode well for them. Not only were they in unfamiliar territory, they were in the Northern Vietnam area, where people viewed the Chinese with enmity. This made it particularly difficult for them to rally troops that they could trust. On top of that, many of the survivors would not be able to accept Yue Zhong's leadership as he was Chinese. Last but not least, their current position was too close to Wuyan Hong's Tooth County.

The distance apart was not even 60km, as long as the opponent sent 3 battalions, they could easily wipe out Yue Zhong's group.

Yue Zhong replied in a heavy voice: "Quickly organize everyone, we're retreating towards Lang Son City!"

They could only take it step by step from here, after all, the direction to Lang Son was fraught with forests that were filled with ferocious Mutant Beasts, as well as various towns overrun by zombies. The remainder were all within Wuyan Hong's control.

If Yue Zhong were to try challenge Wuyan Hong's troops based on his current force, it was basically seeking death.

Chen Yao frowned and said: "Yue ZHong, there are over 2,000 Vietnamese here. If we just retreat like that to Lang Son, won't there be a problem? The Mutant Beasts will be attracted to them on the way."

The migration of 2,000+ people, would definitely be a source of attraction for the Mutant Beasts with acute sense of smell. At that time, when Yue Zhong had arranged for the hundred thousand survivors of SY County to move to Ning County, they could only follow the highway, as before the apocalypse, there weren't any huge wild beasts in those areas. This way, there wouldn't be any large Mutant Beasts there after the apocalypse. At the same time, they had the protection of the army, and even then, during the migration, there were still cases of waves of Mutant Beasts launching assaults on the migrating group.

Vietnam had so many forests, and the number of Mutant Beasts were shockingly high, if this group of 2,000 people were to migrate, the attacks of the Mutant Beasts were bound to happen.

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed with a strange gaze, as he said without batting an eyelid: "No cause for concern! Let's proceed!"

Chen Yao frowned, as she looked at Yue Zhong. In her mind, she knew him to be someone who did care for innocent survivors.

However, she was intelligent enough to understand what Yue Zhong did not say. It was hard to tell if those Vietnamese survivors were friends or enemies, and may possibly be the ones to stab a knife in their back. Under those circumstances, even if they all died, Yue Zhong would not possibly be heartbroken. Yue Zhong would definitely not leave 2,000 survivors to Wuyan Hong, because they would become his workers and soldiers.

Chen Yao thought of those Chinese women who were treated like dogs by the Vietnamese, and she gritted her teeth: "Then I'll go and organize the moving now!"

Right then, a scary explosion resounded from outside. At the same time, there were angry shouts, and gunfire broke out. "Quick follow me!!" Yue Zhong's face changed, and he swiftly rushed out the door.

Chen Yao also followed tightly behind Yue Zhong and ran out from the building.

When Yue Zhong and Chen Yao had just exited the building, a few rockets landed on it, and following the terrifying explosion, the entire building was blasted apart.

Chen Yao turned her head to look at the wreckage, her face pale. If it wasn't for Yue Zhong, she might have perished within that rubble.

Yue Zhong lifted his head, only to see 2 assault helicopters in the air. The 2 assault helicopters were firing wildly, displaying their position as the tyrant of the skies, causing a huge number of buildings to be destroyed, burying the survivors within as well.

With the different types of inflammatory bullets that was fired, the entire town was soon engulfed in a sea of fire. A large number of Vietnamese survivors came running out of their houses, wailing loudly before being shredded by the hail of gunfire.

Those soldiers under Yue Zhong were firing their guns

continuously. There were some who even tried to fire a rocket at the assault helicopters.

It was just that the assault helicopters weren't staying stationary, or waiting for the rockets to hit them. Other than those with special abilities or Evolvers like Yue Zhong, or Agility-focused Enhancers, normal people would find it hard to shoot down those assault helicopters with the rocket launchers. As for the normal bullets, they just deflected off the thick armor of the assault helicopters.

The 2 assault helicopters only had to spray their line of fire towards those soldiers firing at them, and would be able to annihilate Yue Zhong's troops entirely.

The 2 helicopters remained hovering in the air, exuding the aura of death and fear of an oppressive tyrant, as they looked and aimed at Yue Zhong's troops.

"Damn it!!" Yue Zhong eyed the 2 assault helicopters and his eyes flashed with coldness, as he activated his Devil Flame. The Devil Flame appeared in his hands and was condensed into a Devil Flame Spear.

With all his strength, he threw the Devil Flame Spear under the guidance of his Spirit to penetrate one of the assault helicopters.

The Devil Flame instantly combusted! The terrifying flame roared within the body of the assault helicopter, causing it to burst into flames, turning it into a huge fireball, as it descended rapidly to the ground and crashed.

The other assault helicopter saw that its companion had fallen, and it swiftly rose up, flying towards higher ground. As long as they flew to the clouds, Yue Zhong would not be able to handle them without any flying machines or modern weaponry.

Chapter 323: Shock!

"You're too slow!!" Yue Zhong's eyes flashed with a hint of cold fury, as the Devil Flame danced in his right hand. He condensed into another Devil Flame Spear, and he used all his strength to throw it at the escaping helicopter! In a flash, the spear penetrated the helicopter.

With a huge HONG sound, the Devil Flame combusted and caused the remaining helicopter to explode in a ball of fire as well, before crashing towards the ground.

"Too strong!!"

"What strength!!"

"....."

The troops that were standing beside Yue Zhong, be it female or male, had eyes filled with endless respect. Yue Zhong had used his own strength to take down 2 assault helicopters, which they couldn't believe was a feat that could be accomplished by a human.

"Damn bastard!! He has already caught up!!" Yue Zhong had no joy on his face even though he destroyed the 2 assault helicopters.

The 2 assault helicopters that were deployed by Wuyan Hong had instantly decimated a number of Yue Zhong's troops, and amongst the central force of 400 people, over 50 had died. Over 400 Vietnamese survivors were killed amongst the 2000+ survivors as well. An additional 400+ had seized the opportunity during the chaos to run, and their whereabouts were unknown.

Many vehicles had been destroyed by the 2 assault helicopters, on top of that, a vehicle loaded with over 30 tonnes of rations had also been burnt, turning the food contained inside to cinders.

"Evacuate!" Yue Zhong looked at the burning town and the corpses littered on the ground, as he gritted his teeth and barked out the order. He could only commit this atrocity to heart, and

wreak vengeance in the future. After all, he couldn't do anything if he were to face Wuyan Hong directly with his current strength.

Under Yue Zhong's orders, the remaining 1,000+ survivors were led by the 300 soldiers who were still weak as they went towards the direction of Nabu Town.

A few of the vehicles that were not destroyed were filled to the brim with the items that could be brought along and followed the human group from behind.

By this time, it was already evening, and night was about to fall. Still, Yue Zhong had no choice but to order the group to continue moving. This was because the town of the vanguard troops was really too close to Wuyan Hong's troops. Staying there would just mean certain death.

In the dark, the advance of the troops had slowed to a crawl.

Organizing a movement in the dark was easy to lose some troops if they were not careful, and especially since they're in the midst of the forest that was filled with Mutant Beasts, it was a dangerous operation.

In the dark, pairs of green eyes lit up, as they stared down at the group of delicious prey. Without hesitation, they embarked on a ferocious assault.

"Level 23 Mutant Beast: Mutant Leopard Cat. It is an agile night hunter."

"Careful!! There're enemies!!" Yue Zhong had always kept his guard up, and the moment those ferocious Mutant Leopard Cats with bodies like cheetahs and strange runes covering their bodies appeared, he had already shouted his warning.

White Bones immediately charged forward into the midst of the Mutant Leopard Cats, waving his iconic White Bone Axe about, at the same time, protruding small Bone Blades from its body. This combo of attacks ended up instantly decimating the Mutant

Leopard Cats that pounced towards it.

Yue Zhong had already taken out his heavy machine gun and was firing wildly at the Mutant Leopard Cats that somehow numbered in the 100s.

Under the heavy barrage of firepower, those pouncing Leopard Cats found themselves being suppressed. The strength of the machine gun bullets were extremely lethal, and they, being low-level Mutant Beasts, were not mutated enough to deal with these bullets.

The leader of the defence troop Gan Tao had fired a flare into the skies the moment the attack started, and had shouted loudly: "Fire!! Kill those damn beasts!!"

The 300+ soldiers started firing their guns at the Mutant Leopard Cats. However, as they had not gone through much target practice prior, their shots mostly missed. There were even a few who received the recoil badly on their shoulders, causing their guns to drop to the floor.

Thankfully, with just the efforts of Yue Zhong and White Bones, they managed to kill a large number of the Mutant Leopard Cats.

Under the flare, Chen Yao had also seen clearly the Mutant Leopard Cats, as she immediately activated her [Plant Manipulation] Ability. She attacked while making use of 6 vines to slaughter those Mutant Cats that survived the onslaught of Yue Zhong and White Bones.

The coordination between the 3 of them was so smooth that it allowed them to kill a large number of the Mutant Leopard Cats, but as the total numbers were above 300, there were quite a few who managed to charge into the midst of the Vietnamese survivors, as they slaughtered those survivors mercilessly.

The Vietnamese survivors were plunged into chaos. Those who were within the areas of attack quickly escaped toward various

directions, wailing as they ran.

Those extremely agile Leopard Cats pounced forward, and swiftly bit the throats of many of those escaping survivors, gorging on them.

As for those who had their wits about them, they ran towards the direction of Yue Zhong, Chen Yao and Gan Tao. Only by being near these experts, could they have a chance to live on.

As Yue Zhong made use of his heavy machine guns to kill a large number of the Leopard Cats, he then pointed to those who were chasing the Vietnamese survivors, as dozens of Devil Flame balls were conjured out of thin air, and shot towards those Leopard Cats.

The dozens of Devil Flame balls exploded atop the heads of those Leopard Cats, directly killing a few of them.

After decimating those Leopard Cats, he quickly pulled out his Stinger, and shot at the remaining Leopard Cats continuously. Each time he fired a bullet, he could cause the head of a Leopard Cat to explode.

The heavy machine gun was the best weapon against a huge mob, and the Stinger was most effective against single targets. Under the [Night Enhancement], Yue Zhong's Agility had already surpassed normal humans by 10 times, and his Stinger kept firing, as he changed out bullets, every single movement of his fluid and precise. His shots rang out accurately and ferociously without stop, killing the Leopard Cats one by one.

On the other side, White Bones was also killing with a speed that was slightly higher than Yue Zhong. Both of them combined had slaughtered over half of the original group of Mutant Leopard Cats.

"Congratulations on achieving Level 50, you have gained 2 attribute points to be allocated, as well as a skill enhancement

point. Due to the possession of [Heart of Darkness], your Devil Flame Skill can be enhanced to +4. With it, its strength will be enhanced even further, and the power of the Type 2 Devil Flame will also increase exponentially."

After Yue Zhong had just used a Stinger to kill off a Leopard Cat, the sweet notification sound resounded in his ears. He had gained a level.

His mind thinking fast, he only chose to allocate the 2 attribute points to Agility, and did not immediately enhance his Devil Flame to +4!

With the combined ferocious attacks of Yue Zhong and White Bones, the remaining Leopard Cats were finally scared off, as they left 200 corpses, before escaping into the distance.

"Continue moving!!" Yue Zhong looked at the retreating group of Leopard Cats, before heaving a sigh of relief, and collecting the items dropped by the Mutant Leopard Cats, and then ordering for the journey to continue.

This wasn't the place to stay for long, and the fur of the Mutant Leopard Cats were good materials for protective vests. Even though they could not defend against bullets, they could be useful in protection against the claws of normal zombies. But Yue Zhong wasn't willing to stay too long here.

The Mutant Leopard Cats were considered smaller Mutant Beasts, if a Type 2 or Type 3 was to appear, then this entire group of survivors would only be facing certain death.

After the assault of the Leopard Cats, all the survivors became aware of the dangers of the nighttime journey. They quickly picked up their speed as they continued on their journey in the darkness.

Not long after the group continued on their way, a Type 2 Mutant Leopard Cat with the body of a liger and the majestic aura of a king

stepped out from the forest. It sniffed the scent in the air, before shooting towards the direction of Yue Zhong and his men.

The Type 2 Mutant Leopard Cat activated its maximum speed as it gave chase from behind, and the normal survivors could only feel the strong gust of wind blowing past, not even catching sight of the appearance of the Type 2 Mutant Leopard Cat.

Like the flash of a lightning, the Type 2 Mutant Leopard Cat had reached Yue Zhong's back, and noiselessly extended its lethal hooked claws towards Yue Zhong's neck.

Only when the Type 2 Mutant Leopard Cat extended its claws, did Yue Zhong feel the danger from his [Danger Perception] ability, and at the first instance, he activated his [Shadow Steps], lowering his body and dodging towards the side.

White Bones who was by Yue Zhong side had also discovered the Type 2 Mutant Leopard Cat as it swung its axe ferociously towards it.

The speed of the Type 2 Mutant Leopard Cat was truly astonishing, even after activating his [Shadow Steps], Yue Zhong did not manage to fully escape from its claws, receiving a huge slash on his shoulders, and the Type 2 Mutant Black-Scaled Boar hide was actually torn through by the Type 2 Mutant Leopard Cat easily. Yue Zhong's shoulder also received a deep wound, when the Leopard Cat actually clawed out a huge chunk of his flesh and blood.

"Level 60 Mutant Beast: Type 2 Mutant Leopard Cat! The tyrant of the forest."

The Type 2 Mutant Leopard Cat had no innate abilities, its strength could not compare with those huge Mutant Beasts, nor could its defences match those of the Type 2 Mutant Black-Scaled Boar or Type 2 Mutant Snapping Turtle, like Turtle. Its fur could only withstand against the bullets of a normal heavy machine gun, but not the explosive power of rockets. However, it possessed an

incredible speed that was terrifying, nearing the extent of a Type 3 Beast, and its sharp claws, as well as a superior fighting instinct, therefore making it the top killer within the forest.

White Bones' axe was extremely fast, even an Agility-based Evolver would be hacked in two at such a close distance. However, the Type 2 Mutant Leopard Cat just nimbly twisted its body, evading the blow of the axe, before its 4 limbs stretched on the ground, and pushed off with great strength, crashing into White Bones' body, knocking it backwards for a few dozen metres.

Chapter 324: Type 2 Mutant Leopard Cat!

Yue Zhong rolled to the side, and swiftly leapt back to his feet, pulling out his trusty PF98 that had worked against many Type 2 Mutant Beasts. Although it had only 9 rounds left, at this crucial point in time, he couldn't care less.

Yue Zhong had just aimed at the Type 2 Leopard Cat, when it used its 4 limbs to push itself off the ground, disappearing from Yue Zhong's aim like a ghost. This Type 2 Leopard Cat was not like other Type 2 Mutant Beasts which had huge bodies. Although it didn't have the power and defence that came with the size, its speed on the other hand was extremely terrifying.

The moment the Type 2 Leopard Cat disappeared, it appeared to Yue Zhong's right, its eyes filled with a cold and cruel tint, as it swiped its claws towards Yue Zhong's neck. As long as it found its aim, Yue Zhong's head would be slashed away.

Yue Zhong threw the PF98 to one side while waving across his ring, and the 2m-long Black Tooth Blade appeared in his hand. He only had time to bring it in front of him to defend, and the huge cat paw struck the blade.

The moment the claws met the blade, a huge force reverbed throughout the sword, causing the Black Tooth blade to tremble uncontrollably. Yue Zhong had forcefully blocked this attack, but had been sent flying a few metres backwards.

Although the Type 2 Leopard Cat was not as strong as the other behemoth Type 2s, its strength still exceeded Yue Zhong who wasn't a Strength-based Evolver. The moment Yue Zhong was sent flying, the Type 2 Leopard Cat had sprung forward like a bolt of lightning. Its vapor like movement made it appear in front of Yue Zhong, once more stretching out its huge claws to swipe at him!

Yue Zhong took a deep breath, activating his [Gravity Manipulation], as a 100 jin suddenly weighed down on the Type 2

Leopard Cat.

With the pressure of the 100-jin, the Type 2 Leopard Cat found its speed greatly reduced, and while Yue Zhong who had activated his [Shadow Steps] accordingly was still far from matching it, he was not as helpless as he was at the beginning of the fight.

Different skills could create different results for different situations. Yue Zhong's [Gravity Manipulation] was low-level, and could only exhibit its effectiveness on a non-strength type Mutant Beast like the Leopard Cat. If it was a Type 2 Black Scaled Boar, then the 100-jin weight would not even feel like anything to the beast.

Yue Zhong could now catch the speed of the Type 2 Leopard Cat, and his eyes flashed with ferocity. The Black Tooth Blade in his hands turned into a flash as it slashed towards the Mutant Beast, intending to cleave it in 2.

This Type 2 Leopard Cat had truly given Yue Zhong a dangerous sense of pressure. The speed it exhibited was precisely the perfect counter to Yue Zhong's chosen path of enhancement. His main killing blow, the PF98, could do nothing to the speed of this Type 2 Leopard Cat. Using the PF98 was just a meaningless way to die.

The Type 2 Leopard Cat agilely twisted its body, evading the blow from the Black Tooth Blade, before it curled up slightly, and sprung out explosively towards Yue Zhong, knocking him to the ground.

When it had knocked Yue Zhong to the ground, it opened its huge jaws to chomp down towards Yue Zhong's neck!

At this critical juncture, Yue Zhong's left hand raised up to defend his neck, and the Type 2 Leopard Cat bit down harshly, its sharp teeth penetrating through the Type 2 Mutant Black Scaled Boar hide, crushing the bones in Yue Zhong's left hand.

"Bind it Chen Yao!!!" Yue Zhong hollered amidst the excruciating

pain he was feeling.

In response, 4 vines suddenly shot out from the ground, and coiled around the limbs of the Type 2 Leopard Cat like snakes, pulling down tightly, and dragging it forcefully away from Yue Zhong's body.

Chen Yao had already risen to Level 23, and not only was she an Evolver, her [Plant Manipulation] ability was risen to Level 3, her control over her vines had improved plus the vines themselves had grown a lot sturdier. It was definitely enough to contend with this non-Strength based Type 2 Mutant Beast.

Yue Zhong rolled towards this direction, because he had seen Chen Yao's vines being controlled here.

When the Type 2 Leopard Cat found its limbs entangled, it started struggling furiously, and the 4 vines were being tested to their limits, seemingly about to break anytime.

Yue Zhong eyed the Type 2 Leopard Cat that was bound tightly, and immediately activated his [Body Encompassing Armor], and White Bones turned into a bone carapace that covered his entire body. His left hand that was mangled by the Leopard Cat could only form an exoskeleton with White Bones' carapace.

"Stinky cat!! You have bitten off more than you can chew!! Now it's my turn!!" Yue Zhong glared at the Type 2 Leopard Cat, and his eyes showed a cold hate, before jumping onto the cat's head. As he landed, immediately his fist started pummeling the head of the Type 2 Leopard Cat, his 60+ Strength exploded out, beating the Type 2 Leopard Cat senseless.

Yue Zhong punched out with all his strength, his fists raining down on the head, causing the brain to suffer the whiplash from the force until it started haemorrhaging.

Yue Zhong's Strength that was far greater than a normal person could not do much to a huge Type 2 Mutant Beast with a thick hide

and huge body mass, but to the Type 2 Leopard Cat that was Agility-focused, it had an immense potential to maim and kill.

The Type 2 Leopard Cat continued to struggle violently, each time pulling the vines tautly.

On the other side, Chen Yao's eyes were bloodshot, she had expended her Spirit to maintain the strength of the vines, and to prevent them from breaking. Without the support from her Spirit, the vines would have snapped long ago.

Yue Zhong's fists collided with the head of the Type 2 Leopard Cat constantly, after bashing it multiple times did the Leopard Cat finally slump limply to the ground.

Yue Zhong then heaved a sigh of relief, and allocated the precious skill point to the [Tamer Technique] causing it to reach +2, increasing the number of lifeforms he could tame to 3.

Yue Zhong then focused the [Tamer Technique] onto the Type 2 Leopard Cat that was beaten senseless by him, as a green light shot in between the brows of the Leopard Cat, and started to condense into a rune. Upon completion, it entered the body of the Type 2 Leopard Cat.

The gaze of the Type 2 Leopard Cat immediately turned fierce, and the condensing rune dissipated. Yue Zhong's 1st attempt at taming this beast was a failure!

"Damn bastard!" Yue Zhong roared out angrily as he pummeled the head of the Type 2 Leopard Cat with his right fist mercilessly, and lashing out with dozens of blows, causing the Type 2 Leopard Cat to throw up blood again, become dispirited.

Yue Zhong saw that the Type 2 Leopard Cat threw up blood again, and once more activated his [Tamer Technique, as the green light once again shot in between the brows of the Type 2 Leopard Cat, and condensed into a rune as it entered its body.

Only this time, there was no further resistance from the Type 2

Leopard Cat, and the rune was fully absorbed into its body.

When the [Tamer Technique] rune entered the body of the Type 2 Leopard Cat, Yue Zhong felt the connection established between them.

Yue Zhong heaved a sigh of relief, and called out to Chen Yao: "Chen Yao! You can release it now!!"

Chen Yao then deactivated her [Plant Manipulation] ability, and the 4 vines swiftly disappeared. She panted, and her back was drenched in sweat, while looking at Yue Zhong, her heart filled with worry and fear.

If Yue Zhong had been killed by that Type 2 Leopard Cat earlier, the entire group would have lost their will. Chen Yao shuddered to think of her fate in such treacherous terrains.

Although Chen Yao had successfully become an Evolver, in this post-apocalyptic world, the strong were as many as the clouds. Even Yue Zhong did not dare to say he was an invincible existence, more so for herself. She did not have the confidence to even handle a single warrior of Wuyan Hong's troops. The moment she was captured, she would live a life worse than death.

After the Type 2 Leopard Cat was released from its binding, it approached Yue Zhong docilely, as it nuzzled Yue Zhong, giving an air of playfulness.

"Your speed is so fast! Let's call you Lightning then!!" Yue Zhong pulled out a Type 2 Forest Venomous Snake's nuclei and fed it to the Type 2 Leopard Cat he just tamed as he said. *1

Lightning stuck out its tongue and gobbled up the offered nuclei, before crunching it, and its huge eyes squinted comfortably, licking Yue Zhong constantly.

The flesh and blood of high-levelled Evolvers, Zombies, Mutant Beasts and even the nuclei of some Mutant Beasts were all nourishments that helped evolution for Mutant Beasts. Amongst

them, the nuclei was one of the preferred food of the Mutant Beasts, as swallowing them could help boost the evolution process.

"Let's go!!" Yue Zhong called out to the entire fleet that had stopped moving.

Under Yue Zhong's orders, the fleet that had come to a stop resumed its journey towards Nabu Town.

With Lightning's protection, there were no more attacks from any Mutant Beasts along the way. Finally, daylight shone and they reached the zombie-infested Nabu Town.

When Yue Zhong reached Nabu Town, he took out a small bottle of juice that was squeezed from the Snake Birth Fruit and gave it to Gan Tao, saying: "Gan Tao, drink this! After you consume it, you will gain a huge power!"

"Yes! Boss Yue!!" Gan Tao eyed the bottle, without hesitation, he downed the whole bottle in a single gulp. Even if Yue Zhong did not have good intentions, he would not retaliate. Furthermore, he trusted Yue Zhong deeply, because Yue Zhong had rescued him and his brothers from the depths of hell.

After Gan Tao drank the Snake Birth Fruit juice, he was soon besieged by that raging force, his entire body turning feverish, and his eyes went dark as he slumped to the floor. *2

"Squad Leader!!" Gan Tao's brothers immediately knelt down to support Gan Tao, as they looked to Yue Zhong worriedly, hoping to get an explanation.

Chapter 325: Gratitude

"He will run a fever for a day! After that, he will possess a new power. During this period, you must take good care of him!" Yue Zhong just spoke this sentence, before beckoning to Pan Jinyong.

Yue Zhong directly gave the Level 3 Skill [Forest Ranger Transformation] to him and said: "I'm handing you this skill book! Make good use of it to kill the enemies."

Pan Jinyong received the skill book, and replied excitedly: "Many thanks Boss Yue!! I will definitely kill the enemies! I won't let you down!"

Level 3 skill books were extremely rare, and if Pan Jinyong could utilize this skill book properly, he could become a strong Enhancer.

Yue Zhong was currently in a foreign land, and the number of people he could make use of was really too small. Hence, he could only give away a precious Snake Birth Fruit as well as a Level 3 skill book to these soldiers whom he had yet to know well enough. At the very least, they could start to form the basis of his establishment here, and increasing his might here was also a good thing.

Yue Zhong patted Pan Jinyong's shoulders, before taking huge strides with White Bones to the entrance of Nabu Town.

At this time, at the entrance of Nabu Town, Lightning had gathered with 100 of its companions.

As a Type 2, Lightning possessed the ability to lead the other members of the same species. These Mutant Leopard Cats were its subordinates.

Greenie and Turtle both have the same type of ability. Only Greenie was a lone warrior and did not like to gather with other of its kind, hence it was hard for to randomly summon a few fellows.

As for Turtle, while there were no low level similar members of its species, it could subdue the other Type 2 Mutant types, and control their underlings through them.

Yue Zhong patted Lightning, and pointed to the small town: "We'll have to trouble you Lightning, rid the town of all the zombies!"

Lightning nuzzled Yue Zhong for a moment, before letting out a low growl to the group of Leopard Cats.

With Lightning's command, the 100 Mutant Leopard Cats shot towards the town like arrows. As they ran, they could be seen pouncing on any zombie they came across.

These Mutant Leopard Cats were the result of a lifeform that adapted to the onset of the Apocalypse virus. Therefore, the infection from the zombies was unable to hurt these Mutant Leopard Cats. It was also the strongest advantage they had against the zombies. Many Mutant Beasts preyed on the zombies, as long as there wasn't a Z-Type controlling an entire horde, the normal zombies could only become the food for Mutant Beasts.

When the Mutant Leopard Cats charged into the town, they embarked on a slaughter. If it was in the past, after eating enough zombies, they would leave the town. However this time, under their boss Lightning's orders, these Mutant Leopard Cats slashed about without stopping, decapitating countless zombies.

Lightning also charged into the town, casually slaughtering any zombies it came across. Be it an L2, or S2, there were no zombies that could escape from its claws. In just an entire morning, the 2,000 or more zombies in Nabu Town had been totally wiped out by Lightning and its little brothers.

Yue Zhong saw Lightning elegantly walking out of Nabu Town, and gave the order to the survivors: "Enter the town! Under Chen Yao's organization, the 1,000+ survivors trickled slowly into the town.

Fan Tongxuan strolled about in Nabu Town, along the way, he saw the countless corpses of the zombies, and he felt his heart shook: "What a terrifying man! The zombies were just cleared so easily by him, he truly is amazing!"

Wuyan Tong had followed along the side of the soldiers and felt immense shock when he saw the situation of the town. At that time, when he was told to wait outside the small town, he did not escape. On one hand, as a traitor, he would not be let off by the cruel Wuyan Hong, and if he escaped to the forest, based on his abilities, he would most likely die. In fact, he harbored some hope with Yue Zhong.

What he didn't expect was that not only did Yue Zhong single-handedly take down the entire vanguard town, he even brought over a thousand survivors out with him to enter Nabu Town, and even then he still ended up annihilating the zombie horde within Nabu Town with ease. He made the decision to follow Yue Zhong.

After entering Nabu Town, the corpses of the zombies were gathered and burnt.

The different storehouses within the town were opened and obtained when Chen Yao assigned some duties to different people.

The Vietnamese survivors were all given a bowl of thick gruel, before being herded into different bungalows and kept under watch. These Vietnamese survivors were not a dependable existence, as they could revolt at any time.

After settling the accommodation of the Vietnamese survivors, the soldiers comprising of the Chinese, Blacks and Caucasians finally got a chance to rest.

When the soldiers got into their assigned rooms, they laid on the bed and fell into deep sleep straight away like pigs. They were still weak, had undergone a rough night of operations, and almost could not handle it anymore. If an expert was to sneak into the camp now, just one person was enough to assassinate these soldiers

in their sleep.

Yue Zhong had faced battle after battle as well, and was feeling exhausted. After ordering White Bones to guard the door, he laid on the bed and fell into deep slumber. He was after all not like the strange creatures from the God and Devil System, even though he possessed power now, he was still a mortal. After countless intense battles, he would feel tired all the same.

On the other side, Wuyan Hong's response had been pretty quick as well. On the morning of the 2nd day, he had deployed 2 battalions of soldiers from Tooth County to set off for the vanguard camp.

Wuyan Hong had long since gotten information on Yue Zhong's sneak attack on the vanguard team from those Vietnamese soldiers who ran. They were extremely clear that 2 battalions led by 20 members of the Wolf Fang Battalion would be more than enough to decimate Yue Zhong's force.

Hong!!

Following a huge explosion, the 2 battalions that were marching lost 2 of their men, while another 3 sustained heavy injuries.

"There are landmines!! Everyone be careful!!"

After that shout, all the soldiers became cautious, and they stopped moving. Wuyan Hong had only set up this Army of the Great Empire of Vietnam recently, and amongst them, while there were actual Vietnamese soldiers, the majority of them were normal survivors who joined in. They did not have much experience dealing with other humans, especially the unforeseeable threats such as landmines.

The 3 soldiers that were blasted with heavy injuries moaned out in agony, severely undermining the morale of the troops. In this post-apocalyptic world, it wasn't just China that lacked medical resources. Even Vietnam had its struggles as well. These casualties

would only be put out of their misery, as Wuyan Hong would not waste precious rations to take care of those soldiers that had become handicapped.

"Engineers!! Go scout for the mines!! Engineers go scout for the mines!!" A Vietnamese commander ordered out loudly with a steely expression.

A staff officer replied meekly: "Commander!! We don't have the necessary expertise and equipment!"

In fact, there were some experienced engineers and proper equipment within the Army of the Great Empire of Vietnam. However, they were all old soldiers, and were part of Wuyan Hong's personal battalion. The rest of the battalions lacked the necessary expertise, furthermore, their aim was to battle against the Mutant Beasts of the forests and zombies in towns, not facing against other humans with modern warfare.

Furthermore, in their own homeground, they didn't expect that there would be landmines at all. This was a point that they neglected.

"Damn it!! What do we do now?" The commander's expression turned ugly as he lashed out. He had thought that this operation to attack Yue Zhong's forces was going to be an easy one, and they could casually quell any resistance from them. After all, when Yue Zhong had fought his way in the vanguard town, there was no one here to protect it. Never did he imagine that they would be stopped by a single landmine.

The staff officer hesitated, as the safest method they could muster was to turn back and deploy some landmine engineers, as they help to clear the landmines, before the entire troop can proceed carefully. However, he was not sure if the suggestion would be acceptable to the commander who seemed ready to explode himself.

Another staff officer frowned and quipped in: "Why don't we find

some wild beasts to open the way for us?"

Making use of animals to set off landmines was also a common tactic. On top of that, there were other demolition methods, profession landmine-resistant vehicles, and engineers who could clear them.

The commander cursed out loud: "Fuck! Under these kind of conditions, where're you going to find beasts?"

Using animals to clear the landmines was in fact a good idea, it was just that it was a post-apocalyptic time now. Wild beasts such as cows and horses were hard to find, even if they were found, they were rare and precious sources of meat, they could not be squandered on such a mission just to clear the way.

As each staff officer chipped in with their ideas, the commander turned them all down.

In the end, the 2 battalion commanders discussed, and decided to send someone back to request aid, asking for a team of engineers to come help clear the mines.

When the team of engineers came, they immediately began demining the place. What made the commander's blood boil was that, Yue Zhong did not actually plant many land mines in a cluster, but at the same time, he had placed countless other booby traps, which severely impeded the advance of the troops.

By the time the 2 battalions arrived at the small town, night had fallen.

In the town, there were countless buildings and corpses that were blasted by rockets, before Yue Zhong left, he had even set the entire town ablaze, turning it into a ghost town. This made the 2 battalion commanders extremely furious.

As they did not know which direction Yue Zhong had led his people to, the 2 battalions could only spend the night within the town.

With the previous encounters serving as a lesson, the soldiers of the 2 battalions did not dare slack off in their duties, even at night, there were patrols to prevent the possibility of Yue Zhong launching a night raid.

As he had escaped in time, Yue Zhong could have been considered to buy precious time for his troops, and avoided being annihilated by the Army of the Great Empire of Vietnam.

Chapter 326: Evolver!

"This is what it's like to be an Evolver!! I've become an Evolver?!" After one whole day, Gan Tao had regained consciousness, and the moment he awoke, he could feel the earth-shattering change that had happened to his body. He had directly become an Agility-based Evolver from a normal human in just one day, and at the same time, he gained comprehension in a Level 3 Agility skill: [Enhance Agility].

Under the various enhancements of agility, Gan Tao already had a 30 point bonus to his base Agility attribute, even though he was only at Level 1 Enhancement, it could be seen how huge the change was.

"Captain!! You're awake!!"

"Captain, how are you? Boss Yue said you would become an Evolver. How is it, did you become one?"

"...."

Right now, in the room, it was filled with Gan Tao's subordinates and a few other Chinese survivors. They all knew that Gan Tao could possibly become an Evolver under Yue Zhong's help, and would gain a fearsome strength, therefore they had come to observe.

Gan Tao replied excitedly: "That's right!! I've become an Evolver!!"

During the post-apocalypse, Enhancers and Evolvers all possessed miraculous abilities. Their strength that surpassed normal humans was not a secret, and everyone wished to become a powerful Enhancer or Evolver.

Amongst them, the natural talent and enhancements of an Evolver far surpassed that of an Enhancer. Upon hearing that Gan Tao had become an Evolver, many present were envious and

jealous.

One of the soldiers called Xu Liangchen said: "Captain! Let's have a spar!!"

Xu Liangchen was one of the best grapplers in their defence force. In the past, Gan Tao could not overcome Xu Liangchen at all. Gan Tao's expression was full of eagerness and excitement as he replied: "Sure!!"

Under the encirclement of the audience, they quickly came to the open grounds. Many of the soldiers were attracted to this spar between Gan Tao and Xu Liangchen, and had gathered over.

"Here I come!!!" After the 2 of them had gotten in position, Xu Liangchen let out a grunt, and charged towards Gan Tao like a ferocious tiger.

"So slow!" Gan Tao looked at Xu Liangchen and a thought appeared in his mind, as he slightly manoeuvred his body and kicked out at the opponents calf. The attack caused Xu Liangchen to fall to the ground. He then casually applied his weight on Xu Liangchen's back, and locked his right shoulder. As long as he applied a little pressure, he could easily dislocate his right shoulder.

Gan Tao's actions were extremely swift, and surpassed what Xu Liangchen could follow. He had no way to react, and was easily overcome by Gan Tao. If it was in the battlefield, Xu Liangchen would have been killed just like that.

"So strong!!"

"This is an Evolver's strength? It's too powerful!!"

"....."

When the surrounding soldiers saw Gan Tao subduing Xu Liangchen with ease, their hearts were filled with excitement, adrenaline and a little envy. Since Yue Zhong possessed the means to change someone into an Evolver, they were filled with

excitement and hope that they themselves could become an Evolver as well.

"Gan Tao! Boss Yue's looking for you!!" Right at this time, the audience parted, as a soldier came running up to Gan Tao. Gan Tao forcefully kept his excitement in check as he left with the soldier.

Soon after, other than Gan Tao, Pan Jinyong and 25 other warriors who had recovered their strength quickly left Nabu Town with Yue Zhong. Led by the locals Fan Tongxuan, Wuyan Tong and 6 other Vietnamese warriors, they entered the Forest of Death.

In Nabu Town, those old soldiers were currently training up the 300 soldiers that Yue Zhong had gathered. Without strict military training and battle, the new soldiers would not amount to anything.

The rest of the Vietnamese survivors were organized by Chen Yao, and assigned to work on the hide of the Mutant Forest Venomous Snakes. After becoming workers, these Vietnamese survivors were allowed to eat their fill, and the decent treatment made them feel slightly more satisfied as they did their job diligently.

As Wuyan Hong did not have much rations, adding to the fact that most grain seeds were mutated, and the rest could not develop. Under those circumstances, the large majority of the Vietnamese survivors could only rely on gruel to survive. If they wanted to eat their fill, they had to rely on themselves.

After entering the Forest of Death, they soon encountered a rustling within the tall grasses, as a few Mutant Jungle Lizards jumped out and charged at Yue Zhong's group.

The number wasn't considered high, there were only 7 of them, but every single one of them was vicious, and their speed quite fast.

"Gan Tao! Pan Jinyong! Take care of them!" Yue Zhong looked at

those 7 Mutant Jungle Lizards, and gave a command to Gan Tao and Pan Jinyong.

By this time, Gan Tao was decked out in a God and Devil System protective covering that Yue Zhong had retrieved from the corpse of Da Yang. With these clothes his speed reached 40 points, becoming faster than the average human by 3-4 times. He held the Black Tooth blade that Yue Zhong lent him, as he shot forward like an arrow, and swung the blade down on the body of one of the Mutant Jungle Lizards.

The sharp 2m-long blade easily dissected the Mutant Jungle Lizard in two, and with that one-hit kill, Gan Tao gained a huge orb of experience, instantly achieving Level 3.

Gan Tao excitedly swung the blade back and turned into a flash as he went for another Mutant Jungle Lizard, reaching Level 7.

On the other side, Pan Jinyong had transformed into a Forest Ranger. His hands wield a Dark Magic Blade as he engaged the Mutant Jungle Lizards in close combat. After transformation, his senses were enhanced and his stats increased, he swiftly took care of the 2 Mutant Jungle Lizards, also becoming Level 7 with only a moments work.

White Bones raised its hands, as 3 bone blades shot out from its arm, tearing into the limbs of the remaining 3 Mutant Jungle Lizards.

With Yue Zhong's instructions, 3 of the normal soldiers wielding chopping wood knives stepped up and expended some energy to kill the 3 Mutant Jungle Lizards, and also gained some enhancements. However, as it wasn't by their own singular efforts, the EXP was split and they only managed to gain 1 level each. They could not compare to Gan Tao and Pan Jinyong who had reached Level 7 in one shot.

Yue Zhong led this small platoon of soldiers as they patrolled about the edge of the Forest, hunting down all sorts of Mutant

Beasts, pushing them to become stronger and raising their overall strength.

As the Forest of Death had too many huge Mutant Beasts within its depths, Yue Zhong did not dare venture in too far. Every single Type 2 Mutant Beast was a terrifying existence, and if he wasn't careful, he could cause this small platoon to be wiped out.

Yue Zhong led this team of warriors and fought continuously within the Forest of Death for a grueling 7 days. After 7 days of constant battles, the 31-member team lost 2 of their members. As for the rest, they had risen to above Level 10, and gained some measure of strength.

The ones who experienced the most growth were the Evolver Gan Tao and Pan Jinyong who possessed the [Forest Ranger Transformation] skill. Gan Tao had risen to Level 26, while Pan Jinyong had become a Level 21 Enhancer.

After becoming an Agility-based Evolver, Gan Tao possessed more potential than the rest. Furthermore, with the equipment Yue Zhong prepared for him, slaughtering ordinary Mutant Beasts was easy for him. In addition, Gan Tao was from the military, and had received proper military training, and hence he wasn't weak in the first place.

That was why he could grow so fast. Evolvers grew faster than ordinary Enhancers amidst battles. After raising this team of experts, Yue Zhong could be considered to have an additional trump card.

A force consisting of 29 warriors of above Level 10 was not to be underestimated. Of course, when compared to Yue Zhong's own Special Combat Force or Wuyan Hong's Wolf Fang Battalion, they were still far off.

Amongst the team, those who could contend with the Wolf Fang Battalion would at most be the Agility-based Evolver Gan Tao, the [Forest Ranger Transformation]-possessing Pan Jinyong, and Chen

Yao with her [Plant Manipulation].

After 7 days, Yue Zhong led this small team out of the Forest of Death. In order to quickly raise the strength of all of them, they had to venture deeper into the Forest of Death, where the more ferocious beasts reside. In that place, even Yue Zhong had no confidence of protecting everyone. After all, a Type 2 Mutant Beast was no joke, and they didn't possess enough heavy firepower.

The moment they exited the Forest and reentered Nabu Town, Gan Tao and the rest fell straight asleep when they reached their beds. While the 7 days of intensive training had strengthened them a lot, it was extremely exhausting for both body and mind.

"Was there any activity from Wuyan Hong's side?" When Yue Zhong went back, the first thing he did was to find Chen Yao to clarify on matters.

Wuyan Hong and his troops were considered Yue Zhong's primary concern right now, as the power they held was too strong. If they were not careful, Yue Zhong and his team might be wiped out easily.

Chen Yao's brows lifted slightly, as she swiftly replied: "Wuyan Hong's troops don't seem to be making any moves towards us at this moment. The 2 battalions that he had stationed at the vanguard town have already retreated back towards Tooth County."

Intel was perhaps the most important aspect for any power. When Yue Zhong had left to train the small team, Chen Yao had immediately selected 4 soldiers to survey at the frontlines. That was how she obtained this precious information.

Those soldiers were also fighters, and possessed a little skill, even if they met some low level Mutant Beasts, if they could not defeat them, they could at least escape. Those with a little bit of survival skills would be considered stronger than normal humans. With this in mind, Chen Yao had selected 4 such soldiers to conduct

reconnaissance.

Yue Zhong pondered a while, as his brows furrowed: "Wuyan Hong must be up to something big!!"

After destroying an entire battalion, and having stolen a thousand plus people, as well as goods, if Wuyan Hong could even tolerate this, there must be something else that required his attention, that was why he had to recall his troops to protect Tooth County.

Chapter 327: Making Necessary Arrangements!

Yue Zhong conducted a series of arrangements after that. He deployed Gan Tao and Pan Jinyong to lead small teams of non-Vietnamese soldiers to sweep towards the direction of Guangxi, clearing the zombies that they came across. On one hand, they were to search for survivors and resources, on the other hand, they could train to become strong.

Currently, this small team under Yue Zhong could handle their own against any one battalion of Wuyan Hong's. Although they wouldn't be defeated, the gap between the prowess of the two sides was still large. Yue Zhong had to make use of killing zombies to strengthen this team, only through constant battle, would the team grow to become indispensable and independent.

What Yue Zhong lacked most was time. The immense pressure made it hard for him to focus on establishing his roots and training the troops properly. After all, this was Vietnam, he had little to lose here, and had not much capital. If he wasn't careful, he could be easily annihilated by Wuyan Hong.

Under the combined efforts of the Vietnamese survivors, pieces of protective covering made from the hides of the Mutant Forest Venomous Snakes were produced, and worn by the soldiers. The aesthetics was not much, but to these soldiers, these hide coverings were essential to their survival, and no one gave a hoot about the look of the hides.

When the protective hides finished production, Chen Yao gathered the Vietnamese survivors and assigned work for defences and constructions to be carried out. Under the supervision of the soldiers, outposts and secret places of firepower started to take form.

Yue Zhong wasn't too sure himself if these constructions were

going to be handy, but what else could they do to keep from letting the Vietnamese survivors idle around and give birth to dangerous thoughts? He chose to play it safe, to prevent any chaos from happening. Therefore, he chose to make use of them to construct defences.

After he passed on some crucial objectives of development for Chen Yao to handle, Yue Zhong made White Bones stay on to protect Chen Yao, while he left towards Tooth County on his own. He had to create some hindrance to Wuyan Hong's plans.

"The inspection is pretty strict, seems like it's going to be hard to sneak in!!" Yue Zhong quickly came to a hilltop near Tooth County as he observed the ongoings of the town, his brows furrowing.

Currently, at the entrance of Tooth County, there were 16 soldiers stationed. They were checking every person and vehicle that was entering the town. Near the county itself, there were a few ponds, forests, marshes and areas where wild vegetables grew abundantly. As well, worms and aquatic life thrived there. As long as one wasn't afraid of being eaten by a Mutant Beast, it was possible to obtain huge amounts of food in those places.

However, there were many smart people around. Some Enhancers who could directly make use of their strength would organize a party of normal survivors to go pick the wild vegetables and fish, while they were in charge of facing any arriving Mutant Beasts. This was how countless hunting groups were formed.

Just as Yue Zhong was pondering on how to enter Tooth County, he noticed a fleet of armored vehicles exiting from Tooth County, moving towards the direction of the main road into the distance.

"There's some activity!" Yue Zhong's eyes brightened, as he leapt onto Lightning's back, pointing to the fleet of vehicles and spoke lightly: "Follow them!"

Upon receiving Yue Zhong's orders, Lightning swiftly made its way towards the forest, with Yue Zhong on its back. They were

closely followed by a pack of over 100 Mutant Leopard Cat underlings.

The large fleet soon came to a camp.

In front of the camp, there was a small town, and at the moment, there were gunshots ringing from within the town. At the same time, there were various artillery pointed towards the small town, raining terror on the buildings, causing them to be blasted.

The entire town was engulfed in dancing flames, yet the residents of the town did not seem to be giving up, instead, they were retaliating with even more ferocity. The gunfire only ceased temporarily when the artillery was raining their rounds, the moment the artillery stopped, the gunfire resumed.

The battle within the town was obviously brutal, and the battalion that had just arrived as reinforcements were quickly caught up in the fight. The countless soldiers made their way towards the town in a disorganized fashion.

"Good chance! Do it! Lightning, go kill those artillery soldiers!" Yue Zhong saw the battalion of soldiers being deployed to enter the fray, and he quickly gave an order to lightning, before taking up his .05 submachine gun and charged towards the battalion of soldiers.

Lightning let out a low growl, and shot towards the artillery squad like a bolt from the heavens.

These artillery soldiers were the most wretched, because of them, the other party had to struggle very hard. Without the support of the artillery, then the Vietnamese soldiers in the town would have to pay a price 10 times their current losses to achieve the current state of battle.

Lightning's speed was way above Yue Zhong even after he had activated his [Shadow Steps], to the point of unbelievable. The 500m distance was near instantly covered by its movements in a

matter of 2-3 seconds.

*2

Before the artillery squad even had the chance to react, Lightning had already leapt into their midst and lashed out every which way, knocking soldiers to the ground and biting the ones with now exposed throats.

Seeing that there was a Type 2 Mutant Beast amongst them, the Vietnamese soldiers promptly fell into chaos, as they struggled to take out their weapons and start firing.

Sadly for them, Lightning's burst speed was absolutely too terrifying. It spared no effort as its claws swished left and right, easily slashing the throats of the closest soldiers. Many soldiers fell within these first few seconds.

The rest of the Mutant Leopard Cats had also now pounced forward, charging towards the camp in attack! While their speed could not compare with Lightning's, it was more than enough to spell certain death for the normal soldiers.

Within the camp, other than the commanding officers, there were 2 platoons, a squadron and some soldiers in charge of the back-end support for the Vietnamese army.

When the Vietnamese camp came under attack, the 2 platoons of soldiers swiftly picked up their weapons. They charged into the fray while relying on cover. Every step of the way they were firing at Yue Zhong and the huge group of Mutant Leopard Cats.

Yue Zhong continuously dodged about and attacked as was his wont in battle. Each leap avoided incoming bullets, while he lobbed grenades into the midst of the soldier groups as he passed.

Hong! Hong! *3

The sounds of explosions rang out, as many soldiers were blasted and sent flying. With his countless battles, he had found plenty of use for the hand grenades.

Some of the Mutant Leopard Cats started suffering some wounds amidst the 2 attacking platoons of soldiers, and there were a few casualties already.

Near the command centre, there were 2 12.7mm heavy machine guns, firing rapidly and causing mass destruction. Under the heavy barrage of firepower, 6 Mutant Leopard Cats were quickly shredded, and 3 others suffered broken vertebrae and lost their combat ability.

Just as the 2 heavy machine guns had begun exhibiting their prowess, Yue Zhong appeared from the side! He quickly hoisted a rocket launcher and fired a missile at one of the machine guns.

With a flash, the Vietnamese soldier behind the heavy machine gun was blasted to death.

After destroying the heavy machine gun, Yue Zhong waved his hand, and a grenade flew over towards the other heavy machine gunner, causing him to face a similar fate, dying together with the exploding machine gun.

When the 2 machine guns were destroyed, and the pressure of the 2 heavy machine guns was gone, the Mutant Leopard Cats could once again unleash their fury! They suddenly frenzied and engaged in a mad slaughter amongst the soldiers.

Facing the ferocious attacks of the Mutant Leopard Cats, the Vietnamese soldiers finally lost their morale and started to abandon their posts, as they tried escaping in various directions. They were after all not troops that had gone through many battles, and many of them were still considered normal people. They had only received training for 2 months, and not being able to withstand the attacks of the Mutant Beasts was extremely normal.

Yue Zhong ignored the Mutant Leopard Cats slaughtering the Vietnamese soldiers, his own gaze a chilling cold, as he rushed towards the command centre.

30 Vietnamese soldiers quickly rushed out from the command centre, 9 of them decked in strange attire. They were either wielding longbows, or huge maces, some were even holding large steel shields, their aura very different from the normal soldiers.

The 9 of them were experts from the Wolf Fang Battalion, and were specially in charge of protecting the commanders from being killed in any attempts on their lives.

The moment the 9 experts appeared, Yue Zhong pulled out his strongest weapon, the PF98! Without hesitation he immediately aimed at one of the warriors holding a scepter and fired immediately.

With a flash, the rocket landed and exploded on the warriors from the Wolf Fang Battalion, bursting into raging flames! Before that poor guy even got to do anything, he was killed in one shot by Yue Zhong, the scepter in his hands also dropping to the ground.

"Shit!!!!!" A huge man bellowed out in rage. Towering at 2m, his hands carrying a huge steel shield that likely weighed a ton, he charged at Yue Zhong like a typical Tanker.

4 other Agility-based Enhancers also activated their various abilities while running to the sides. They intended to surround him as they started firing their weapons wildly.

One of the Enhancers activated his [Forest Ranger Transformation], retrieving the long bow on his back, before firing an arrow at Yue Zhong. Even though they weren't in a forest right now, his power was still terrifying even though it wasn't at the max potential.

A second Enhancer slapped his hands to the ground, activating his [Earth Manipulation] skill, as sharp spikes exploded out from the ground, aimed at Yue Zhong.

Another Enhancer had huge fireballs conjured in both his hands, as he combined them into one and condensed it into a spear. He

threw out with his might, as the spear shot towards Yue Zhong swiftly. *1

Although Yue Zhong had killed one of their comrades, these 8 experts of above Level 30, were absolutely capable of killing a normal Level 50 Enhancer through their teamwork.

Chapter 328: Genuine Ability!

Yue Zhong activated his [Shadow Steps], his body flashing out of sight. As he dodged the freshly incoming bullets, he zigzagged, evading the numerous Earth Spikes on the ground. Expertly multitasking, the blade in his hand danced simultaneously, and slashed at the oncoming Ranger arrow.

HONG!

The destruction of the arrow caused a tremendous repulsive force to explode outwards, sending him 6 - 7 metres back from the point of impact. Thankfully at the same time, the huge bone arrow was also destroyed by him.

Since Yue Zhong was in the air when the flame spear had flown out in attack, it hit him just as he landed. The blazing spear keenly pierced Yue Zhong in the upper right part of his abdomen, before combusting, and engulfing Yue Zhong entirely in flames.

This explodable flame spear was the true killing move of this small Wolf Fang Battalion team. No one could withstand the flames that could burn everything.

"Is he dead?" The foremost Agility-based Enhancer threw his spent gun away, as he took out a dagger, looking at Yue Zhong consumed by flames and his heart relaxed a little.

The rest of the team also relaxed. Regardless of the expert, facing this team of 9 who worked extremely well together, they had that confidence that the enemy would fall.

With a peng, the front most Agility-based Enhancer had his brains shot out, as his headless corpse fell back onto the ground.

All their eyes turned to the ball of flame, only to see that within the flames, there was an even more fearsome red-hot fire consuming the flames conjured by that Enhancer.

The Enhancer with the [Fire Manipulation] ability saw his own

fire being consumed, his eyes filled with shock: "How is that possible? My fire was actually consumed by him. Is he also a [Fire Manipulation] expert?"

Yue Zhong's body was wrapped entirely in a thin sheet of the fearsome Devil Flame! He walked forward, his gaze cold, looking akin to the Devil himself.

He pointed towards the Enhancer with the [Forest Ranger Transformation] skill and the other Enhancer with the [Earth Manipulation] skill. 2 Devil Flame spears shot out explosively, penetrating their heads in an instant. After the impact, the combustion of the flames enveloped their brains and turned them into ash.

Seeing that Yue Zhong had killed 3 of their elites within a matter of seconds, the remaining 5 Wolf Fang Battalion warriors felt a shudder in their hearts, as their fear of Yue Zhong mounted.

The 2m-tall man, who was the leader, shouted out crazily: "Kill him!! If we don't, we'll die!!"

Before he even finished speaking, Lightning pounced noiselessly, landing on his back and bit off his head in one mouthful! The huge man fell lifelessly to the floor, his headless corpse leaking a fresh, brilliantly crimson puddle from the ragged stump.

When their leader died, the remaining 4 members all lost their will to fight, and they started escaping towards the other directions. As for the important commanders they were supposed to protect, they were left behind.

Yue Zhong looked at the Enhancer with the [Flame Manipulation] skill, as he raised his Stinger and aimed coldly at him.

"Don't kill me!! I surrender!! I surrender!!" The Enhancer felt his heart turn cold, as he immediately knelt on the floor and pleaded profusely.

Yue Zhong shot 2 of the escaping Wolf Fang Battalion members, before coldly gazing at the Enhancer with the [Flame Manipulation] skill: "Can you speak Chinese? If not you can go and die!"

*₁

Although Yue Zhong did not understand Vietnamese, the physical act of kneeling and raising hands was universal for surrender. That was why he spared the Enhancer at first.

Wei Ningguo kneeled and spoke out in haste: "Yes!! Yes!! I can speak in Chinese!! My name is Wei Ningguo!! I am of Chinese-Vietnamese blood, 3/4 Chinese infact. Please don't kill me!!"

Wei Ningguo was truly a mixed blood of Chinese and Vietnamese descent. Prior to the apocalypse, he was a small time businessman working on the borders of China and Vietnam. He was extremely glib and well-versed with going with the flow in life. When he had to work for Wuyan Hong, he was a simple Vietnamese, now facing Yue Zhong, he was suddenly a mixed-blood with 3/4 Chinese ancestry.

"Follow me!!" Yue Zhong gazed at him coldly, before taking out a .05 submachine gun, and charged towards the direction of the Vietnamese commanders.

Thoughts raced in Wei Ningguo's mind, as he looked towards the corpse of the leader who had been beheaded by Lightning in one bite, and his heart trembled, before throwing out all the useless thoughts, and he followed Yue Zhong closely.

The commanders were mostly normal people, with a few being low-level Enhancers. Their escaping speed could not possibly match against Yue Zhong's pursuit, and soon Yue Zhong caught up with them.

Yue Zhong did not waste time talking with the commanders, and directly used his .05 machine gun and sprayed wildly, killing them

all as they fell into pools of their own blood.

Wei Ningguo saw how Yue Zhong killed those 20 commanders without batting an eyelid, and his heart turned cold.

After killing those 20 commanders, within the entire camp, there were only the Mutant Leopard Cats which were devouring the spoils of war.

Yue Zhong brought Wei Ningguo as they walked around the command centre, only to discover a small walkie-talkie crackling with an urgent voice.

Yue Zhong looked at the walkie-talkie and asked Wei Ningguo: "What are they saying?"

Wei Ningguo carefully reported: "Sir, they are from the 7th Battalion. They are currently asking if there're any problems with headquarters."

Yue Zhong coldly ordered: "Very good!! Tell them now. There are 3 battalions with unknown equipment currently attacking headquarters, let them all retreat and protect the command centre. Otherwise, their retreat will be cut off by these unknown forces!!"

Wei Ningguo's heart trembled, without any hesitation, he replied: "Yes!"

After which, Wei Ningguo quickly proceeded to use Vietnamese and spoke frenzily into the walkie-talkie, ordering for the retreat of the 7th Battalion, which was currently attacking the small town.

The 7th Battalion had heard the sounds of gunfire and explosions from the command centre, now hearing Wei Ningguo's explanation and order, they had no more doubts. They quickly pulled back from the small town, and retreated in a frenzy towards the camp, in order to protect their way back.

In this small town, Wuyan Hong had deployed a total of 3 battalions of power. The 7th Battalion was the aid sent as reinforcements, the moment they pulled back, the other 2

battalions were thrown into chaos, as they panicked and demanded the reason for withdrawal.

When they heard that their retreat might possibly be cut off, the remaining troops of the 2 battalions immediately abandoned their positions and started withdrawing. Enemy troops cutting off possible retreats was a nightmare for strategies, the moment they could not retreat, then the 3 unknown battalions could easily wipe out everyone here.

The 3 battalions that Wuyan Hong had deployed were the 7th Battalion, 9th Battalion and 5th Battalion. The 9th Battalion had the most number of new recruits. This time, the attack on the town was for the 5th Battalion to guide the 9th Battalion, raising their combat prowess.

This sudden retreat caused a multitude of problems. As the 9th battalion soldiers had only received training for a short while, fighting a winning battle was not a problem, but a sudden withdrawal was almost like a collapse of fighting will. A large number of them threw away their equipment and started making a run for the exit of the town.

When the Vietnamese soldiers were trying their best to escape, the leader in the small town saw his chance, and immediately organized 2 platoons of elite soldiers to start their counter attack on the Vietnamese soldiers.

As the main fighting force, the 5th Battalion was starting to become exhausted, and when they faced the rash actions of the 9th Battalion, they themselves could not tolerate it and started to run themselves. In the end, their retreat was chaotic and lacked all sense of order, as a number of soldiers were killed in their attempt to escape.

The remaining soldiers of the 7th Battalion, 9th battalion and 5th Battalion abandoned the armored vehicles and ran out of the small town.

Just as they had made their way out, Yue Zhong had already summoned White Bones from far away, as he himself activated [Shadow Steps], and brought Lightning and a 100+ Mutant Leopard Cats charging towards the 7th Battalion.

When Yue Zhong charged into the midst of the 7th Battalion with his hands wielding his .05 machine gun, he activated his [Art of Fear], casting it in a wide radius while firing wildly, and the huge Spirit attack blanketed the entire area without restraint.

If it was within an area of proper construction, the 3 battalions could easily defend against the attacks of over 100 Mutant Leopard Cats, but as they were currently in the midst of escaping, and were suddenly assaulted by these ferocious Mutant Beasts as well as Yue Zhong, they were soon overcome. Many of them suffered heavy injuries, and the entire 7th Battalion was turned into a blubbering mess, with their body count mounting. The remaining 9th and 5th Battalion also escaped in various directions.

The Mutant Leopard Cats possessed insane speed, and the retreat of the soldiers could not hope to compare with them, as every second there were soldiers with their throats ripped out by the Mutant Beasts.

Lightning exhibited even more of its unworldly speed, continuously flashing about, and soldiers would find their comrades being beheaded by a slash, after a mere 10 seconds, 15 soldiers had already lost their lives. Lightning's slaughter of the soldiers was at a terrifying speed compared to Yue Zhong.

The moment the soldiers of the 7th Battalion collapsed, their remaining soldiers were slaughtered by the Mutant Beasts. After an intense battle of not even 2 hours, the 3 battalions were wiped out entirely by the one hundred+ Mutant Leopard Cats. A few fortunate survivors escaped to the forests, surviving the attacks of the Mutant Leopard Cats.

Wei Ningguo had been following by Yue Zhong's side, and upon

witnessing the utter annihilation of the 900-strong army at the hands of these 100 something Mutant Leopard Cats, he was filled with a renewed fear of Yue Zhong: "What is this man!! Too scary!! How can he command such terrifying Mutant Beasts?"

Chapter 329: Eliminate the Remaining Troops!

Yue Zhong led the group of Mutant Leopard Cats and engaged in a thorough slaughter of the 3 battalions, before he met with a representative from the town.

The middle-aged man walked out from the town, and eyed the more than 100 Mutant Leopard Cats behind Yue Zhong. His tone was extremely respectful as he said: "How do you do sir! I am Zhang Weiyang! Thank you for lending a hand! May I ask how should I address you?"

"Vietnamese?" Hearing Zhang Weiyang's Vietnamese, Yue Zhong frowned, and his face turned cold. He felt a little disappointed as well. In this region, the Vietnamese didn't look at the Chinese kindly just like their were similar Chinese provinces. Lastly, these Vietnamese that he saved might not be anybody good as well. He felt a little upset, and was starting to consider if he should kill all the survivors within the town cleanly to prevent a pointless hate war in advance.

In these antagonistic parts, it was hard to convince the Vietnamese to accept Yue Zhong as a leader. He didn't dare to trust them too much as well. Since this was the case, he would consider killing them, rather than allowing them to be absorbed as part of Wuyan Hong's forces. After all, with every increase in strength of Wuyan Hong, it would spell additional trouble for Yue Zhong.

Zhang Weiyang heard Yue Zhong's Chinese and immediately replied in fluent Chinese: "No!! No!! We're Chinese!! We're from the Chinese Association!!"

Yue Zhong then relaxed before replying: "I'm Yue Zhong! Is Zheng Qiang present? If he is, let him speak to me!"

"Yes!! Yes!! He's here!! I'll bring him here now!" Zhang Weiyang

then heaved a sigh of relief, as long as there was someone familiar to handle things, it would become easier. He was after all an astute person, and he could detect the rising killing intent from Yue Zhong when he had spoke in Vietnamese.

Zheng Qiang walked out of the town quickly soon after, his entire body covered in ash, his eyes bloodshot, and his expression one of exhaustion. The moment he saw Yue Zhong, he became excited: "Yue Zhong!! It really is you!! Much thanks for your help!! If it wasn't for you, I'm afraid the Chinese Association would have been wiped out this time!"

Zheng Qiang then caught sight of the 100 something Mutant Leopard Cats and Lightning behind Yue Zhong. His eyes flashed with passion: "Are you controlling these Mutant Beasts? Holy shit, you're amazing! How did you do it? Can you teach me?"

In this part of Vietnam, there were forests, swamps, marshes, and the number of Mutant Beasts running around rampant was truly terrifying. If one could learn how to tame and control Mutant Beasts, although it would be hard to claim to that they could subdue the world, one could still have some capital and trump cards.

Yue Zhong chuckled, before gesturing to Lightning.

Lightning let out a snarl, before it quickly disappeared into the forest. Its little brothers also followed suit.

"That I can't do!" Yue Zhong directly rejected, and as he looked at the equipment left behind by the 3 Vietnamese battalions, said to Zheng Qiang: "These equipment are mine!! Can you get someone to collect them for me? Wei Ningguo, stay here and look after this!"

Wei Ningguo replied with utmost reverence: "Yes Sir!!"

Zheng Qiang blinked as his gaze turned different before speaking softly: "Yue Zhong!! This isn't too good right? We had fought quite hard within the town, and a number of our brothers have died.

This equipment, we do deserve to share some don't you think? What's more, what are you going to do with all this equipment on your own? You can't take them away anyway!"

There were after all armaments and more left behind by 3 entire battalions! There were even a few heavy artillery. These equipment and weapons were enough to make anybody's eyes go red in these post-apocalyptic times. Yue Zhong just opened his mouth to lay claim on these items, and it didn't sit too well with Zheng Qiang.

Yue Zhong's expression immediately frosted over and his tone became overbearingly cold: "Zheng Qiang! Your words are wrong! If it wasn't for my efforts to save you guys, your Chinese Association may only have had a few experts left this time. In fact, you might not even be alive to try and negotiate with me. Don't tell me that the price for saving all your lives is worth less than these 3 battalions' worth of equipment?"

If he had saved a white wolf, Yue Zhong wouldn't mind using his own knife to kill it if it had no conscience. These 3 battalions' worth of equipment could not be given away freely. With this equipment, as long as Yue Zhong found enough survivors, he could start equipping them to enlist into his force. Without equipment, even if he did find people, he could only treat them as cannon fodder.

Hearing Yue Zhong's stern lecture, Zheng Qiang's face turned ugly, he was not someone who forgot the gratitude of being saved. However, the importance of the equipment was too huge, if the Chinese Association could get their hands on these equipments, it would greatly bolster their fighting strength.

In the end, he managed to suppress his greed as he replied in a heavy voice: "Yue Zhong, the Chinese Association people are not ungrateful. This equipment belongs to you, I will get someone to help you gather them!!"

Although they could not get the equipment, if they could receive the support of Yue Zhong who could control Mutant Beasts, it wasn't too bad of a deal to the Chinese Association.

Yue Zhong then revealed a smile: "Good! You're a friend worth having! I won't let you guys get the short end of the stick though. I can give you guys a platoon's worth of equipment. Out of the artillery platforms, I can gift you 2 of them, with 20 shells. If you guys can offer me reasonable prices, I don't mind selling more to you guys, but the maximum is a battalion's worth!"

Zheng Qiang's eyes lit up in excitement: "Like this?! Thanks!! Yue Zhong, really, thank you so much! Come with me and have a sit in the town! Our president and the committee would like to meet you."

The Chinese Association was really lacking in weapons and equipment. Many of the warriors were still using primitive weapons like knives, watermelon knives, butcher knives, long spears, etc. If it wasn't for the fact that they lacked weapons, they wouldn't have been forced to a corner by Wuyan Hong's forces, almost to the point of collapse. The single platoon worth of equipment was really precious to them.

Yue Zhong smiled and said: "I too, would like to meet the heroes of the Chinese Association!"

A few Chinese survivors walked out from the town, and they started to gather the equipment of the Vietnamese soldiers, before packing them together under orders.

Wei Ningguo became Yue Zhong's representative to oversee these Chinese survivors.

In that small town, within an office, a middle-aged man with a refined temperament, his looks imposing and dashing, bowed towards Yue Zhong, and he spoke with sincerity: "How do you do! Yue Zhong, I am Shu Wenyan, the president of the Chinese Association! I'll take it upon my humble self to thank you on behalf

of the 1,300 Chinese people within our Association.

Thank you for lending us a hand in our dire times of need! If it wasn't for you, I'm afraid every single one of our Chinese people here would end up under the whip of Wuyan Hong, that beast!"

The Chinese Association had no shortage of experts, there were even 2 Evolvers amongst them, but they lacked heavy weaponry. They had limited ammunition as well, and many soldiers could only rely on handguns or melee weapons to fend off the enemy attacks. This caused them to suffer greatly.

When the 3 battalions of soldiers under Wuyan Hong had pressed in, although the Chinese Association managed to kill a large number of their enemies, they themselves were facing a mounting number of casualties. If Yue Zhong had not provided aid at that time, the Chinese Association would have likely fallen. Even though they had 2 Evolvers above Level 40, it wouldn't change a thing.

If Yue Zhong had not enlisted the help of Lightning and its little brothers, it wouldn't have been so easy to decimate 3 entire battalions.

Yue Zhong looked at Shu Wenyan and smiled: "No problem!! If we Chinese want to live on here, we need to stay united. It was something I should have done anyway!"

The fact that Shu Wenyan could pull together a small faction like this in Vietnam, it could be seen that he was capable as well. Regardless of his motive, at least he had ensured the dignity and lives of 1,300-over people. With regards to him, Yue Zhong had a favourable impression.

Shu Wenyan looked at Yue Zhong, before his eyes flashed and he laid out an attractive proposal: "Yue Zhong, are you willing to join our Chinese Association? As long as you join, I'm willing to let you be the vice-president!"

"President!! No!! How can we let him be the vice-president?!"

"No way!! President! That's too important a position! Let him be an elder!!"

"....."

With a single sentence from Shu Wenyan, the entire office went into an uproar, and resisted loudly. The Chinese Association only had 2 vice-presidents, both of them having contributed a lot to the cause, and their strength earning them respect. At the same time, the vice-president possess quite the amount of authority, even elders would have to obey. It could be said that their position was under one, but above many. Seeing that this position was to be given to someone they barely knew, it was unacceptable to them.

"Quiet!" Shu Wenyan frowned as he called out in a deep voice, he truly had the prestige, with just a single word, all the upper echelons quietened down, although dissatisfaction could still be seen in their eyes.

Shu Wenyan looked to the 2 vice-presidents beside him: "Xingchun, Tiger, what are your thoughts?"

The Chinese Association had a president and 2 vice-presidents. The president was Shu Wenyan and the 2 vice-presidents Wang Xingchun and Tiger Chu! Amongst them, Shu Wenyan and Wang Xingchun were Evolvers, and possess great might. Tiger Chu was also an Evolver of above Level 40, with countless battles and experience under his belt. He had helped the Chinese Association on many occasions, thus earning merit and rising through the ranks. Shu Wenyan could not ignore their views and just offer the position to Yue Zhong straight away.

Wang Xingchun was a skinny, tanned-looking middle-aged man, his appearance a little wretched. He pondered a while, before softly speaking: "I'm for Yue Zhong becoming a vice-president!!"

Shu Wenyan's gaze then turned to Tiger Chu, a stout and

muscular man, with a face full of scars.

Chapter 330: The Chinese Association

Tiger Chu lifted his head and looked at Yue Zhong, as he nodded and said: "I also approve of Yue Zhong to be a vice-president!"

When the president and even the vice-presidents have agreed for Yue Zhong to be a vice-president, the elders could only shut up and look at Yue Zhong with envy.

"I'm sorry! I don't wish to join the Chinese Association. Let's just remain as allies!" Right at this moment, Yue Zhong smiled and declined.

If Yue Zhong was to join the Chinese Association, then the 3 battalions of equipment would be handed over to the Chinese Association without any conditions. Furthermore, he did not have enough prestige within the Chinese Association, and no subordinates. If he wanted to gain some actual power and authority, it would be an uphill task.

If Yue Zhong wanted to control the Chinese Association, he needed to ensure that he first captured the hearts of Shu Wenyan, Tiger Chu, and Wang Xingchun. To him, this was too troublesome. He would rather remain an ally, that way his position was more carefree, and he could do as he pleased.

Zheng Qiang had a look of shock, as he spoke hastily: "Yue Zhong, aren't you going to consider? It is the position of vice-president after all!!"

Zheng Qiang and Yue Zhong's relationship wasn't too bad, and he wished for Yue Zhong to join the Chinese Association very much. With his strength, joining the Chinese Association would help to bring up the strength of the Chinese Association.

In this parts of Vietnam, the Chinese Association was considered the biggest faction of Chinese.

By joining them, there was a stronger chance of resistance

against Wuyan Hong.

Shu Wenyan's sharp eyebrows raised, as he spoke directly: "Yue Zhong, do you have any burden? We are after all good brothers here! As long as you join us, I believe we will be able to get along well."

Yue Zhong shook his head and insisted: "I'm sorry. I'm really not interested in joining. Let's just discuss on the issue with the equipment. I'm willing to sell 3 platoons' worth of equipment. President Shu, what will you guys be willing to offer for it?"

Shu Wenyan broke out into a warm grin and said: "Yue Zhong, just call me Wenyan. You're someone worth befriending, even if you don't want to join us, you're still a good friend of ours! We will never forget the kindness that you've shown by saving our lives today."

Shu Wenyan's words made Yue Zhong extremely comfortable, and instantly caused the friendship to be closer. He could naturally be such an outstanding leader not just because of his strength but also with his eloquence.

Shu Wenyan thought for a while, before lifting his head and asked Yue Zhong softly: "Our Chinese Association does in fact need the batch of equipment, dare I ask your conditions to sell those items to us?"

"First, I would like the intel that the Chinese Association has. Including those of Wuyan Hong and the other Chinese factions, their leaders as well as locations."

"Second, I would need to borrow 100 soldiers for a battle, I will require them for a month. Zheng Qiang is extremely familiar with the areas around here, I hope to borrow him for a month as well.

"Third, prepare 200 tonnes of rations for me to use anytime."

"Fourth, allow my subordinates to borrow the territory of the Chinese Association to rest."

Shu Wenyan thought for a while, before he nodded and agreed: "Fine! I'll promise you"

The full battalion's worth of equipment was too important to the Chinese Association compared to a single platoon, that was why Shu Wenyan agreed to the terms.

Yue Zhong grinned at Shu Wenyan: "Much thanks President Shu!!"

Shu Wenyan wore an amiable smile as he replied: "It isn't safe here anymore! Let's move! After a night's rest, I'll hand those soldiers over to you."

"Sure!"

Yue Zhong wasn't worried that Shu Wenyan was going to go back on his word, after all Shu Wenyan possessed more power than Yue Zhong now, if he really wanted to swallow the equipment, Yue Zhong wouldn't have a choice. However, if things really got to that state, Yue Zhong wouldn't mind giving them something harsh to remember.

Shu Wenyan then started introducing the rest of the upper brass of the Chinese Association: "Yue Zhong! Let me introduce this bunch of good brothers. This is vice-president Wang Xingchun brother Wang and this is vice-president Tiger Chu, brother Chu....."

The Chinese Association had a strong sense of brotherhood and valued loyalty. The top brass was made up of a president, 2 vice-presidents and 14 elders. They made up the majority of the authority, and were the top figures amongst the Chinese Association. Under the elders, the rest were members, and they formed the rest of the Chinese Association.

Amongst the 14 elders, there were 2 female elders, 12 male elders. Of the 2 female elders, 1 was called Zhang Yu, her looks ordinary, with some 6 or 7 knife scars, her eyes radiating a ruthless gleam.

The other was Shu Tianya, with a full head of thick black hair, her features defined and her demeanor uncommon. She was strikingly beautiful and had a good figure. This beauty was also precisely Shu Wenyan's sister.

The other 12 male elders were Zheng Qiang, Feng Qingtian, Zhang Mu, Hu Yan, Liu Ming, Niu Wei, Zhang Shuwen, Sun Tie, Luo Ming, Luo Tu, Chen San, Liu Niujin.

Every single elder was an Enhancer above level 30. They possessed extraordinary combat abilities, and it was precisely because of them that the Chinese Association could withstand the assault of Wuyan Hong's forces.

Other than these Enhancers, the normal soldiers of the Chinese Association were mostly new recruits. The training period could not even compare with Wuyan Hong's training. They had fought bravely because they knew how Wuyan Hong treated the Chinese. They would rather die than end up in the Vietnamese's hands, and hence had given it their all when retaliating.

If it was a comparison of fighting force, without the help of these high-level Enhancers, the Chinese Association's 1,000+ fighting members would not be able to contend against a single battalion of Wuyan Hong.

However, these Enhancers were not invincible existences. Initially, there were 22 elders. The attack this time had caused the deaths of 8 elders. Now there were only 14 elders remaining. Without Yue Zhong's interference, the remaining 14 elders would not have been able to withstand the onslaught either.

After a round of introductions, the Chinese Association started to evacuate. Survivors carried all sorts of resources and followed vehicles as they went away into the distance.

The Chinese Association had no way of standing up to the entire army of Wuyan Hong, and since their town had been discovered, they could only hastily change locations.

In this post-apocalyptic world, investigations weren't as easy and convenient, as long as the Chinese Association relocated, they could buy some time to rest and recuperate.

The Chinese Association did not just have this one location as their base. Other than this town, they had 6 or 7 other secret locations. However, this town was the most important location of theirs. This time, Wuyan Hong had really struck at a good time, and almost wiped out the entire top brass of the Chinese Association.

If Wuyan Hong was successful in decimating the upper echelons of the Chinese Association, then the entire Chinese Association would have suffered a great loss, and would not be able to put up any resistance against Wuyan Hong for a long time.

The relocation was done quickly, and not long after, Yue Zhong followed the group to a forest, within a secluded hillside, there were a few holes dug up, that was covered entirely by grass. Normal people would be unable to discover this place.

It was so secretive that even if Wuyan Hong had plenty of local Vietnamese, they would be unable to find it. However, it wasn't all that convenient living here, the biggest danger they faced were Mutant Beasts, and in this forest, if there were too many people gathered together, attracting the attention of huge Mutant Beasts was a disaster. Other than those that travel in packs or groups, there were a few monstrous lonesome Mutant Beasts that posed even more danger to these survivors.

The survivors started moving into the various holes and furnishing their new homes. Losing the town, they could only stay here for a long period of time, and await the next chance.

Yue Zhong walked quietly amongst them, behind him was Wei Ningguo who followed obediently.

After witnessing Yue Zhong's methods, Wei Ningguo had killed all thoughts of betraying him, his own hands stained with the

blood of Wuyan Hong's soldiers. Even if he went back, he would only face death.

When it came to meal time, within the forest, the survivors all grabbed their bowls and drank some gruel with wild vegetables.

In this post-apocalyptic world, any faction faced the same issue: rations. Unless they had opened the national strategic grain reserve near Nanjing, which would provide a temporary reprieve from the problem. Both the experts of the Chinese Association and Wuyan Hong forces had fought hard, killed many zombies and Mutant Beasts, yet their total reserves were not more than 2,000 tonnes. They could only eat sparingly, with the warriors enjoying a full meal, and the normal survivors eating half that amount.

However, these survivors were contented with that. Under Shu Wenyan's leadership, the people had their basic needs met, if they were to fall under Wuyan Hong's hands, then the males would definitely be tortured and tormented as slaves till death, while the women would be treated like playthings, after being raped and tormented, they would be turned to meat and eaten.

When Yue Zhong and Wei Ningguo walked by, those survivors would look at them with a face of envy and respect, not because Yue Zhong was the one who saved them - no one knew who it was other than the top brass. Instead, it was that both Yue Zhong and Wei Ningguo were carrying AKs on their back, loaded with bullets.

In this post-apocalyptic world, it was many survivors' dream to become a soldier. However, not everyone got to be one.

A short figure looked at Yue Zhong and Wei Ningguo, as she crept behind stealthily, and nimbly stretched out her right hand, towards Yue Zhong's pocket.*1 *2

Chapter 331: Thief!

If the target was a normal person, the little shadow would have made off with the contents of the pocket already. However, Yue Zhong was a fearsome person with truly inhuman speed. He casually intercepted the small hand of the thief, and coldly said: "What do you think you're doing?"

Yue Zhong looked carefully at the little figure, discovering that it was a kid. Her entire face was grimy, and covered in ash. Even her hair was messy and all over the place, with specks of mud in it, various long strands covering her face. Her clothes were in tattered pieces.

Yue Zhong frowned and spoke: "Thief?"

The kid saw that Yue Zhong had grabbed her right hand, and her eyes flashed with fear, as she started struggling and shouted: "Ah!!! Let go of me!!!! I'm not a thief!! I'm not a thief!!!"

As the child was struggling and protesting, Wei Ningguo pulled out a handgun and pointed it at her head, as he spoke coldly in Chinese: "Shutup! Keep your cool and wait for our Boss Yue to handle you! Otherwise I'll blast your head apart."

In these post-apocalyptic times, human lives were really cheap. Be it the elderly, women or kids, as long as they angered a person of power, forfeiting their lives was a normal occurrence. Concepts like "Society" and "Juvenile Courts" didn't really apply anymore. There were even maniacs and perverts out there who enjoyed torturing kids.

Wei Ningguo, having been part of the Wolf Fang Battalion himself, had never allowed the killing of people to burden him, even the murder of kids.

As the child looked at the gun pointing at her head, her expression full of terror, she dared not make anymore sounds. She

had seen the plight of countless pitiful children. She was clear that some people had gone beyond their rationality, and if this person in front of her was like them, if she was not careful, she might just lose her life.

"What happened?" Following a sweet voice, Shu Tianya, Zhang Shuwen, Hu Yan appeared. The voice belonged to the beauty Shu Tianya.

Yue Zhong pointed to the dirty little rascal that looked like a beggar and said to Shu Tianya: "Miss Shu! How're you guys doing! I'm not sure how the Chinese Association deals with people who steal. This little fellow here tried to steal my things, and was caught red-handed by me."

Shu Tianya's gaze immediately turned suspicious, as she turned towards the child and asked with an overbearing pressure: "Is it true? Did you try to steal his things?"

The beggar hesitated a while before nodding: "Yes!!"

Shu Tianya sighed, and her gaze turned complicated as she looked at Yue Zhong and said: "Yue Zhong, here, if a thief is caught, you can choose to beat the thief to death on the spot, or claim him or her as your slave. However, once he or she becomes your slave, rationing will be under your care. And it will no longer have anything to do with the Chinese Association."

Yue Zhong frowned lightly as he thought: "Slave!! Things are done like that here?"

In this post-apocalyptic world, many factions were very harsh on robbers and thieves. If there was such behaviour during a battle, if one was caught, he would immediately be executed. If it was during a lull period, Yue Zhong's first cause of action would be to throw the person into the Scum Battalion, leaving the person's fate to dying in battle, or fighting in enough battles to regain his freedom. The way things were handled here were slightly different, the fate being left to the hands of the master.

In the eyes of the people within the Chinese Association, this punishment was extremely harsh already. After all, there was no way of making things worse than it already was in this post-apocalyptic world.

Yue Zhong frowned as he took a look at the little rascal again like as if he was looking at a burden. A child could only bring more trouble for a faction that does not have too much of a support. Unless the child happened to be like Yao Yao, a natural Agility-based Evolver.

The kid looked at Yue Zhong gazing down with a frowning expression and immediately kneeled down in fright, hugging Yue Zhong's legs and begged: "Don't kill me please!! Please!! Uncle!! I'm willing to be your slave. Don't kill me!!"

Yue Zhong took one more hard look at the little rascal grabbing his leg, and he waved his hands at Wen Ningguo: "Alright!! I'm accept you then! From today on, you're under me."

Wei Ningguo received the order and took out the bag behind him, before pulling out a few small cakes, and a bottle of milk for the little kid.

The moment the kid received the cake and milk, she unceremoniously ripped the packaging open and started to take big bites and gulps. The cake and milk were extremely luxurious items in the new world, and if one wasn't careful, it would be snatched away.

When the various kids of the Chinese Association saw that the thief was able to eat such good stuff when she became Yue Zhong's slave, their eyes went red, they wanted to eat cake and drink milk too.

The kids walking about started to converge towards Yue Zhong's location.

Yue Zhong looked at the kids, and he smiled at Shu Tianya: "Miss

Shu!! I'll leave you to handle these guys!"

Shu Tianya's eyes flashed with a strange gaze, as she looked at Yue Zhong and replied coyly: "Yue Zhong, if you continue to call me Miss Shu, it's too polite. Call me Tianya, or I'll take it that you don't see me as a friend."

Yue Zhong chuckled: "Fine! Tianya!! I'll trouble you with them then!"

Hearing Yue Zhong calling Shu Tianya by a first-name basis, Zhang Shuwen and Hu Yan both felt incredibly jealous. Both had been pursuing Shu Tianya for a long time, and they were clear, only those who she viewed capable of her standards could call her by name. It was obvious that Shu Tianya held Yue Zhong in high regard, and thus this made them jealous.

Shu Tianya broke into an exceptionally bright smile, as her gaze swivelled towards Zhang Shuwen and said: "Shuwen!"

Zhang Shuwen immediately pulled out a gun, as he pointed it at those kids, his expression stern and fearsome: "Get back! Don't get any ideas. Otherwise, you might lose your life."

The kids were immediately frightened off by Zhang Shuwen's fierce expression, their faces pale.

Hu Yan walked towards Yue Zhong with a fighting intent, as he challenged Yue Zhong: "Yue Zhong!! I heard that your skills are top-notch. Do you want to spar with me?"

Yue Zhong had the ability to command Mutant Beasts. This was the common knowledge amongst the Chinese Association. However, as man could not be perfect, a person was unlikely to have many strong points, there was bound to be a weakness. Hu Yan thought that Yue Zhong was focused on controlling Mutant Beasts, but as for a single-handed fight, he was likely to be weak.

Yue Zhong lightly shook his head and declined the challenge: "Brother Hu! I'm sorry, I'm not interested in these activities,

sparring for no reason is not my cup of tea. Please find someone else."

Hu Yan's gaze was still fiery as he challenged: "Are you afraid? Yue Zhong!! I know you can command Mutant Beasts. I'm very grateful that you brought the beasts to save us. But, a true warrior would not back away from any challenge! Let us fight fairly!! Don't worry, I'm a magnanimous man, as long as you feel that you cannot win me, immediately surrender, I will stay my hand. I would definitely not do any despicable thing!"

Hu Yan truly felt grateful that Yue Zhong brought the beasts to save them, however, he was even more adamant on proving his worth in front of Shu Tianya, and showed that he was definitely above Yue Zhong. Yue Zhong was at most lucky, and managed to gain the ability to control Mutant Beasts.

Yue Zhong laughed mildly, before casually replying: "Alright, I admit defeat! It's your win, Brother Hu!!"

Yue Zhong really did not want to waste his energy on this type of aimless fight.

Hearing Yue Zhong's indifferent dismissal, his face turned red, and he gripped his fists tightly, till even the veins could be seen, his body trembling with rage.

Hearing Yue Zhong's declination, even Shu Tianya felt a huge disappointment. She was extremely curious about this young hero who could command over a 100 Mutant Beasts, and was commended by Zheng Qiang as though he was a god. Now that Yue Zhong had refused, she was extremely let down.

Zhang Shuwen eyed Yue Zhong and asked softly: "Yue Zhong! Just now you said that you're not interested in a challenge without any aim. Why not we do it like this! As long as you can win Hu Yan, then he and I will listen to you for an entire month. If you lose to him, then the 300 tonnes of rations offered to you by the Chinese Association will be reduced to 200 tonnes, how about

that?"

Zhang Shuwen was smarter than Hu Yan and saw through Yue Zhong's words, and hence decided to offer some terms to test Yue Zhong.

Zhang Shuwen and Hu Yan were both Enhancers above level 30, and possessed battle experience. If Yue Zhong could gain them as his followers for a month, he could accomplish a lot more.

Yue Zhong pondered for a while, before agreeing: "Fine!! I accept! Brother Hu, are you ok with this suggestion?"

Hu Yan was extremely confident as he proposed his own conditions: "I accept!! But you cannot use the Mutant Beasts you command. If you command them to attack me, I am not a match for the Type 2 Leopard Cat."

Yue Zhong replied deeply: "Not a problem!! I won't use any Mutant Beasts."

Hu Yan replied: "Good! Let's go!!"

Yue Zhong followed Hu Yan towards a location which was specifically set up for training.

This arena was meant for the different experts within the Chinese Association to exchange pointers. Many of them would challenge each other, and raise their own abilities, and discover more skills.

Yue Zhong and Hu Yan's spar soon garnered the interest of the people nearby, and the experts all gather around to spectate.

Shu Wenyan looked at the 2 of them within the arena, as he asked his vice-president Wang Xingchun: "Xingchun, who do you think will win this match?"

Wang Xingchun looked at the 2 of them as he evaluated silently, before saying: "Hu Yan is the most likely victor!! If Yue Zhong doesn't use his ability to command Mutant Beasts, he most

definitely isn't Hu Yan's match."

Hu Yan had reached Level 38 and was the 4th strongest expert within the Chinese Association, losing only to Shu Wenyan, Wang Xingchun and Tiger Chu. He had his close combat skills enhanced to Level 3, and within this arena, even Shu Wenyan would lose to him if he wasn't careful.

Chapter 332: Ready For War!

The arena was simply too small. Exchanging moves in such a location was extremely advantageous for close combat specialists. As for those summoners, magic and abilities-based Enhancers, they would be at a disadvantage.

An Enhancer with the [Sniper Specialization] would be able to take down a close combat specialist from a distance of 2km, however in this arena, it would take only a second for the reverse to happen.

Shu Wenyan and Wang Xingchun acknowledged Yue Zhong's abilities, but they didn't think that Yue Zhong would stand a chance against Hu Yan.

Shu Wenyan then asked Tiger Chu: "Tiger, what do you think?"

Tiger Chu was also after all one of the mainstays of the Chinese Association, and he had the experience and eyesight to discern potential.

Tiger Chu thought for awhile, and a strange gleam appeared in his eyes as he said: "I feel that Yue Zhong would most likely win."

Shu Wenyan frowned slightly, and kept his thoughts to himself.

Around the arena, people had gathered and everyone's eyes were on them.

"Watch out Yue Zhong!" Hu Yan roared out, as a strange glint appeared in his eyes, and he started executing a strange set of footwork towards Yue Zhong. Originally, Hu Yan possessed an impressive speed of 70 points but through his footwork, he suddenly appeared right in front of Yue Zhong like a lightning bolt out of a blue sky, as his hands reached viciously towards Yue Zhong's arms.

Hu Yan's speed was swift and decisive, to the point of abnormal. The moment one was caught by him, he could dislocate the joints

of the person just by exerting extra strength. Even the president Shu Wenyan had to admit defeat when facing this move.

Just as Hu Yan appeared in front of Yue Zhong, Yue Zhong's eyes flashed, and he activated the [Art of Fear] skill, and an intense Spirit attack assaulted Hu Yan.

At that instant, Hu Yan felt himself entering hell, as countless heat waves rose from the ground and his body was splattered by boiling oil, causing his skin to suffer numerous burns.

"This is an illusion!!!" Hu Yan was also a warrior with a stout heart and countless experience and he maintained his calm during his pain. He bit down on his tongue, and with the help of the pain, he managed to extract himself from the illusion.

"You've lost!" Hu Yan had just opened his eyes, and heard Yue Zhong's cold voice, whose hands were placed on his neck. As long as Yue Zhong decided to squeeze, Hu Yan would find his windpipe choked.

"I admit defeat!!" Hu Yan had a look of disbelief as he said. If it were a life-and-death battle, he would have been killed on the spot. Although he loved to battle, he wasn't a hot-head who didn't know when to retreat. If he insisted on continuing, things would just get ugly.

All the experts present saw Hu Yan pouncing towards Yue Zhong, and just as he had almost grabbed his hands, he suddenly stopped moving, and his throat was easily grabbed by Yue Zhong!

With Hu Yan's skills, it should have been easy for him to dodge Yue Zhong's move, and still engage in a counter-attack, but no one expected for him to stand there without resisting, causing everyone to be shocked.

"What power!!"

"Truly fearsome!! Who knows how many other trump cards he's hiding!!"

"....."

When all the experts of Chinese Association saw that Hu Yan was so readily subdued by Yue Zhong, their hearts were all filled with shock. Hu Yan's close quarter combat skills were renowned amongst them, having been enhanced thrice. Now that he actually lost to Yue Zhong, their fear and admiration for Yue Zhong's strength grew.

It appeared Yue Zhong could command Mutant Beasts AND his own fighting capabilities were terrifying as well. He was simply an untoppable existence.

Shu Wenyan took a long look at Yue Zhong and his eyes contracted as his expression was one of regret. If this expert could be used by him, the Chinese Association would grow 3 times in power.

Hu Yan called out with a little dejection: "I'm willing to admit my loss! From now, Zhang Shuwen and I will listen to your commands for a month."

"Good!" Yue Zhong nodded lightly, in this month, he will have 4 Enhancers (including Pan Jingyong and Wei Ningguo) above level 30 as well as a 100 warriors of the Chinese Association. It was a decent-sized power, and with it, Yue Zhong could utilize them to cause problems for Wuyan Hong.

After an entire month, Gan Tao should have trained up a batch of soldiers after gruelling combat against the zombies. By then, Yue Zhong wouldn't be fighting a battle against Wuyan Hong alone anymore.

After defeating Hu Yan, Yue Zhong brought the little kid and Wei Ningguo back to where they were staying.

In this forest, even though Yue Zhong was a distinguished guest of the Chinese Association, he could only bring them into a hole that was made in the mountain.

There was a stone bed and some simple essential life tools within the cave. On the stone bed, there was a layer of straw, to act as a mattress. It was considered an extremely decent treatment as compared to the rest. The other normal survivors could only curl up in a patch of grass, not many could get to use a stone bed.

The moment they left the town and went into the forest, there would be many inconveniences. Of course, the forest was a lot safer as compared to the town now, and if there were any more conditions, then the survivors would rather go back to the town and sleep.

"Go take a bath first, clean yourself up before seeing me again!" Yue Zhong frowned as he looked at the little beggar-like child.

"Yes!! Yes sir!!" The child looked at Yue Zhong a little timidly, before going over to where a few buckets of water was prepared for bathing purposes and started to wash herself.

Yue Zhong then stared at Wei Ningguo and asked directly: "Wei Ningguo. Tell me all you know about Wuyan Hong and his troops."

Wei Ningguo replied respectfully: "Yes sir! I will tell you everything I know."

Wei Ningguo was after all an elite of the Wolf Fang Battalion, and knew much more than most common people. Yue Zhong also had Li Bingyan back at the base with him, just that he didn't know if he could trust her intelligence. As for the things that Wutan Tong knew, it could not compare to someone who was in the know like Wei Ningguo.

"Sir! I'm done!!" Right as Wei Ningguo was explaining about the the situation vividly, a bright sound came from the side.

Yue Zhong turned around, only to see a small petite little girl, with a lush head of hair, exquisite features, and slightly yellow skin standing in front of him.

Yue Zhong was a little taken aback, as he asked: "What's your

name? And how old are you?"

Yue Zhong never imagined that this little dirty thief with such guts to steal from him was actually just a cute little girl.

"I'm called Ming Jiajia! I am 12 this year, after December, I'll be 13. My parents are Chinese. I know how to speak Vietnamese, and I know how to read as well. I can wash clothes, cook, and help to massage. From today, I'm your slave. I will listen to you well. Whatever you require of me, I'll do to the best of my abilities." Ming Jiajia spoke out docilely, as she presented her worth.

In this post-apocalypse world, those with no value would be eliminated quickly. Ming Jiajia was clear on the rules of the current world now. Even if it was under the leadership of Shu Wenyan, the harsh realities of the world still existed. Only when a new prim and proper order was established, and new systems and laws were in place, could the law of the jungle be replaced.

Yue Zhong hesitated, before asking warmly: "Ming Jiajia! I will rescind your status as a slave, and allow you to go back. How about that?"

Ming Jiajia was just a little girl with no combat power. She could not be put to use, and without a stable place, bringing her along would create problems. Yue Zhong had taken her in because he did not want to kill her for no reason.

Yue Zhong was after all molded into a decisive and ruthless leader. He was not someone who spared his enemies, regardless of who they were. Yet he was not an animal that killed without reason, and he could not bear to allow a young life to be wiped away in front of his eyes.

Ming Jiajia immediately quivered and kneeled in front of Yue Zhong, her eyes filled with tears as she begged: "Sir!! What did Jiajia do wrong? Please don't chase Jiajia away!! If Jiajia leaves master, Jiajia will die! Please, please master, keep Jiajia!! Jiajia will give her all to serve you!!"

Yue Zhong had just given her cake and milk, and she did not want to leave such a generous master. Almost anyone would fight over just a piece of cake within the Chinese Association,*1 to the point where there were people being beaten to death before.

Yue Zhong looked at the pitiful Ming Jiajia and his gaze softened: "Alright alright, from now on, you're my maid and secretary. Come over here!"

"Thank you master!!" Ming Jiajia sobbed as she thanked him, before jumping onto the stone bed and started massaging his legs.

Wei Ningguo looked at Yue Zhong and Ming Jiajia as he respectfully dismissed himself: "Sir!! I'll take my leave!"

In this post-apocalyptic times, where order had collapsed, there were many types of people present. Wei Ningguo did not want to intrude on Yue Zhong's matters and intentions.

Yue Zhong was speechless when he saw what Wei Ningguo thought of him. He wasn't at liberty to explain himself as well, and he just waved his hands to dismiss him.

The Freemasons, were very different from the Freemasons in history. This was just one of the small Chinese factions within Vietnam, and the current leader was called Peng Lingbo, and he was an expert at Level 25. He controlled a small village between Lang Son City and Gaoping City, and had over a hundred Chinese survivors dependent on him, with 300 other Vietnamese survivors. He alone ruled, and enjoyed his current lifestyle.

*1 Ulamog: Yes indeedy, I too would kill someone for a Twinkie and milk during the apocalypse, to say nothing of Woody Harrelson and HIS shotgun...

Chapter 333: Break Through!

A somewhat skinny middle-aged man, with hands full of calluses, and a face with a huge scar was speaking to Peng Lingbo. He was precisely the vice-head of the Freemasons, Zheng Minghe. "Leader, the Chinese Association has sent people once again to invite us, They want us to join them, and resist Wuyan Hong's attacks."

Peng Lingbo, whose features were well-defined, good-looking, and had a respectable look, snorted coldly: "Ignore them! We're currently having the time of our lives here, if we go over there, we would just become cannon fodder. They only have a few hundred guns, how are they going to fight against Wuyan Hong who has over a thousand troops. Isn't that just throwing an egg against a stone?"

A hint of apprehension appeared in Zheng Minghe's eyes as he continued to advise: "But leader! If the Chinese Association were to fall, Wuyan Hong's next target will most likely be us! He's such a vicious and cruel person, and has killed so many Chinese. If this beast really sets his sights on us, we'll be in trouble."

Peng Lingbo laughed shamelessly and said: "Minghe! You're overthinking this!! True, Wuyan Hong's strength isn't a joke."

"Even if all the Chinese joined hands to deal with him, we would not be a match for him. However, this is the forests of Vietnam! There are so many! As long as we make for the forests, regardless of his strength, he wouldn't be able to do anything at all!

After Wuyan Hong establishes some form of order, he won't necessarily kill anymore Chinese. Look at the case with Indonesia, didn't they kill so many, but after a certain point, they stopped? Once we wait till the rest are killed, we can come out of hiding and offer help to him."

Peng Lingbo knew he wasn't Wuyan Hong's opponent, and hence decided to take another route. Instead of facing him head on, he

would wait till the slaughter was over, before trying to gain favour with Wuyan Hong.

The Chinese in Southeast Asia had strong economic sense, but in the eyes of the leaders of those factions, they were like pigs and dogs. If they wanted to kill them, that would be it. At most, they would be condemned verbally for their actions, like that was going to help or something. Furthermore, after slaughtering the Chinese, they would gain the help of some heavenly assistance, there was no pressure in killing the Chinese. In each slaughter, all the wealth and possessions would be taken away and split between the other leaders and factions. As for the dead, no one gave a damn.*1

Under these circumstances, whenever the Chinese met such events, they could only run. Those with the capabilities would escape to America or other western countries, those who couldn't could only hide in the mountains or wait for death.

Peng Lingbo's intention to hide it out and wait for things to blow over before coming out was shared by many other similarly smaller factions. Most groups primary motivation was just that they had the opportunity to take over all of the goodies and positions of the other Chinese that would die.

Zheng Minghe gripped his fists tightly, his veins bulging out, and the scar on his face seemed twisted. He lowered his head, and suppressed the fury in his heart with great difficulty. Even though he had great hatred for the Vietnamese, within the Freemasons, he was only the vice-leader, and therefore, could not commandeer the entire faction to fight against Wuyan Hong.

Right at this time, one of the warriors walked over and reported to Peng Lingbo: "Leader! The people from the Chinese Association are here again! They would like to meet you! They say it's to discuss a deal, that they would like to use a batch of firepower to exchange for those Vietnamese under us to be used as coolies."

Peng Lingbo eyes lit up as he quickly asked: "Firepower? What

firepower?"

In this post-apocalyptic world, nothing was as precious as firepower. Peng Lingbo had already set his mind on selling himself to Wuyan Hong. However, in order to do that, he needed to have capital, and for that, he needed to ensure that his capital was decent enough.

The warrior spoke a little excitedly: "It's rifles!! They're intending to use rifles to buy over the few hundred Vietnamese as coolies!!"

Peng Lingbo only had a few rifles, the rest of his arsenal consisted of various other handguns. Hearing that the Chinese Association were going to use rifles to exchange for Vietnamese, Peng Lingbo grew a little excited: "Great! Let's go have a meeting with them."

The Vietnamese within these parts were plenty, as long as one was to attack a town, they would find a few hundred Vietnamese survivors. Peng Lingbo felt that exchanging the Vietnamese survivors for these weapons was a great deal.

Peng Lingbo and Zheng Minghe strode towards their main meeting hall, where there were 5 other elders of the Freemasons seated. Other than them, there were 6 others, 5 matured men and a young lady who was extremely beautiful. *2

The moment Peng Lingbo entered the meeting hall, his expression had switched to that of a smiling visage, as he welcomed the visitors: "Esteemed friends from the Chinese Association! I am the leader of the Freemasons, Peng Lingbo. How should I address you guys?"

Yue Zhong eyed Peng Lingbo and spoke out indifferently: "I'm called Yue Zhong! Leader Peng, are you willing to work with us to fight against Wuyan Hong?"

These 5 men were Yue Zhong, Zheng Qiang, Hu Yan, Zhang Shuwen and Wei Ningguo and the young lady was Gu Feifei. *3

Peng Lingbo's eyes flashed with a strange glint, as he guffawed

loudly: "This matter, let's discuss another time! Wuyan Hong's forces are large, we'll need a lot more planning! I heard this time, you guys are here to exchange rifles for our Vietnamese survivors. Let's talk about that first. How many guns and ammunition are you guys proposing for a Vietnamese?"

Peng Lingbo did not want to go against Wuyan Hong, but he did not want to fall out with the Chinese Association as well. After all, while the Chinese Association could not contend against Wuyan Hong, wiping out the Freemasons wasn't an issue.

An elder by the name of Chen Libang called out loudly: "Leader!! This time, you must distribute some to us, brothers of the Zhuque Hall (Vermillion Phoenix - not to be mixed up with the Vermillion Phoenix gang in SY County). Currently, our brothers are only using handguns. You can't be too biased this time."

Another elder called Yi Shuixiong also called out: "I agree! Leader!! Our Baihu Hall brothers are also only using handguns, some are even using blades. This time, you must definitely distribute some to us fairly as well. Otherwise, we brothers will cease working!!"

The Freemasons had a number of halls under its banner, boasting the integration of people from Zhuque Hall, Baihu Hall, Xuanwu Hall, Ursa, Sirius, many such awe-inspiring names. In truth, they were just a motley crew. Even before the rifles had been exchanged, there was already squabbling over the distribution. As long as they possessed the rifles, the halls would make use of the chance to suppress the other halls, which would in turn, lead to better resource distribution.

Peng Lingbo shouted out loudly: "Shut up, the whole lot of you!!"

Under Peng Lingbo's furious shout, the elders ceased their squabbling.

When he quelled their arguments, Peng Lingbo then turned to Yue Zhong and smiled apologetically: "I've let you see our

shameful side!! Brother Yue Zhong, how many guns and bullets will you be exchanging for a Vietnamese survivor?"

"None!" Yue Zhong laughed and pulled out his Stinger, pointing it at Peng Lingbo's head and pulled the trigger: "I'm here to subdue you all!"

With a 'peng', Peng Lingbo's brains were immediately blasted into pieces. Pulpy bits, red blood and white bone chips splattered all over the place, even Zheng Qian, Hu Yan, Zhang Shuwen and Wei Ningguo had not expected Yue Zhong would suddenly kill!

"Leader!!" Chen Libang was a loyal supporter of Peng Lingbo, and once he saw that his leader was killed, his eyes turned red as he activated his [High Speed Movement], and charged at Yue Zhong.

"Shut up and don't move, whoever does, will die!" Yue Zhong casually aimed the Stinger at Chen Libang and fired, having already caught sight of his actions.

Another gunshot rang out, and Chen Libang's brains were neatly left to dry on the wall, as his lifeless body crumpled to the floor.

Yue Zhong had killed 2 people just like that within a short span of time. Wei Ningguo, Hu Yan, Zhang Shuwen and Zheng Qiang had also taken action by then, as they swiftly pulled out their handguns and pointed it at the remaining people in the room. Their bodies were tense, and were on high alert to activate their skills if need be, to deal with them. They were currently in a hostile situation, and no matter how unwilling they were, since Yue Zhong had already acted, they had to stand with him.

Seeing such a cruel scene, Zheng Minghe and the remaining 4 elders froze, not daring to move. When Peng Lingbo died to Yue Zhong's sudden attack, no one could gauge his strength, but Chen Libang was a Agility-focused Enhancer, and he was just killed in one shot, they could roughly guess that Yue Zhong's capabilities were far beyond them. Furthermore, there were the other 4 experts of the Chinese Association currently monitoring them, if

they were to make a sudden move, there would only be death.

The current atmosphere had turned extremely strange, as the 4 elders felt cold sweat down their back, and their gazes landed on Zheng Minghe. Now that the leader was dead, the vice-leader had become their backbone. Even with their differences, at such a crucial time, they had to stick together anyway.

Zheng Minghe took a deep breath before looking at Yue Zhong, pointing to Peng Lingbo's headless corpse and asked: "Brother Yue Zhong! I am Zheng Minghe, the vice-leader of the Freemasons, what is the meaning of this?"

Zheng Minghe's question was also the question weighing on Yue Zhong's companions, who had not received any notification about what he was going to do beforehand. Yue Zhong had actually suddenly murdered someone without warning; and not just anybody, but the leader of the Freemasons!

Yue Zhong looked at Zheng Minghe and smiled gently: "Peng Lingbo did not want to resist against Wuyan Hong! Hence, I've killed him! I want to take over his faction! It's that simple! Zheng Minghe, you have a decision to make! You will join me to eradicate Wuyan Hong, or shall die here today. Your choice. I'll give you 10 seconds to consider. 10, 9...."

Zheng Minghe turned pale, he never would have expected Yue Zhong had just blatantly revealed his motive just like that. *4

Chapter 334: Countdown!

"2!"

Zheng Minghe quickly made up his mind: "I surrender!! I'm willing to eradicate Wuyan Hong alongside you!"

Zheng Minghe had a bone-deep hatred for the Great Empire of Vietnam. Every single member of his family had been tormented and tortured by them. He had joined the Freemasons only because he couldn't join the Chinese Association due to his obsession with revenge. Now under Yue Zhong's ultimatum, he chose to surrender, purely to help take Wuyan Hong down.

Yue Zhong looked at Zheng Minghe surrendering, and he turned his head to glance at the other 4 elders. "What about the 4 of you?"

At this time, the various soldiers of the Freemasons had gathered, and charged towards the meeting hall. Zhang Shuwen pulled out his handgun and fired a few shots at the oncoming Freemason members. He was after all experienced with guns, every single shot of his found its mark, and suppressed them. This kept the soldiers from wantonly charging in.

"Order them to surrender!" Yue Zhong pointed his Stinger at one of the elders and coldly commanded.

That elder stubbornly retorted: "Yue Zhong! I'm advising YOU to surrender! We have over a 100 good brothers here, none of them will yield to you!! You only have 5 men here, even if you kill us, the rest will not bow to you! In the end, both sides will suffer losses."

"What a valiant hero! Just die!" Yue Zhong coldly pulled the trigger.

With a peng! The elder's brains joined the final collage of Peng Lingbo and Chen Libang. *1

The Stinger was exceptionally powerful, and its power output could contend with the ZPT90s, the moment it hit the head, the

head would explode like a watermelon.

Yue Zhong then aimed at another elder and coldly continued: "The 100 men of the Freemasons are nothing to me. Just yesterday, I wiped out 2 battalions of Wuyan Hong, totalling over 800 soldiers. Killing another 100 today would just be a side dish. Even if you are Chinese, as long as you're my enemy, I will not be merciful. Will you surrender or not?"

Hearing his words, the eyes of the Chinese Association members widened in shock. They could not believe that Yue Zhong had single-handedly destroyed 2 battalions under Wuyan Hong.

Hu Yan spoke deeply: "It's true!! Yue Zhong has the ability to command Mutant Beasts. You guys had best surrender!"

Hu Yan did not think that Yue Zhong would be so ruthless, just killing when he thought of it, and actually eliminating the leader of the Freemasons. He even wanted to forcefully conquer the entire Freemasons. However, since the arrow had left its bow, he had to follow Yue Zhong's cue. Otherwise, if the rest of the Freemasons really fought, they would definitely face some loss.

The elder had a look of shock as he exclaimed: "I surrender!! Don't kill me!!!"

The moment that elder gave in, Yue Zhong pointed the Stinger at another elder.

With the threat of death looming over their heads, the remaining elders all gave in with much difficulty, although it was only on the surface. They would revolt the second an opportunity surfaced.

Yue Zhong, however, did not seem to care as he told Zheng Minghe and the elders: "Tell them to stand down!"

Zheng Minghe immediately went to the exit of the hall and shouted loudly: "It's me *2 Zheng Minghe, stop immediately!! I'm ordering you guys to stop your attack!"

"That's the vice-leader!!"

"....."

Hearing Zheng Minghe's command, the soldiers outside were at a loss on what to do. The gunshots stopped.

The head of the security Cai Hengbo had a grim look as he held his gun and hollered towards the hall: "So what if you're the vice-leader? We are all men of the leader, we only listen to his command!! Those inside listen up. Let the leader come out, otherwise, we'll kill every single one of you!!"

Yue Zhong stepped out of the meeting hall, and pointing the Stinger at Cai Hengbo's head, immediately fired and expertly displayed Cai Hengbo's thought organ on the nearby wall. He then coldly spoke to the rest: "Your leader has died at my hands! The vice-leader and all the elders have already surrendered. The whole lot of you better surrender, I can still let you live. If you want to continue and resist, I'll give you death! Your wives and kids will be treated as slaves, belonging to only the victors. Surrender or death, you choose!"

"Kill him!! He's alone!!! Everyone kill him, and seek revenge for our leader!!!" One of the loyal supporters of Peng Lingbo shouted out in agitation.

The soldiers of the Freemasons hesitated, some started to fire at Yue Zhong. There were also some who held back, and hid, as they watched the show. Countless bullets were flying towards Yue Zhong.

He frowned, as his body flashed away from his position, and he let out a single furious howl towards the sky.

At a nearby forest, Lightning hear Yue Zhong's call, and replied with a howl of its own, as it led more than one hundred Type 2 Mutant Leopard Cats towards the territory of the Freemasons.

The speed of the Mutant Leopard Cats was extremely fast, and pretty soon, they surrounded the village, as Lightning entered the

village on its own and shot towards the current gathering spot like an arrow.

"Mutant Beast!! Attack! Attack!!"

"....."

When the warriors of the Freemasons saw Lightning, their expressions all turned to one of horror as they shouted amongst themselves. The majority of the guns changed their aim towards it.

Lightning's speed was incredibly fast, not only did it dodge the bullets with ease, evading the attacks, but with every flash of its speed, a few soldiers would lose their heads.

Lightning had just killed about 4 or 5 soldiers, when the soldiers started losing their morale, and ran for their lives. They were just a bunch of untrained warriors after all, not even comparable to the Chinese Association. They were naturally unable to withstand the might of such a Type 2 Mutant Beast.

In just a short span of a minute, Lightning had charged through the heart of the Freemason's town, swiping its claws casually and removing a soldier's head.

"Mutant Beast!!"

"Type 2 Mutant Leopard Cat!!"

"....."

Upon seeing Lightning, those warriors firing at Yue Zhong had a change of expression as they changed their targets to Lightning.

The number of Type 2 Mutant Beasts in these parts of Vietnam was not many, the appearance of one usually spelt disaster and rains of blood. The Freemasons could be easily wiped out by a single Type 2 Mutant Beast. To handle a Type 2 Mutant Beast, it would take a powerful faction like Wuyan Hong's troops with enough firepower to hunt down one, and that was including the potential cost of human lives.

In the rain of bullets, Lightning dodged them all gracefully, its body continuously dancing by, and each time it passed a soldier, the head of the soldier would be swiped off its position between the shoulder blades, no one thus far could withstand its attacks.

"What a fearsome Type 2 Mutant Beast!!" Seeing Lightning engaging in an all-out slaughter amongst the humans, everyone was frightened out of their wits.

Zheng Minghe subconsciously reached for his neck and touched it, his heart filled with terror. Although he was a Level 27 Enhancer himself, facing Lightning, he would die within a second.

"I surrender!! Don't kill me!! I surrender

Some of the soldiers started losing their morale and will to fight, and they started to throw their weapons down as they kneeled and begged miserably.

The Type 2 Mutant Leopard Cat only continued its elegant slaughter of those who chose to fight; the rest who had not joined in the fray earlier and watching on one side were spared. These led the soldiers to understand who was controlling the terrifying Mutant Beast.

After being subdued by Yue Zhong, Lightning also gained some intelligence, and ignored the soldiers who surrendered, instead it continued to kill those who refused to give up. Soon, the entire area was filled with corpses of the soldiers from the Freemasons.

Zheng Minghe and the 3 other elders witnessed this horrifying scene, and did not dare doubt the truth of Yue Zhong's words.

When the main fighting force collapsed, the rest of the soldiers gave up and threw down their weapons as they surrendered.

At this time, the 100 soldiers Yue Zhong borrowed from the Chinese Association came rolling into the town with their armored vehicles. They went about placing the various survivors under arrest.

Yue Zhong also reorganized the remaining 113 Chinese warriors into 5 platoons, and handed them to be commanded by Zheng Minghe, Wei Ningguo and the 3 elders, Yi Shuixiong, Zhou Dali and Ning Changshui who surrendered.

Hu Yan, Zhang Shuwen and Zheng Qiang were all capable and powerful people, but were upper echelons of the Chinese Association. Yue Zhong naturally could not hand his troops to them.

In each platoon, other than the Chinese, Yue Zhong filled the ranks up with some other Vietnamese survivors.

As for the families of Peng Lingbo, Chen Libang and those who had retaliated, Yue Zhong sent the able-bodied men to the Scum Battalion, while the women were sent to the Women's Battalion to await future orders.

After settling all of this, Yue Zhong then gathered the inhabitants of this small town. In this village, there were 600 survivors, of which 400 were Vietnamese. Those Vietnamese were looking on at Yue Zhong atop the podium with fear in their eyes.

Wuyan Hong had openly committed genocide of the Chinese, and those Chinese experts were filled with fury. Some did not care about whether it was wrong or right, as long as they saw a Vietnamese, they would slaughter them as well. As a result, both sides had a hatred that ran deep. The 400 Vietnamese survivors were afraid that Yue Zhong would indiscriminately kill them all.

Zheng Minghe, Wei Ningguo, Yi Shuixiong, Zhou Dali, Ning Changshui were looking at Yue Zhong as well. Most of them had strange gazes in their eyes. Other than Wei Ningguo, the rest were soldiers who had just surrendered, and it could be seen that they still did not approve of Yue Zhong from the looks in their eyes. They were only fearful of Yue Zhong's strength and his command of the Mutant Beasts. The human heart was unfathomable, and those soldiers of the Freemasons were looking at Yue Zhong as well

with their thoughts concealed.

"I am Yue Zhong!" Yue Zhong surveyed the crowd before him, before coldly speaking out: "I have eradicated the Freemasons! From today onwards, you're all my people. Regardless of your Chinese or Vietnamese background, you will all have to listen to me! If you follow me, I will give you food, honour and glorious victory!!"

~~~~~

\*1 [Ulamog] Collage: A form of art made by sticking various things, differing in appearance in some way (even sometimes just shades of the same colors) onto a background for display. Now re-picture that segment. Or don't. xD

# Chapter 335: Warning the Troops!

---

Yue Zhong eyed them coldly and said in an icy tone: "If any of you dares to betray me, and become an enemy? I will chop your heads off, and turn your family into slaves, and give them to my subordinates to serve their every need. They will lead lowly and shameful days for the rest of their pitiful lives. For those who give their all to my cause, you will gain huge benefits and glory. You can choose to follow me and fight, or become my enemy, the choice is entirely up to you."

Yue Zhong then waved his hands and called out deeply: "Now, here are some weapons to bolster your strength! Take it!"

Soldiers that Yue Zhong borrowed from the Chinese Association started handing out guns from crates on the podium to the ex-Freemasons members.

"So many guns!!"

When the inhabitants of the town saw the number of guns, their eyes widened in shock. The Freemasons had a dozen AKs at most, while they relied heavily on handguns. Now Yue Zhong suddenly pulled out over a hundred 100 AKs to be distributed, this led many to be filled with disbelief. Before any other stronger faction arrived to topple Yue Zhong, they now had no choice but to comply.

Those soldiers who had just recently came under Yue Zhong's control started to feel their hearts surge with pride and joy, their happiness being worn on their faces. In this post-apocalyptic world, only the strong could lead good lives, with a single AK, these soldiers could each become a fearsome existence to normal survivors.

Seeing that the weapons were distributed, Yue Zhong called out loudly: "Now, let us go hunt our first prey. Come with me!! Let's go annihilate Wuyan Hong's troops, and take back everything from them. As long as we eradicate Wuyan Hong, food, women, riches,

status, they will all be yours!"

Zheng Minghe replied in a loud voice: "Kill! Kill! Kill! Kill them all!! Take everything from them!!"

Zheng Minghe had always wanted to kill Wuyan Hong, Yue Zhong's intentions struck a chord with his heart. At this time, as long as Yue Zhong could take Wuyan Hong out, he was willing to give his all to Yue Zhong. \*1

"Kill! Kill!! Kill!! Kill them all!!" The soldiers all called out in response, clearly riled up by that powerful speech, as their chants got louder, and with that rising morale, their inner fighting instincts were released. They released angry howls as though they were wolves.

"Move out!" Yue Zhong commanded coldly.

This entire troop that had just been subdued by Yue Zhong was motivated and led to advance towards their enemies in such a short time.

As for the defence of the town, Yue Zhong left it to Hu Yan, Zhang Shuwen and Zheng Qiang, the 3 elders of the Chinese Association as well as the hundred soldiers he borrowed.

So Wenyan had lent those soldiers to Yue Zhong with conditions, if there were deaths, within an acceptable range of 10 people, Yue Zhong did not need to be responsible. Beyond that, for every soldier that died, Yue Zhong would be required to fill the ranks with 2 Chinese. Hence Yue Zhong had only intended for them to guard the town, and maintain security and order.

Zheng Minghe was an Agility-based Enhancer, and used to be a recon soldier. Therefore, he brought a few other passionate soldiers along with him to scout the road ahead, providing intelligence.

Those soldiers had wives and children back at the village, and Yue Zhong wasn't worried that they would escape. In fact, Yue

Zhong had chosen those Vietnamese soldiers as they also had families, and if they dared revolt, Yue Zhong would not be merciful.

Zheng Minghe was currently manoeuvring within the forest, his body covered entirely in a weird Mutant tree sap, giving him an extremely foul stench, however it helped ward off ants. The other 4 soldiers did the same, otherwise the venomous bugs in the forest could easily take their lives.

"That's..!!" As they were scouting, Zheng Minghe heard the sudden roar of a vehicle engine, his brows furrowed, and swiftly brought his men as they made their way towards the direction of the noise.

Zheng Minghe quickly climbed atop a small hill, and looked towards a highway below, only to discover a huge fleet of vehicles currently making for the distance.

The huge vehicle fleet was made out of various transportation trucks, and from the top of the hill, Zheng Minghe could discern that the trucks were filled to the brim with haggard survivors.

Those huge transportation trucks were flanked by a battalion's worth of fully equipped soldiers and they were marching anxiously.

In this post-apocalyptic world, most vehicle fleets required the protection of soldiers, otherwise the Mutant Beasts of the forest would be attracted by the sounds of the vehicles, and attack them.

"What a huge catch!! Too bad it's abit too big, and too thorny. I wonder how Yue Zhong would deal with this!" Zheng Minghe looked at the fleet below, as a glint appeared in his eyes, and he brought out the walkie-talkie and reported what he had seen to Yue Zhong.

"It's a battalion without heavy weapons!! It really is a huge catch!! Let us kill them all!!" Yue Zhong heard the intel report from Zheng

Minghe, and his eyes flashed with a resolute gaze.

The fleet was currently making its way towards Yue Zhong and his troops. Yue Zhong quickly got his men to choose a small hill to hide.

The vehicle fleet continued unaware as it made its way into Yue Zhong's trap.

"Attack!!!" Yue Zhong immediately pulled out a heavy machine gun and rained bullets on the vehicle fleet. As the bullets penetrated the surrounding soldiers, piercing holes in their bodies and causing their innards to fall out.

Wei Ningguo, Yi Shuixiong, Zhou Dali and Ning Changshui brought their own men as they got on the ground and fired their own guns at the soldiers.

In just a manner of seconds, 30 men from the battalion had been killed.

"Ambush!! Ambush!!!" The commander of the battalion shouted out in fright and horror. He never imagined that they would fall into a trap here.

However, the battalion of soldiers protecting the fleet were not elite soldiers, and they were just a bunch of untrained soldiers who had not undergone training. The moment they were ambushed, their formation collapsed. Many of them threw down their weapons, while some heeded the commands of their leader. After using the vehicles as cover, they started counter-attacking.

Yue Zhong saw that half the battalion had lost their composure and their will to fight. He felt excited, and immediately let out a howl to the skies.

Lightning, who was waiting nearby with a bunch of its brothers replied with its own howl, and led them towards the battalion, their speed sending them past the defences of the soldiers in a matter of seconds.

The 100-over Mutant Leopard Cats were truly fearless under the leadership of Lightning, as they continuously knocked the soldiers onto the ground, and ripped their throats out.

"Damn beasts!!!" There were 3 Enhancers above level 30 within the battalion, and they were there specifically to deal with Mutant Beast. Upon seeing those Mutant Leopard Cats, they charged out.

Amongst the 3 Level-30 Enhancers, 1 was a Strength-based Enhancer. He wielded a huge shield in one hand, and a huge hammer in the other. Both added up to reach 700 jin, and that huge hammer could easily flatten a small jeep. The massive shield could even withstand the firepower from heavy weapons, just that it wasn't something that normal people could casually carry.

Another was an Agility-based Enhancer, who was wielding a pale blue dagger, his figure dodging through the crowd.

The last one was an Enhancer with the [Ice Manipulation] ability, and he pointed to one Mutant Leopard Cat, as 8 ice shards were conjured out of thin air, piercing into the body of the Mutant Leopard Cat, before suddenly exploding, causing the blood of the Mutant Leopard Cat to freeze instantly, as it fell to the ground dead.

Lightning had already noticed the presence of these 3 Enhancers at the first moment, it leapt into the air before suddenly appearing in front of the Agility-based Enhancer, and swiped its claws out. In that instant, Lightning had caused his body to be snapped in two.

After taking out the Agility-based Enhancer, it immediately made its way towards the Strength-based Enhancer while evading countless bullets.

The shield-wielding Enhancer caught a glimpse of Lightning and his face fell: "Type 2 Mutant Leopard Cat!! Damn it!! Why would there be a Type 2 Mutant Beast here!!"

His eyes glossed over as Lightning disappeared from his sights,



and in the next instant, an extremely sharp claw had slashed from behind him, causing his head to be lopped off easily.

The [Ice Manipulation] Enhancer looked at Lightning with shock and dread, as he immediately turned to flee towards a jeep. It was definitely impossible for him to deal with a Type 2 Mutant Beast on his own, and retreating was the only way to ensure his survival.

Peng! A gunshot rang out, and a new hole was made in the head of that remaining Enhancer, as he crumpled to the floor as a lifeless corpse.

Yue Zhong eyed the corpse of the [Ice Manipulation] Enhancer, as he put down the Bartlett Sniper, switched to his heavy machine gun and continued firing wildly at the soldiers.

"Surrender and you'll be spared!! Throw down your weapons!! Surrender and you'll be spared!!" Zheng Minghe shouted loudly.

"Surrender and you'll be spared!! Throw down your weapons!! Surrender and you'll be spared!!"

The entire clearing was filled with triumphant shouts, this type of jeering to force the enemy to succumb was extremely gratifying. Each time there was such a call, it was the end of a battle.

Under the joint attacks of the Mutant Beasts and humans, the battalion which had lost all sense of order could not regroup. Many threw down their weapons, hugging their heads, as they trembled and looked at the Mutant Beasts.

There were some who tried to flee towards the forest, but, their basic human speed could not match against the Mutant Leopard Cats, and they were easily knocked to the ground before having their throats ripped out.

# Chapter 336: Killing The Prisoners!

---

Not long after, the entire defence of the vehicle fleet crumbled.

Yue Zhong had ambushed over 200 people, and the death count was also about 200. In rewards he gained a battalion's worth of equipment, although there wasn't a single heavy weapon. This battle had cost the lives of 2 soldiers from Yue Zhong's side, 8 injured people, and 3 dead Mutant Leopard Cats. There was simply no comparison between the losses of both sides.

"These should have been new recruits!" Yue Zhong walked among the dead bodies littered around the area as he thought quietly to himself.

If they were an elite team, even when facing that ambush, they would have reacted properly at the first moment, and would not collapse just like that.

"Boss Yue! The captives have already let up!" Zheng Minghe brought some captives to Yue Zhong in excitement. It was the first time he had been part of such a clean operation, where they successfully wiped out an entire battalion and suffered minimal losses. This led Zheng Minghe to be filled with respect and admiration towards Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong looked at one of the captives and asked: "Who are you people?"

The captive returned Yue Zhong's gaze and revealed his identity honestly: "We are soldiers from Li Guangyi's Vietnam Revival Army. This was the 3rd Battalion of the 3rd Regiment, 1st Division. This time, our mission was to escort 600 Chinese to Wuyan Hong to exchange for some firepower."

"Using humans to exchange for firepower!" Yue Zhong frowned, as he continued asking: "What is the relationship between you guys and Wuyan Hong?"

The captive replied: "We had a few clashes with Wuyan Hong in the past. There were victories and losses from both sides. Recently, we haven't engaged in war. It seemed like the upper brass were passing judgement on some things. As for the details about that, I'm not entirely sure."

The captive was speaking entirely in Vietnamese, and Ming Jiajia who was standing beside Yue Zhong translated everything for him.

Yue Zhong continued grilling the captive with many questions. This led to him obtaining precious information about the Vietnam Revival Army. Li Guangyi used to be a commanding officer within the Vietnam Army, after the apocalypse, he had brought men to absorb a few battalions, as they continued to clear out the surrounding towns, saving the inhabitants, and establishing the Vietnam Revival Army.

Under the constant expansion, Li Guangyi's Vietnam Revival Army grew to an astounding power of over 40,000 survivors and 14 battalions of about 4,500 soldiers. However, as rationing was still an issue, and training was inadequate, this 3rd Battalion of the 3rd Regiment, 1st Division happened to be a newly established unit, and without the proper training or sufficient experience, they had been taken down easily by Yue Zhong. If it were the elite troops of Li Guangyi, the outcome of the battle would definitely be different. Li Guangyi had absorbed a number of strong soldiers, and obtained numerous weapons, and wasn't a simple force that could be defeated by this random bunch of soldiers that Yue Zhong had just recently subdued.

Yue Zhong walked towards the huge transportation truck, only to discover that within those vehicles, there were many Chinese packed together like pigs and dogs, their clothes in tatters, their bodies giving off foul smells, and their eyes were filled with fear. There were even many women who had obviously been raped and mistreated, their bodies covered with light yellow spots.

"Seems like this Li Guangyi is not a decent character as well!!"

Yue Zhong's killing intent surged for an instant, before he continued on. He had seen enough of the cruelty of the post-apocalyptic world, and he knew that no matter how he pitied his fellow Chinese, it wouldn't do any good. He might as well kill more of those Vietnamese who took pleasure in torturing. \*1

Yue Zhong came to the second truck, and saw that 30 extremely beautiful women were brought out from within, and the soldiers he had recently subdued had thrown their weapons down and were tearing at the women's clothes. The women were crying out shrilly in fright as they struggled powerlessly.

After a victory, it was time to mess with the women. This had always been the way of the Freemasons, and Peng Lingbo had made use of this method to win over subordinates. This had led many of the deplorable men to be loyal to him. Truthfully, even before the apocalypse, there were countless cases of people engaging in plundering and rape during times of war. It was hard to maintain a sense of decency then, not to mention the current times.

Ming Jiajia looked at the women struggling on the floor, and she frowned, as she hid behind Yue Zhong. She had come across such scenes countless times, but it was still hard for her to stomach. Even though she was young, she was still female after all. These kinds of situation made her feel disgusted, but she was powerless to stop it.

Yue Zhong furrowed his brows as he eyed those degenerates who had lost all sense of their morality as he coldly shouted: "Apprehend these beasts!"

The soldiers who were spectating silently uncomfortably stepped out at least and made a grab for those soldiers.

"Fuck!! Get the hell off me! Once your father I am done, you'll get your turn!!" When one of the soldiers was pried away, he started to curse out loud, but then he saw the cold glare of Yue Zhong

standing a distance away, and his complexion instantly turned pale, as he stammered: "Boss...Yue....!!"

"Everyone fall in!" Yue Zhong's own expression was steely as he commanded.

Under Yue Zhong's command, all the 100-over soldiers immediately got in their positions, and they knew what it was about, as they stood silently and looked at Yue Zhong, awaiting his decision on their punishment.

Yue Zhong looked at those soldiers and said coldly: "These beasts tried to rape women on the battlefield, they're no longer my men. I'll announce now, these men will be executed on the spot!"

Hearing his judgement, the soldiers who had lowered their heads awaiting their punishment immediately looked up in agitation and started to protest.

As one of the soldiers struggled, he shouted out loudly: "Boss Yue!! You were the one who said!! As long as we join you and fight!! We would get food! Women! Victory!! This was only one time that I fooled around. Why have you sentenced us to death?!!"

"Yeah!! I can't accept this!!"

"....."

Those soldiers continued to protest violently, they wanted to fight for a chance at survival.

Yue Zhong silenced them with a look: "I gave you strength. Not the right to rape and humiliate your fellow countrymen! If you want women, I will give them to you. If you were normal civilians, I would have just thrown you into the Scum Battalion. However! This is the battlefield! You are all soldiers! Soldiers who forget themselves and throw their weapons down just to enjoy themselves deserve the death penalty!"

Yue Zhng looked at Zheng Minghe, as he coldly ordered: "Commence the execution!"

Zheng Minghe felt a chill in his heart, and knew Yue Zhong was forcing him to decide. If he executed the order, his position would drop amongst the soldiers that used to be part of the Freemasons, after all these were previously Freemasons' members. However, if he did not execute the order, Yue Zhong would immediately sentence him to death as well.

Zheng Minghe did not hesitate any further, and ordered harshly: "Open fire!!"

Peng! Peng!

Zheng Minghe's soldiers immediately raised their guns and fired at the soldiers who had humiliated the ladies. Although these soldiers were their comrades in the past, if they didn't open fire, they would be the ones to face death.

Under the gunfire, those soldiers were shot dead.

Yue Zhong swept his gaze across the soldiers and said in a heavy voice: "I hope you'll understand that their plight will be the consequences for any similar incidents in the future! Women, wealth, and food, I'll provide them! But you'll have to abide by my rules and orders! Understood?"

Wei Ningguo was the first to shout out: "Yes Sir!"

"Yes Sir!"

The soldiers all replied with a chill in their heart. They had just been forced into Yue Zhong's ranks, and they had not yet fully accepted him as a leader. But they were willing to follow this strong person who could lead them to constant victories. As long as he could lead them to win battle after battle, their loyalty and morale will naturally grow. However, the moment he failed, this group would instantly scatter.

Yue Zhong, next coldly ordered: "Take our fellow countrymen, let them pinpoint those amongst the captives who had taken part in slaughter or tormented the Chinese in anyway! Execute those

offenders!"

Zheng Minghe's heart went cold instantly, and his fiery passion arose as he replied in a loud voice: "Yes Sir!!"

"Wait!!" Right at this moment, Wei Ningguo suddenly exclaimed.

Yue Zhong's gaze turned icy as he looked at Wei Ningguo.

Wei Ningguo's back broke out in cold sweat, yet he hardened his skin and told Yue Zhong: "Boss Yue, killing the captives won't be too good!! Furthermore, if this matter is to travel out, there will be lesser people willing to surrender."

Since time immemorial, there were few powers who executed their captives. It was not because they were kind or merciful, but the moment news were to spread, fewer enemies would be willing to surrender, instead they might fight it out. Wei Ningguo was hoping that Yue Zhong would become an overlord, and continue being a big tree that he could rely on.

Hearing Wei Ningguo's words, Zheng Minghe also faltered, as he looked to Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong replied indifferently: "Carry on!"

Zheng Minghe nodded, and immediately brought men to lead the survivors out of the vehicles, as they went to identify the culprits.

The Vietnamese captives were not any decent people themselves, as under the identification of the enraged Chinese survivors, various captives were pointed out and pulled from the holding place, and immediately subjected to execution.

"Don't kill me!! Ah!!"

"I was wrong!! Don't kill me!! I've already surrendered!!!"

" ....."

Amidst cries and shouts, many of the Chinese survivors saw their tormentors and torturers getting their just desserts, and they could not help but sob in relief. It was truly a venting of their grievances

and frustrations.

Many of the Chinese survivors immediately kneeled towards Yue Zhong, as they kowtowed repeatedly. Yue Zhong had slaughtered their hated enemies, and in an instant, won their support and goodwill.

Yue Zhong pointed to those Chinese survivors, and told Wei Ningguo: "See that? After killing the scum, I've gained their favour. If I kept them, then those scum might not even be loyal anyway. I'm Chinese after all, and considering the situation, I would still want to seek revenge for my countrymen, regardless of the consequences, otherwise the road in the future would definitely be tougher."<sup>2</sup>



# Chapter 337: Pearl Fruit

---

After hearing Yue Zhong's words, Wei Ningguo lowered his head in silence for a while, before nodding slightly. With over 500 Chinese survivors who supported him, Yue Zhong's position was consolidated further. Although in the long run, killing the captives was not auspicious, in order to win the hearts of the Chinese survivors, killing those Vietnamese that were worse than beasts was the best method.

With the identification of the Chinese survivors, over a 100 captives were pulled out and immediately executed by beheading. The remaining Vietnamese captives were all frightened, their eyes filled with fear, afraid that they will be the next to be targeted.

Not all the Vietnamese were monsters though, those who did not commit any offence were directly sent to the Scum Battalion as cannon fodder.

After settling the issue of the Vietnamese captives, Yue Zhong then came to the last vehicle with a huge container.

Ming Jiajia followed silently behind Yue Zhong. She was extremely pleased with Yue Zhong's decision on handling those Vietnamese captives. During the post-apocalypse, the Chinese led wretched lives, in this huge country of Vietnam, any Vietnamese would take the chance to humiliate or even kill a Chinese. Killing them back gave Ming Jiajia a sort of outlet to vent her hatred, after all, she was Chinese as well.

Seeing that Yue Zhong had walked over, 2 soldiers who were standing by opened up the container. They discovered that there was a small tree contained within, with numerous green leaves, its height about 1m, and there were 8 small pearl-like fruits that were snow-white in colour growing on that tree.

"What is this?" Yue Zhong pulled over a captive platoon commander Mu Peixiang and asked.

Mu Peixiang happened to be the highest commanding officer within the captives.

Mu Pei Xiang swiftly replied: "Sir! We aren't too sure on the background of this thing as well. This is something that the commander of the Cheetah Battalion discovered in a small town. When he found it, there were 16 Mutant Fierce-teeth Apes around. To kill those apes, we lost a number of comrades as well."

Yue Zhong did not reply and just looked at the strange tree, as he waved his hands and dismissed Mu Pei Xiang.

Yue Zhong reached out to pluck a fruit from the tree, as he took in a whiff of its scent, and could detect a strange sort of fragrance from the tree.

Yue Zhong held the pearl-like fruit and hesitated, he was 80% confident that it was definitely something good. However, he wasn't too sure about its effects. If it caused a person to faint, he would definitely be ripped apart by those soldiers he had just subjugated.

Ming Jiajia was extremely astute, and could discern Yue Zhong's dilemma, as she came towards Yue Zhong with a smile on her face and her huge round eyes as she said: "Master, are you afraid that the fruit has poison? Why don't you let me try it for you?"

Yue Zhong looked at Ming Jiajia and said in a heavy voice: "Jiajia! I'm 80% sure that this fruit is something good, and won't be harmful. However, since it's not a certainty, are you sure you would like to try it?"

Ming Jiajia had a resolute look as she said: "Let me!"

Ming Jiajia could tell that this fruit was something precious as well. Furthermore, she wanted to take the chance, if the pearl-like fruit could allow her to become strong, then she would have gained a huge benefit. In this post-apocalyptic world, the chances to become someone strong were little. Even if it could not endow her

with power, she would still gain Yue Zhong's trust. The only risk was that she might be poisoned to death.

Yue Zhong looked at Ming Jiajia and her determined expression and threw the pearl-like fruit to her: "Okay! Take it!"

When Ming Jiajia received it, she did not even take a moment of hesitation, and directly swallowed the fruit into her stomach.

When the fruit entered Ming Jiajia's stomach, it turned into a cool stream of energy that flowed within her body, as it nourished her limbs and nerves.

The cool energy rotated within her body for a few rounds, before solidifying. Ming Jiajia's face then took a greenish hue, as she opened her mouth slightly and spat out a mouthful of baleful air. Her frail little body shivered non-stop, like a helpless bird, as she looked at Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong immediately grabbed her into his embrace, and found that the little loli was as cold as a block of ice.

Yue Zhong observed the trembling Ming Jiajia and came to a conclusion: "The side-effects of this fruit are still unknown! But it definitely has some benefit in terms of enhancement!"

Yue Zhong chose not to take the fruit himself, instead he got his men to seal the container after seeing Ming Jiajia's plight.

Right at this time, Wei Ningguo came up to Yue Zhong and asked respectfully: "Boss Yue! Are we still attacking Nandu Town?"

Nandu Town was Yue Zhong's intended target this time. There was a platoon of Wuyan Hong's forces guarding the town, and within the town, there were about 1,300 survivors, of which, 200 Chinese were being treated as slaves.

Yue Zhong had decided to ambush Li Guangyi's forces from the Vietnam Revival Army on the spur of the moment. He gained a number of captives and Chinese survivors as a stroke of luck.

"Of course!" Yue Zhong activated his [Summon Skeleton] skill, and White Bones stepped out of thin air.

Yue Zhong pointed to White Bones and said: "Wei Ningguo! This is my trusted aide White Bones! He represents my will. You must follow his orders."

"Yes!" Wei Ningguo felt shock and amazement as he replied. It was the first time he actually saw a lifeform appearing out of thin air.

Yue Zhong eyes Wei Ningguo and said in a low voice: "Wei Ningguo, bring them back to base. If anyone makes any funny moves, you can tell White Bones, and it will help you take care of the situation."

"Yes Sir!" Wei Ningguo felt a chill. He knew this was a test, and the hidden meaning behind it. If he himself were to try anything funny, this White Bones would execute him at the first moment it could.

Yue Zhong had just gained control over this troops for too short a time, and had used extreme force to subdue them. He had not won their loyalty yet, and if he wasn't there, there was a possibility of a revolt.

However, with the existence of White Bones, which was impervious to bullets and knives, and even the heavy firepower of a 12.7mm machine gun, suppressing this mob would not be hard. Yue Zhong would then be rest assured to lead his men to launch an assault on Nandu Town.

Under the command of Wei Ningguo, half of the troops stayed behind, and were responsible for protecting and escorting the survivors, Vietnam captives and the equipment they obtained as they made their way back to the town of the Freemasons.

The other half would follow Yue Zhong's lead to advance towards Nandu Town.

Nandu Town was a small territory on the borderline of the areas under Wuyan Hong and Li Guangyi's control. There was a small elite platoon of soldiers currently stationed there. At the same time, there were various fortifications being carried out. Different attacking points were densely placed, and without ample firepower, it was very hard to attack this town.

"What a tough defence!!" Yue Zhong brought men to Nandu Town, as he looked at the seemingly impregnable defence, with reinforcements present to support one another, as he furrowed his brows.

Facing that defence, Lightning would only be sending its brothers to death by charging blindly. The Mutant Leopard Cats were truly fearsome, but against a turtle-like defence, with experts who were not exactly weak, if the Mutant Beasts were to forcefully try and attack, they would only lose out in the end.

Zheng Minghe observed Nandu Town from afar, before walking to Yue Zhong's side, quipping unhappily: "Boss Yue!! Why don't we fall back for now! This Nandu Town seems too tough to handle. Even if the brothers charge down, we would not be able to achieve anything.

Zheng Minghe was extremely eager to attack Wuyan Hong's troops, but he was also extremely clear that with just their strength, it would be hard to do anything significant. The terrifying Mutant Leopard Cats that had exhibited their prowess in the wild would not be of much help either against this town.

"It's just a single platoon! It's okay, within my capabilities." Yue Zhong had calculated silently, before making a decision: "Wait here! I'll go take care of that platoon!!"

Zheng Minghe had a look of shock as he exclaimed: "Boss Yue!! That is a platoon! And they're part of Wuyan Hong's elites, not some random riffraff. They're all within some protective buildings, and not so easy to deal with. Do think this through

carefully!!"

Those troops of Wuyan Hong's were actual elites who had experienced and survived countless battles, amongst them, there were many veterans and some actual military personnel from before the apocalypse. Their combat prowess was not like the troops of Li Guangyi that Yue Zhong had ambushed earlier. With the combination of elite troops and proper fortifications, even if there were 3 of the battalions that Yue Zhong had taken down, it would not be enough to cause any problems for the town.

Zheng Minghe was pretty strong himself, but he had to admit that he would be easily killed if he were to saunter into the town by himself.

Zheng Minghe had decided to rely on Yue Zhong after witnessing his methods and strength. He did not wish for him to die here.

"Don't worry! You guys just wait here for the order to take care of the town!" Yue Zhong laughed, before pulling out his Bartlett sniper rifle, and aimed at a patrolling soldier from such a large distance, and pulled the trigger.

With a bang, the patrolling soldier's head was blasted apart.

"Enemy attack!!"

"Sniper!! There's a sniper!!"

"....."

Following the angry shouts, the platoon of elite soldiers quickly ran for cover within the fortifications, and did not allow for a second target for Yue Zhong.

"Great response! No wonder they're an elite platoon!" Yue Zhong eyed the swift and smooth motions of the soldiers and couldn't help but frown.

# Chapter 338: Slaughter!

---

However, Yue Zhong had already prepared himself mentally from the very start. A single platoon of elite soldiers was not going to be a problem for him at all.

Yue Zhong pulled out a Type 2 Mutant Black-scaled Boar hide from his ring, and donned it, before swiftly making his way towards the small town.

"Snipers!" Yue Zhong had just moved when he felt 7 or 8 lines of sight locking onto him, however, this snipers could not possibly aim properly from such a distance, especially when Yue Zhong was employing his high-speed movement.

If one wanted to get a hit on an Enhancer as fast as Yue Zhong was, it was only possible if it was a sniper with the Level 3 [Sniper Specialization], otherwise it would be extremely hard for any other normal snipers to try and even catch him.

Yue Zhong got within 200m of the town in just a matter of a few breaths, and the various fortifications and defences started spewing out bullets fiercely. There were multiple flashes from the different guns and a dense rain of metal came pouring towards Yue Zhong.

Facing such a fearsome hail of bullets, unless it was a Type 2 Mutant Beast, it was basically impossible for any other Mutant Beast to be able to withstand it. If Yue Zhong had commanded the little brothers of Lightning to launch an assault on the town, just facing this rain of bullets would stop them in their tracks.

In that dense barrage of bullets, Yue Zhong activated his [Shadow Steps], as he constantly flashed about, not staying in a single location for more than a second.

The area within 200m of the town had been cleared of everything, there was not a single scrap of cover available. If Yue

Zhong wanted to push forward on his charge, he could only do so under the blanket of bullets.

In that town, there was no shortage of the bullets from the 12.7mm heavy machine guns. Even if the bullets could not damage Yue Zhong's defences, the force of the impact would still cause him some injuries. After all, his body's resilience was still not as tough as a Type 2 Mutant Beast yet.

As Yue Zhong was running, his eyes were constantly darting about, taking in every single detail about the town, and the locations of all the fortifications and defences. He pointed to a part of the town, and 10 balls of Devil Flame the size of his fingers appeared, and shot towards 10 of the defence points.

On impact, the 10 locations combusted and were caught in flames, with 30 of the elite soldiers under Wuyan Hong instantly burnt to death. The fearsome Devil Flame also caused the weapons to catch fire, before exploding and adding further to the blazing flames within the defences. In just a single moment, the platoon of elite soldiers were all incinerated by one move from Yue Zhong, although it had caused him 20 points in Spirit as well.

This kind of result was only possible by having the [Devil Flame] Skill enhanced thrice, as well as having all 6 attributes exceeding that of a standard person. Only someone like Yue Zhong could pull it off.

As someone who was also an Enhancer with [Flame Manipulation], Wei Ningguo would at most be able to conjure 8 spheres of flame, but to cause such destruction, he would need to expend over 40 points of Spirit, which would most likely drain him after a single attack.

When those 10 defensive positions were destroyed, 80% of the firepower of the town had been neutralized.

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed with a glint, as he retrieved the .05 submachine gun from his back and charged towards the town.



When the 10 defensive locations were decimated, the 8 snipers hiding within the town did not stop firing at Yue Zhong. However, while those snipers were considered experts in their own right, trying to snipe Yue Zhong who had exponentially faster speed than a normal human was just impossible. Their bullets could only land on his shadows, not even ruffling his clothes.

The remaining troops saw Yue Zhong charging forth all by himself, and they quickly retreated towards the 2nd line of defence in an orderly fashion.

A few mortar personnel started firing rounds at Yue Zhong's direction, causing myriad explosions all around him.

Yue Zhong reacted by conjuring even more Devil Flame spheres all around him. As he created them they flew to the different defensive locations and exploded, causing numerous Vietnamese soldiers to be incinerated.

Pretty soon, there were various fire traps burning all around the town, and the elite soldiers of the platoon under Wuyan Hong were burnt to death by Yue Zhong's Devil Flame, turning into ash.

When the commander of the elite troops Li Xiaoli saw Yue Zhong making his way around town killing the various soldiers, his eyes showed a hint of shock: "Too scary!! This damned fellow is too frightening!! He must be an Evolver that is similar to the Emperor. He's not someone who we can handle!"

A staff officer came up to Li Xiaoli and asked: "Commander! What do we do now? We have already lost half of our brothers to that guy!"

Li Xiaoli's eyes flashed coldly as he gave the order: "Evacuate! Transmit my order! Everyone is to evacuate from the town! Let all the survivors escape from here now!"

Li Xiaoli also gave an extremely cruel order before the staff officer left: "Before we leave, kill all the Chinese!"

Under such dire circumstances, Li Xiaoli could not even ensure the total evacuation of the Vietnamese survivors, not to mention the Chinese who were like pigs and dogs to him. Every Chinese survivor had been subjected to torment and torture under Wuyan Hong's camps, the moment they were given a chance, they would become enemies dead set on seeking revenge. Li Xiaoli was a cruel man, and he would naturally not allow such a plight to cause problems in the future.

The staff officer trembled, and hesitated a while before asking: "What about the Chinese women, do we kill them all as well?"

In the small town, there were a number of Chinese beauties who were just sent here. The staff officer could not bear to kill those women when they haven't got the chance to play with them.

Li Xiaoli stared at the staff officer coldly and barked: "Kill them all!"

"Yes! Sir!!" The staff officer could detect the unhappiness from Li Xiaoli, and he quickly replied, before dismissing himself swiftly.

The staff officer quickly came to the holding cell of the Chinese survivors, and conveyed Li Xiaoli's orders to the Vietnamese soldiers standing guard outside the jail.

The door of the jail cell was then opened up, and from within, numerous Chinese survivors walked out, their clothes in tatters, their faces devoid of expression or colour, and their bodies emitting a foul smell. These Chinese captives were all used as slaves to construct fortifications and defences by the troops of Wuyan Hong, and they ate only the worst available food. There was no freedom, and they could only move around like zombies.

"Quick!!! Chinese dogs!! Get the hell out here!! Faster!!" A Vietnamese soldier knocked the head of one of the Chinese captives viciously, causing his head to bleed and blood to drip on the floor.

"Damn it!! Useless shit! Go and die!!" The Vietnamese soldier cursed out, before aiming his gun and firing at the Chinese captive.

With a peng, the Chinese captive had a new hole in his head, as he slumped to the floor lifelessly.

When the rest of the captives witnessed this, their eyes flashed with fear, but they did not dare make any moves. Those who had dared retaliate had been killed long ago.

The various Chinese survivors were quickly ushered to a huge clearing, in which there were 3 heavy machine guns mounted, and 12 Vietnamese soldiers decked in military uniform were standing there.

When the Chinese were herded into their positions, the platoon commander in charge of the execution barked out: "Open fire!!"

In an instant, the 3 heavy machine guns spat out a line of fire, as a dense rain of bullets tore through the Chinese survivors, causing them to be turned into sieves, fresh blood dying the ground.

"Don't kill me!! I don't want to die!!"

"I'm begging you, please don't kill me!!"

"....."

When the rest of the Chinese on the other side witnessed this, their eyes filled with fear, and many started to beg pitifully.

"What the fuck are you being noisy for, Chinese dogs! Shut up!" The miserable pleading of the Chinese infuriated the Vietnamese, and their eyes turned grim, before pulling out their handguns and fired at some of the Chinese.

Under the various gunshots ringing out, those Chinese captives who were wailing were immediately executed!

Seeing this cruel and harsh scene, all the Chinese captives knew that it was futile and desolation could be seen in their eyes. Some of them were brought to the clearing amidst their silent sobs,

awaiting the next wave of execution.

"These damned Chinese dogs! They should all be slaughtered!!" The Vietnamese cursed out loud, and was about to bark out his order.

"You fucking Vietnamese beasts should be the ones to die!" Following Yue Zhong's chilly voice that affected one to the bones, the Stinger was placed at the temple of the platoon commander.

With a peng, the head of the platoon commander who had been giving orders to execute the Chinese exploded, blood and brain matter splattering on the ground together.

"Kill him!!"

"Kill that devil!!"

"....."

When the Vietnamese soldiers saw Yue Zhong, they broke out in commotion and started to fire at him almost simultaneously.

"All of you can go die! Beasts!" Yue Zhong's eyes flashed coldly, as he activated his [Devil Flame], and 11 flames landed on the 11 other Vietnamese soldiers, causing them to combust instantaneously.

"Ah!!!"

"It hurts!!!!"

"Save me!!!!"

The crackle of burning fat and the sizzle of flesh was drowned out, as the Vietnamese soldiers started wailing in agony. Being swallowed by the flames, yet not dying instantly, they struggled for a few moments in excruciating pain before they were finally burned to death.

Burning slowly to death was one of the most cruel ways of punishment, and Yue Zhong had gained a substantial amount of control over his Devil Flame. Now he could control the power output! He could cause it to kill immediately, or to cause them to

suffer in pain.

"Bunch of beasts!! Wuyan Hong you fucking beast!! Everyone under him are just like him! He doesn't deserve to live!!" After killing those soldiers, Yue Zhong took in the surrounding, and his fury and killing intent billowed as he saw the numerous bodies of the Chinese that were just executed.

# Chapter 339: Eradicating Li Xiaoli's Troops!

---

Yue Zhong suppressed the fury he had, and fired a signal into the skies.

"Boss Yue has released the signal! Follow me!!" Zheng Minghe saw the signal in the skies, and quickly led the 50 or so men towards the direction of the town

Yue Zhong could easily handle a small company of elite soldiers, but to gain control over a thousand people of a town, it was too difficult to do by himself. Protecting the Chinese that he had just saved would be hard to do alone, therefore Yue Zhong needed the help and assistance from Zheng Minghe and the rest.

Yue Zhong looked at the 200+ Chinese captives and said: "I'm Yue Zhong!! I'm Chinese and I've come to save you! From today onwards, you're my people. I will do my best to protect you guys. As for Wuyan Hong that bastard, I will not let him go."

When those Chinese captives heard Yue Zhong's words, they started bawling with emotions, many even started kneeling and kowtowing to him. If Yue Zhong had been just a little bit later, they would have been executed mercilessly. As of this moment, almost everyone was filled with gratitude and reverence for Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong waved his Black-Tooth Blade and cut open the bindings on the Chinese captives, and in turn, those freed went to help the rest undo their bindings as well.

Yue Zhong looked at those Chinese survivors and said in a low voice: "Those who still have energy, take up a gun and join me in my fight. Right now, only you can help protect yourself."

Amongst those survivors, 20ish men quickly stepped right up, and they went to pick up the equipment from the 12 Vietnamese soldiers, before standing quietly and awaited Yue Zhong's orders.

These Chinese survivors had already witnessed Yue Zhong's tyrannical strength, and coupled with the fact that they did not have a leader amongst themselves, they already started to listen to Yue Zhong's orders subconsciously.

Yue Zhong looked at the 12 gun-wielding men and asked: "Which of you have handled a gun before?"

One of the men, with a height of 1.6m, sunken eyes, a clean shaven head, and a sturdy look replied in a low voice: "My name's Li Guangguo! I was a retired soldier from the Chinese Army."

Yue Zhong took a look at Li Guangguo and acknowledged him: "Good! I shall appoint you to be the temporary commander of these survivors. You will be in charge of gathering all our Chinese comrades. Defend this position, and do not allow those Vietnamese to bully our Chinese comrades further! I will go decimate every single one of those Vietnamese animals! After that I'll come back and bring you guys out of here."

Currently, the town was in a huge mess, and there was chaos everywhere, if no one was to stand guard here, those Chinese survivors would be in for further torment. Yue Zhong had to chase down the soldiers of Wuyan Hong's troops, and had no time to stay here.

Li Guangguo replied in a clear voice: "Yes! Sir!!"

Yue Zhong saw that Li Guangguo had accepted his order, and quickly left the place, giving chase to the remaining soldiers of Wuyan Hong's troops.

The company of elite soldiers stationed here numbered a total of 150 over soldiers. Yue Zhong had single-handedly killed over 80 of them.

Li Xiaoli was also an officer with plenty of combat experience. The moment he saw that Yue Zhong was running around unhindered, he had called for an immediate evacuation. The

remaining elite soldiers had swiftly boarded various APC's under Li Xiaoli's commands and started to make a run for the exit of the town.

Yue Zhong had chosen to save the Chinese survivors first, thus expending some precious time and by the time he reached Li Xiaoli's command centre, he saw numerous APC's driving off towards the distance.

"Fuck!! I'll definitely not let you assholes off!" Yue Zhong's eyes flashed with a hint of madness, as he activated his [Shadow Steps] and ran after the APC's.

After activating his [Shadow Steps], Yue Zhong's speed would reach a level of nearly 140 points and him running at full speed allowed him to reach the fleeing APC's in a short span of time.

With Yue Zhong giving it his all, the distance between the 2 parties was gradually lessening. With such an absurd point total for his speed stat, Yue Zhong could be considered almost superhuman in the pre-apocalyptic world. Of course, maintaining this speed that was like a sports car would expend Stamina, and Yue Zhong could not maintain it for beyond an hour.

"Is that even human? How can he use his own legs to match a vehicle!!" Li Xiaoli saw Yue Zhong chasing from behind in the rearview mirror, and his eyes flashed with shock. It was the first time he saw an Enhancer actually giving chase to a car! It was even to the point where the car was losing out in speed!

Running at his maximum speed, Yue Zhong quickly reached the back of one of the APC's. He pointed to one of them, and a Devil Flame flew forth, combusting on one of the APC's. On impact it instantaneously consumed that APC, causing it to explode into a huge ball of fire. The 15 soldiers inside were incinerated within the first seconds.

After taking care of one APC, Yue Zhong's eyes flashed icily, as he continued to activate his [Devil Flame], pointing to the front.



Another fireball was conjured and caused another APC to be swallowed in flames, exploding in a ball of fire.

Around the APCs, there were 5 other gunner cars, and the 5 cars were currently firing wildly at Yue Zhong.

Those soldiers sitting within the APCs were not willing to die just like that either, hence they took up their weapons and fired constantly.

Blanketed by the countless golden bullets, Yue Zhong had to constantly dodge and evade them and his speed was slowed accordingly. However, he did not stop casting his [Devil Flame]. As he conjured balls of Devil Flame, they constantly flew towards the APC's, exploding upon impact and causing the soldiers within to be blasted into pieces.

"Damn it!! My orders!! Gunner cars to cover the rest! APCs stop!! All the soldiers to run towards the direction of the forest and split up!!!" Li Xiaoli saw that his subordinates were being swallowed by the Devil Flame and turned to ashes, and he yelled with grief. He had not hesitated to order the ruthless slaughter of a few hundred Chinese, but seeing his own brothers being hunted by Yue Zhong caused his heart to bleed.

Those 5 gunner cars knew their fate and still carried out Li Xiaoli's commands and blocked Yue Zhong from the APCs.

Yue Zhong's [Devil Flame] fireballs that were cast landed on the gunner cars, causing them to all explode into pieces and burnt the crew directly into ashes.

The remaining 2 APCs had stopped, and the remaining 30 something soldiers had made use of the time Yue Zhong spent to destroy the gunner cars to split up and run towards the forest.

Li Xiaoli had seen through Yue Zhong's weakness at a glance, which was that Yue Zhong was only by himself, and facing a retreating troop that split up, he could at most kill 7 to 8 of them.

The remaining soldiers would be able to escape safely.

"Hmph! Wanna run?! How can it be so easy!!" Yue Zhong looked at the 30+ Vietnamese soldiers, as he laughed coldly, and emitted a shrill howl.

In just a few moments, numerous Mutant Leopard Cats pounced out from the forest and charged towards the Vietnamese soldiers

Those Vietnamese soldiers were elite soldiers, and if they had the backing of cover and fortified defences, then it would be a piece of cake for them to deal with a hundred Mutant Leopard Cats. However, this was a place with no fortifications and they were simply no match for these Mutant Leopard Cats. They easily pounced over and knocked the soldiers to the ground, before ripping their throats out.

"Beasts!!! Damn beasts!!!! I'll not let you live!!" Li Xiaoli saw his elite subordinates being pounced on and having their throats ripped out, his eyes turned red. He was after all a Level 20 Enhancer, and he activated his own [High Speed Movement], as he dashed madly towards Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong did not understand Li Xiaoli's Vietnamese, and as he looked at him charging towards himself, his brows furrowed, and he lifted his Stinger and pointed it at Li Xiaoli.

With a peng, Li Xiaoli had not even reached Yue Zhong, when his brains were blasted apart.

"Kill them all! Leave not a single one behind!" Yue Zhong's icy gaze swept across the Vietnamese soldiers, as he commanded Lightning. He had not a shred of goodwill towards these Vietnamese beasts who had slaughtered a huge number of Chinese, and naturally did not want to leave anybody alive.

Upon receiving his order, Lightning, whose innate beast-savagery ran through its blood, felt extremely excited, and immediately led its brothers to slaughter the remaining soldiers,

before helping themselves to a feast.

Yue Zhong then collected all the equipment that was left behind into one of the APCs, leaving the ground full of dead bodies, and drove the APC back to town.

By this time, the entire town was engulfed in chaos, under Li Xiaoli's orders previously, there were many Vietnamese mobs, and Vietnamese survivors who just wanted to escape from the town.

When Yue Zhong led Zheng Minghe and Li Guangguo to subdue the town and cleanse it of all the troublemakers, ensuring that everything had quietened down, there were only 200-plus Chinese survivors and 600-plus Vietnamese survivors.

When the situation had been contained, Yue Zhong then brought them to leave the town, before he did, he even released a fire in the town, causing it to be burnt down cleanly, leaving nothing behind.

The most luxurious villa in Tooth County had been converted to the main living quarters of the Great Empire of Vietnam, and all the commands were given out from here.

Within the villa, in a meeting hall, there was a man of about 27 years old, his body burly, his features defined, and had a head of long hair that reached his shoulders. He had a fierce expression on his face as he was looking at another middle-aged man kneeling in front of him as he asked: "What!! 3 battalions were destroyed by the Chinese Association? How is that possible? How can they have that kind of power? Is this for real, Song Weiyun?"

Song Weiyun's back broke out in cold sweat, and he dared not reply slowly: "It's true! My liege, from the reports of those soldiers who made it back alive, they were ambushed by an Enhancer that could command a large group of Mutant Beasts. He even had a Type 2 Mutant Beast with him."

The young man with a fierce aura between his brows was precisely the leader of the Great Empire of Vietnam, Wuyan Hong.

He had just returned from hunting Mutant Beasts in the forest and had received news of the demise of 3 of his battalions, causing him to be enraged.

## Chapter 340: Wuyan Hong's Fury!

---

3 battalions consisted of almost 1,500 soldiers. At the same time, amongst those 3 battalions, there were the 5th and 7th Battalions which possessed decent fighting strength. They were soldiers that Wuyan Hong had painstakingly trained up amongst the 14 battalions under his command. Since these 3 battalions were decimated, it was like Wuyan Hong had received a deep knife wound, of course it infuriated him.

Wuyan Hong frowned and stared at Song Weiyun and asked in a low voice: "Type 2 Mutant Beast? What kind of person can control a Type 2 Mutant Beast?"

Wuyan Hong frequently honed himself within the forests, and naturally knew of the ferocity of the Type 2 Mutant Beasts. It was the first time that he heard of an Enhancer who could control a Type 2 Mutant Beast.

"We do not know the name of that Enhancer who could control the Type 2 Mutant Beast. However, we have his photograph here." Song Weiyun quickly pulled out a photograph where Yue Zhong's appearance was distinctly captured.

After all, the soldiers of the 5th Battalion were still elites, even when they had collapsed and retreated, there were some who managed to take pictures of Yue Zhong.

"It's him!!" The Wolf Fang Battalion's commander Wu Dahui saw the photos of Yue Zhong and he couldn't help but exclaim while his expression turned ugly. He hated this person to the core, after he had wiped out his elite troops and was currently holding Li Bingyan captive. Now that he saw Yue Zhong's photo, he lost his sense of self subconsciously.

Wuyan Hong's gaze retracted, and turned to Wu Dahui: "Dahui, you know this guy?"

The Wolf Fang Battalion was one of the sharpest weapons of Wuyan Hong. Wu Dahui was also a well-liked general of Wuyan Hong. Since the elite battalion had gained a lot of merit for the Great Empire of Vietnam, Wuyan Hong valued Wu Dahui's opinions greatly.

Wu Dahui gritted his teeth and spat out in a steely tone: "Liege! This is the Chinese expert that assaulted Tooth County previously. The team led by Dayang had perished at his hands."

Although the Wolf Fang Battalion was termed as a battalion of elites, the actual number of experts inside did not exceed a 100 people, and for 10 experts to have died at the hands of Yue Zhong, it was considered a huge blow to the Wolf Fang Battalion.

Wuyan Hong frowned, before asking: "Do you guys know his background?"

Although Wuyan Hong was a ruthless and merciless killer, he wasn't an idiot. He wanted to find out about Yue Zhong thoroughly, before deciding on the next course of action.

The various officials all stared at each other, their faces grim, and not a single word was spoken. Yue Zhong had been transported by the Nether Beast only recently, no one had even heard of him. If it wasn't for the fact that he had committed such huge acts one after another successively, no one would know about him. Furthermore, collecting intelligence in this post-apocalyptic era was not like in the past, and it took much longer to gather enough information to make a detailed judgement about a person.

Wuyan Hong looked at his officials keeping silent, and he couldn't suppress his anger anymore, as he lashed out: "Rice buckets!! A bunch of useless rice buckets!!\*1This Chinese dog has killed so many of our brothers. So many days have passed, yet you useless pricks have not been able to get a hold of any information on him!!! Not even his name!!! I've really kept you guys around me for nothing!!!"

The Great Empire Of Vietnam was coined by Wuyan Hong himself, and he took pride in it as his very own nation. Prior to the apocalypse, he was only a ordinary Vietnamese citizen, albeit with extremist and racist views. He did not possess any etiquette or charm. The moment this self-appointed emperor got angry, the words that came out of his mouth were definitely curses.

After screaming and lashing out at his officials, Wuyan Hong's anger was finally abated. He calmed down and eyed his intelligence officer coldly, commanding: "An Nishun!! How are you doing your job? I'm giving you a week, I don't care how, you better get me information on this Chinese dog, is that clear?"

An Nishun cried out miserably inwardly, this mysterious person had just suddenly appeared, and started wreaking havoc, it was going to be extremely tough to get information on him. This was after all the post-apocalyptic world, where people were scarce, and information sharing was poor, to get to the bottom of a person's background, it was going to take more than 10 times the effort. However, seeing Wuyan Hong's gaze of fury, he could only harden his skin and reply to the affirmative. "Yes! My liege!!"

As someone cruel and harsh, those who dared retort or talk back to Wuyan Hong would almost certainly be reduced to a pile of bones. An Nishun naturally feared death, and he could only agree to embark upon this monumental task.

Only then did Wuyan Hong nod his head in satisfaction, as he thought to himself that once he gotten information on this Chinese man, he would be able to let him have a taste of his prowess.

"Liege!! Liege!! Emergency intel!!" Right at this time, a communications officer knocked on the door of the meeting hall with urgency as he called out.

"Come in!!" Wuyan Hong frowned, as a bad feeling arose in his heart.

The communications officer walked into the meeting hall and

reported loudly: "Liege! Nandu Town had been attacked by the Chinese Association. Li Xiaoli's troops have been totally annihilated. Every single one of the 156 soldiers have been wiped out!"

"WHAT???" Wuyan Hong's face instantly drained of colour, his right fist smashing fiercely on the table, causing a hole to appear in it.

Li Xiaoli was one of the generals under Wuyan Hong that could fight battles extremely well. The 100+ warriors stationed at Nandu Town were all elite soldiers as well. Just that single company could easily cause his 9th Battalion to be defeated casually, and they had finished their fortifications of Nandu Town, without the assistance of any heavy weapons, even 2 infantry battalions would find it hard to breach the town.

An entire company of elite soldiers was actually decimated by someone, this was threatening to push Wuyan Hong off the edge. He had wanted to use this company as the core for a new battalion to be trained up that dared and could fight.

Wuyan Hong suppressed the fury in his heart with difficulty, as he stared at the communications officer and questioned harshly: "A thorough report!! I want a thorough report!! How did Li Xiaoli and the rest die?!"

Nandu Town was fortified, Li Xiaoli's company was also full of well-trained soldiers. Wuyan Hong could not wrap his head around how the entire company could be destroyed so easily, not even being able to resist before reinforcements arrived.

"It seems that an expert from the Chinese Association that could manipulate flames appeared. His flames easily killed the entire company of Li Xiaoli." The communications officer hesitated a while, before giving what he knew: "Based on the reports of the survivors who managed to escape, the expert was called Yue Zhong."



Wu Dahui was currently frowning as he thought to himself, before suddenly turning to Wuyan Hong and said: "Flame Manipulation? That's right! Liege, the Chinese expert who killed Dayang and the rest was also an expert who could manipulate flames. It seems that Yue Zhong, must be the person who killed Dayang and had launched an ambush on the 5th, 7th and 9th Battalions!"

Wuyan Hong's eyes flashed with an incredible violent gleam, as he ordered his police chief: "Yue Zhong!! Seems like he has thrown his weight in with the Chinese Association!!! God damn you Chinese Association. I'll never forgive you bunch of animals!!!! Ma Cunxiang, go catch 200 Chinese dogs to be executed!! Since that Chinese dog Yue Zhong dare to kill our noble soldiers of the Great Empire of Vietnam, I'll kill his fellow country dogs!!"

Ma Cunxiang's eyes flashed, as he replied with respect: "Yes! Liege!"

In Tooth County, there were 2,500 Chinese survivors. These Chinese survivors were either from overseas, while some were absorbed by Wuyan Hong after he attacked Friendship Town. In fact, the total number of Chinese that Wuyan Hong had captured once numbered in the 6,000s, but after the different torture and torment, there were only 2,500 left.

If it wasn't for the fact that he needed the Chinese males as slaves to do the hard labour, and the Chinese females to be treated as playthings, he would have killed them all long ago.

It was precisely because he had killed too many Chinese slaves, that he had to raise the issue of buying some Chinese slaves from Li Guangyi, in exchange for a huge amount of rations, just so he could replenish his ranks of work and sex slaves.

Wuyan Hong's eyes darted about with a ferocity, as he gritted his teeth and barked: "An Nishun, go and check the current location of the Chinese Association. This time, once I know where they are,

I'm gonna make sure they're wiped out!!"

An Nishun immediately replied respectfully: "Yes! Liege!"

Under Wuyan Hong's commands, the various reconnaissance and intelligence soldiers set out as they made their way to the different locations of the Chinese Association.

The Wolf Fang Battalion soldiers were also sent out, specially to check the surrounding towns, to search for traces of Yue Zhong and the Chinese Association.

Wuyan Hong also ceased his training in the woods, and instead, he started arranging for the genocide of the Chinese.

Under the pressure and forceful suppression of the Great Empire of Vietnam, the surrounding Chinese factions were smashed. The Chinese survivors were all captured and became Wuyan Hong's slaves. The difference in power of both sides were too great, up against an absolute power, the Chinese had no way of retaliating.

As for Yue Zhong, who had conquered Nandu Town and exterminated the troops of Li Xiaoli, he brought the spoils of war and survivors out and joined the rest of Wei Ningguo's troop. After that, they abandoned the small town of the Freemasons, and everyone headed north, entering the forests to join with the Chinese Association.

"You're awake! How do you feel?" After concussing for 3 days, she finally blinked her eyes open, and immediately saw Yue Zhong beside her.

This lady felt extremely touched, before she closed her eyes and checked her body status, before revealing an excited smile: "Master, my Spirit has risen by 20 points. Now it's at 26 points!!"

"Good!!" Yue Zhong gazed at Ming Jiajia and smiled gently, before he pondered a while, and took out a bottle filled with Snake Birth Fruit Juice and handed it to Ming Jiajia before saying: "This can let you become an Evolver, if you feel that you can be loyal to

me for your entire life, you may drink it. If you feel that you can't do it, I won't force you. I can give you your freedom as well. I will put it bluntly first, if you dare to betray me once you gain strength, I will definitely not let you off!"

Ming Jiajia received it as her face showed an expression of resolution, and immediately gulped the contents, before using her sweet voice to say: "Master, rest assured, in this lifetime, Jiajia is yours."

# Chapter 341: Chinese Association's Conclave Meeting!

---

The moment Ming Jiajia drank the Snake Birth Fruit juice, she started to run a fever, and fainted yet again.

Yue Zhong left White Bones to stand guard over Ming Jiajia, before striding out of the room.

At this time, Li Guangguo and Zheng Minghe were training their subordinates, all the Chinese survivors and the Vietnamese survivors were following the strict training regime diligently.

Yue Zhong was Chinese, and in this foreign land where ethnicity was important, he could only find it in himself to trust his fellow Chinese. Therefore, every single one of the 700+ survivors, regardless of their gender, were drafted into his army, and were undergoing the strict training. These Chinese survivors had undergone so much torment and humiliation, everyone of them having braved the worst. They had no complaints with regards to Yue Zhong's training.

The women did not put on any dainty airs like the ladies of before the apocalypse, many choosing to go through the same tough training as the men. Those who did not go through the training, it was not that they did not want to, instead, their body constitution did not allow them to withstand that kind of rigorous regime.

Yue Zhong observed every single soldier who was standing under the hot sun and going through the training with a resolute look on their face, and he nodded with satisfaction. These women had all been on the receiving end of cruel torment, not only did they not eat their fill, they had to endure rape. Now that they possessed the chance to gain their dignity and strength, everyone grasped at that chance with a fervor, some even more outstanding than the male soldiers of before the apocalypse.

Yue Zhong was a bit of a male chauvinist, and believed that waging war was a man's job, and disliked pulling the women into it. However, in these parts of the world where the Chinese were the minority, he had no choice but to train them up and equip them as well. Otherwise, he would land himself in an awkward situation with insufficient troops.

Yue Zhong's establishment had a small number of Vietnamese survivors as well, however, these Vietnamese that he used were all people with families and loved ones. This way, he could lower their desire to betray him. Even then, he did not dare use too many Vietnamese, otherwise, if they all revolted, he would have a problem in his hands.

Yue Zhong looked at those Chinese survivors training diligently under the hot sun and he frowned slightly, and thought to himself in regret: "What a pity! If only there was a Type 2 Mutant Beast carcass!"

If there was sufficient Type 2 Mutant Beast Meat, then those survivors could swiftly regain their vitality, and could engage in tougher and more rigorous training, enhancing their battle potential.

At the same time when Yue Zhong was overseeing the training of the Chinese survivors, the upper brass of the Chinese Association was currently engaged in a conclave meeting.

Shu Wenyan lightly sighed: "He only disappeared for a few days, and suddenly amassed a group of over a thousand people. He sure has some ability!"

Yue Zhong had borrowed a 100 Chinese Association members, but came back with more citizens than the current Chinese Association, and at the same time, he gained a battalion and a company's worth of equipment. The upper brass of the Chinese Association were all dumbfounded.

Chen San humphed with a little discontentment: "Hmph!! That

group that Yue Zhong brought back is at most a gathering of some random trash, how can they compete with the elites of our Chinese Association!! He may have a thousand or more people, but we just need 200 to completely overwhelm him!!"

The troops that Yue Zhong had recently integrated were in fact a mob of untrained people, not only were they lacking in military training, they had no battle experience as well. They definitely could not match against the warriors of the Chinese Association.

Feng Qingtian had an imposing look as he retorted: "That may be true, but they had obtained plenty of equipment and weapons, and are currently undergoing training by Yue Zhong that monster. With just 2 to 3 months of training, they will become a formidable force."

Liu Niujin had a relaxed look: "Isn't that fine for us! They are also of one mind, and want to exterminate that Wuyan Hong. If they become stronger, and are our allies, the pressure on us would be greatly diminished."

Wuyan Hong was after all the greatest enemy of the Chinese Association. In Vietnam where there were Vietnamese survivors everywhere, even if the Chinese Association tried their best to expand, they would not be able to match Wuyan Hong. With enough time, provided that nothing goes wrong within Wuyan Hong's forces, they would only grow bigger and stronger, yet the Chinese Association would only become smaller and weaker.

Luo Mingyin had a deadpan face as he spoke grimly: "However, this Yue Zhong may not be some saint himself. The moment he saw Peng Lingbo, he killed him mercilessly and subjugated his forces. Once he fully established himself, what if he does the same to us as well?"

Hearing this, everyone fell silent. The moment Yue Zhong met Peng Lingbo, he had executed him, and forcefully conquered his subordinates, and even gave the kill order for those Vietnamese

survivors who had surrendered. All these proved that he was definitely a ruthless and decisive person, which led the upper brass of the Chinese Association to be nervous. It was true that Yue Zhong was Wuyan Hong's enemy, but who could guarantee that he would be the Chinese Association's friend for long?

Luo Yi's eyes flashed, and he proposed an extremely vicious idea: "Why not kill him now. Then swallow his people, how about that? Like that, our Chinese Association would have 4 battalion's worth of equipment and 3,000 some people. Even if that Wuyan Hong sent another 3 battalions to attack us, we would be able to defend and retreat."

The moment those words came out from Luo Yi, many of the officials felt their hearts shudder. If they could successfully pull it off, and swallow his subordinates, then the overall strength of the Chinese Association would increase by a huge margin. In this post apocalyptic world, other than one's own strength, everything else was superficial. Attacking other factions, swallowing other troops, it was not like the Chinese Association had not engaged in such acts before.

Shu Wenyan's brows lifted, as he sternly reprimanded: "No way! Luo Yi, we're Yue Zhong's allies. He had saved our skin once, we can't do something so immoral. Don't ever mention this again. The next time you do, you'll be subjected to punishment."

Hearing Shu Wenyan's words, there were a few of the officials present who broke into a relieved smile, some even let out a breath of relief. Not everyone had treacherous thoughts after all.

"Yes!! President!!" Luo Yi had a look of embarrassment as he replied, before keeping silent.

Niu Wei, who was in charge of logistics and supply, asked: "President! Yue Zhong has just sent men to reclaim the 2 infantry battalions' worth of equipment. Do we give them up or not?"

Shu Wenyan laughed lightly: "Of course, those equipment were

left by him here, under our care. Now that he's here to take it back, we have to return it. We can't offend our ally."

Niu Wei nodded a little reluctantly: "Yes!"

It was after all 2 battalions' worth of equipment. This represented a huge strength for any faction, Niu Wei was naturally unwilling to return those to Yue Zhong.

After the wrapping up of discussion on a few more matters, the rest of the upper brass dismissed themselves one by one, leaving only the 2 vice-presidents with Shu Wenyan.

"Wenyan! Why didn't you agree with Luo Yi's proposition! I want to know the truth!" Wang Xingchun looked at Shu Wenyan and asked in a low voice. He knew that the Shu Wenyan in front of him wasn't some upright virtuous and honorable man. Those kinds of characters could not possibly survive in this harsh world, let alone build up a power in an antagonistic country.

After Wang Xingchun heard Luo Yi's suggestion, he was extremely tempted, and wanted to get rid of Yue Zhong as well, and swallow his subordinates and equipment.

Wen Shuyan reached out to lift his cup of tea, as he gracefully took a sip, then replied mildly: "Xingchun! Let me ask you, if you want to kill Yue Zhong, how confident are you of accomplishing it?"

Wang Xingchun frowned, as he contemplated silently for quite a while, before replying: "Based on the reports from Zheng Qiang and the rest, if we were to attempt an assassination, 3 of us would have a 70% chance of defeating him. However, if he were to still be hiding more tricks up his sleeves, then it would be hard to kill him. Instead, we might accidentally alert him to our intentions. If it were a frontal confrontation, if we want to kill him, we don't stand a chance."

"Precisely! Defeating him may be easy! But killing him would



definitely be extremely difficult. If we're unable to kill him successfully, then he would become our Chinese Association's strongest enemy. Right now, we share a common enemy Wuyan Hong, killing between ourselves will only benefit that Vietnamese beast. Yue Zhong's troops are still weak, if he want to deal with Wuyan Hong, he also requires working hand in hand with us. Within the near future, he definitely would not do anything to us. Unless we're weak like the Freemasons and not willing to fight against Wuyan Hong. Therefore, at least until Wuyan Hong is wiped out, our allied relationship would definitely be sturdy." Shu Wenyan's eyes flashed with a strange glint, as he presented his conjecture on Yue Zhong's thinking.

In fact, Yue Zhong had not any designs on the Chinese Association, simply because the pressure of Wuyan Hong's forces was too huge. He needed a strong ally who could fight to attract the attention of Wuyan Hong. Peng Lingbo and his Freemasons was practically a joke, there was no use for them in the bigger picture, therefore he had casually exterminated them, and swallowed their forces.

Tiger Chu suddenly asked: "What if Wuyan Hong is truly wiped out by Yue Zhong?"

Shu Wenyan smiled dumbly: "If he could really exterminate Wuyan Hong, then our Chinese Association can just rely on him. This is Vietnam we're talking about, if Yue Zhong wants to take command of this place, he would need to rely on us Chinese. When we first established the Chinese Association, it was to fight for us Chinese to retain our dignity and livelihood. If he can do it better than us, then there's nothing wrong with throwing in with him."

Tiger Chu and Wang Xingchun pondered silently before nodding in agreement. If Yue Zhong could really exterminate Wuyan Hong, continuing to fight against Yue Zhong would be like a mantis trying to stop a car. Furthermore, Yue Zhong was Chinese, having another Chinese person as a leader, there was nothing wrong with

that. Of course, this was all based on the assumption that Yue Zhong did have the capabilities to take Wuyan Hong down. If not, they would not rely on a useless character as well.

After the meeting of the upper brass of the Chinese Association, they returned the items to Yue Zhong without much ado. Even the 300 tonnes of rations were sent to Yue Zhong quickly. With such handling, Yue Zhong felt a little taken aback, he had thought that there would be delays, even to the point of having to exercise some force to get them back.

After an entire day, Ming Jiajia was finally starting to stir from her coma.

"How's your condition now?" Yue Zhong sat at the window in Ming Jiajia's room. He looked at her who had just woken up, asking in a concerned tone.

# Chapter 342: The Only Chance!

---

Ming Jiajia lifted her head to see Yue Zhong sitting beside her, and her heart leapt with joy, before she closed her eyes to sense the changes in her body. She then quickly said: "Master! The 6 attributes are now like this, Strength 12, Agility 11, Spirit 43, Stamina 10, Endurance 10, Vitality 11. I've become a Spirit-based Evolver, and have learnt the Level 3 Skill [ Summon Shadow Wolf] and the Level 3 passive Skill [Affinity]."

After becoming an Evolver, every part of the body's constitution would gain enhancements. Even if it's a child, after turning into an Evolver, her current constitution would be better than other normal people. It was the case for Yao yao then, and is the same case for Ming Jiajia now, they both possess bodies stronger than even an adult.

When Yue Zhong heard that Ming Jiajia had obtained 2 skills, his eyes shined with delight, obviously Ming Jiajia was a genius who possessed some potential as well, that was how she managed to comprehend 2 skills at once.

Yue Zhong had used the Snake Birth Fruit juice to help others to evolve, but those Evolvers had only gained a skill upon Evolution, unlike Ming Jiajia who gained 2.

Yue Zhong's eyes retracted and he said: "Oh!! Let's summon out your beast to have a look!"

"Yes!" Ming Jiajia replied docilely, before waving her little hands, and activated her [Summon Shadow Wolf]. A demon wolf appeared noiselessly out of thin air, its fur entirely black as night, as it stared at Yue Zhong silently while it stood beside Ming Jiajia, giving off an impression that it would snap anytime.

Yue Zhong looked at the Shadow Wolf and asked Ming Jiajia: "What are its abilities?"

"While walking in the shadows, it's hard for people to detect it, it also has the [Pursuit] ability." Ming Jiajia thought for awhile, before waving her hand at the Shadow Wolf.

The Shadow Wolf and Ming Jiajia were connected through thought, and it walked to the shadows at a corner. The moment it came into contact with the shadow, its body seemed to twist and meld into the shadow on the wall.

Yue Zhong had kept his eyes focused on the Shadow Wolf, and even though he thought he was mentally prepared, he still could not see the Shadow Wolf. His heart went cold, and his gaze focused once again on the shadow, barely making out the existence of the wolf. As long as his attention was shifted away just slightly, he would not be able to see it anymore.

Yue Zhong asked Ming Jiajia: "How many of them can you summon?"

If this type of Shadow Wolf could be summoned in numbers, then in the dark of the night, they would be a fearsome force. It could stay hidden noiseless within the shadows, and could easily rip out the throats of normal people.

Ming Jiajia thought for a while before replying: "This Shadow Wolf requires 10 Spirit points per summon, maintaining it requires 2 Spirit points every 10 minutes. Therefore, my maximum capacity is 3 Shadow Wolves with a time limit of 10 minutes."

Yue Zhong continued asking: "Then what about the [Affinity] ability?"

The [Affinity] ability had never been dropped even after Yue Zhong had killed so many Mutant Beasts, it was definitely somewhat special.

Ming Jiajia furrowed her brows slightly: "This skill doesn't have much use, it only increases the goodwill that Mutant Beasts will have for me."

Yue Zhong continued asking: "Can it be used to tame Mutant Beasts?"

If it could be used to tame Mutant Beasts, then it was an useful skill. Otherwise, it was just of a small help.

Ming Jiajia observed her skill carefully, before replying: "Nope! It can only increase the affection levels, so Mutant Beasts would not attack me. However, the skill is useless against the more aggressive types and those that do not possess some intelligence."

Yue Zhong thought for a while, then said: "Alright! Time for breakfast!"

"Yes! Master!" Ming Jiajia replied obediently, before picking up the food beside her and starting to munch on it.

Chen Yao, Ming Jiajia and Gan Tao: as of now Yue Zhong had 3 Evolvers with him, but none of them were going to be of help against Wuyan Hong. As for the rest, Yue Zhong could turn them into Evolvers, but their loyalty was questionable.

"Boss Yue!" Zheng Minghe walked into the room and looked strangely at Yue Zhong who was sitting beside Ming Jiajia, as he saluted respectfully.

Yue Zhong nodded lightly and asked Zheng Minghe: "The thing I asked you to check, how is it?"

Zheng Minghe reported: "The surrounding areas have all been locked down by Wuyan Hong. Furthermore, I've received news from the Chinese Association that the nearby Chinese factions have been facing extermination by Wuyan Hong. Many Vietnamese survivors have joined Wuyan Hong's side as well.

Wuyan Hong had suffered a huge loss, with Yue Zhong having decimated 4 of his battalions. However, with just an order, he could totally wipe out a huge number of Chinese factions, while absorbing the Vietnamese survivors himself. He was recovering his power and extending his reach. After all, they were in Vietnam,

and as a Vietnamese, he had the influence.

Yue Zhong then asked: "Can the Chinese Association get messages to the rest of the Chinese factions?"

Zheng Minghe had a grim look as he shook his head: "Not possible! Those that the Chinese Association can reach have already been swept by Wuyan Hong. Those who have not been wiped out have all hidden within the forest, and communications with them have been lost."

"Seems like we're all alone?" Yue Zhong's eyes flashed, his heart felt like it was pressed down by a huge stone, as he softly spoke out.

In this area, there was only the Chinese Association and Yue Zhong's establishment that were still struggling in the forest. If things continued on like this, it would only be a matter of time before Wuyan Hong's troops discover them. Once they were discovered, they would be awaiting the full scale assault from his troops. Although the survivors under Yue Zhong all possessed high morale, their training was not sufficient to prepare them to withstand the attack from Wuyan Hong.

Trying to expand one's own power in a foreign land was simply too hard. Especially since they were at the northern areas where the Vietnamese still disliked the Chinese, if it were the south, Yue Zhong's expansion would have gone smoother.

Yue Zhong finally asked: "What about other intelligence?"

Zheng Minghe hesitated a while before saying: "I caught someone, from his mouth, I've obtained information that Li Guangyi had already allied with Wuyan Hong, and had agreed to be under him. Also, I'm unsure when it happened, but Li Guangyi had borrowed 2 battalions of soldiers from Wuyan Hong."

"Something must have happened!! This is also our chance!! Maybe our only chance!!" Yue Zhong frowned, as his mind started

racing.

"But what kind of event? Li Guangyi's also someone with 10 battalions! How could he lower his head to borrow from Wuyan Hong? Oh right! A zombie horde! There must be some movement from the zombies around Gaoping City. Otherwise Li Guangyi wouldn't be that nervous!!" Yue Zhong analyzed the situation and thought through the possible scenarios faced by Li Guangyi, before coming to this conclusion on the most fearsome enemy.

The zombies are the enemies of all humankind. Gaoping City itself had over 500,000 zombies near it. With only 10 battalions of 4,000 over soldiers, and the majority being new soldiers, coupled with the fact that there was still friction between the soldiers of the battalions, wanting to deal with a horde of 500,000 zombies would be a problem. In terms of power, Li Guangyi's troops could never compare to Wuyan Hong's troops, therefore that was the only plausible reason for Li Guangyi to submit to Wuyan Hong.

After thinking through all this, Yue Zhong immediately stood up and made for the Chinese Association's direction.

Shu Wenyan heard Yue Zhong's suggestions, and his eyes flashed with shock, and his brows furrowed: "What?! Yue Zhong, you want us to go with you and launch an attack on the north! Do you know what you're saying?! The north is Li Guangyi's territory. Right now, Wuyan Hong's forces are out there everywhere searching for our tracks. The moment Li Guangyi send some troops to block us, Wuyan Hong can cut us off from behind, and the end result is unimaginable."

Liu Niujin could not resist and exclaim: "Yue Zhong! Are you crazy? It's not that you're not unclear of our strength. Everyone of us added together would still not be enough to deal with Li Guangyi. As long as he deploys a few battalions, it would be enough to block us."

Everyone's gazes landed on Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong said in a deep voice: "I've not gone crazy! This is our only chance!! Li Guangyi had borrowed 2 battalions from Wuyan Hong, and I reckon that it's to deal with the zombie horde in Gaoping City. Under such circumstances, he most likely has no time to deal with us. As long as we can eradicate the forces sent by Wuyan Hong, we can break out of this encirclement and make for Guangxi from Gaoping City!"

Wang Xingchun frowned and looked at Yue Zhong: "Yue Zhong, you said it yourself. Li Guangyi had borrowed the troops on speculation that it was to deal with the zombie horde. What if it's not, and instead, it's in preparation to deal with us?"

Hu Yan stared at Yue Zhong: "If that's the case, I'm afraid our entire Association will perish! All 2,000-plus of us will become corpses!"

Yue Zhong looked at Shu Wenyan and replied mildly: "I know that! However, staying here is not an option! Just a bit more time spent here, Wuyan Hong's forces will come by sooner or later. By that time, unless we hide further in the forest where the Type 2's and Type 3's are, or we'll have to clash with him.

Based on our current power right now, we definitely would perish under either option. Going towards Gaoping City and launching an attack is our only way out now. My decision is set, regardless of what you guys say, I'll be attacking after a day. Wenyan, what are your plans?"

Fighting towards Gaoping City was definitely risky, Yue Zhong knew that with the slightest error, this establishment of Chinese would definitely die. However, it was the only chance they could afford to do something, otherwise, there would be no other chance for survival in the future.



# Chapter 343: Risky Infiltration!

---

Shu Wenyan frowned, pondering silently before replying: "Yue Zhong, your suggestion is too risky. I would like to consider it a few days before giving you a firm answer."

Yue Zhong laughed indifferently: "A few days? Sure! Once you're done thinking you can let me know. But I'll be leaving tomorrow! You best be giving me an answer tonight."

Yue Zhong didn't like dragging things on, since he had already made a decision on doing something, he wanted to do it well, the moment he left the Chinese Association's meeting location, he had already ordered for his men to prepare to evacuate and attack towards the North.

As for the different people in the Chinese Association, Yue Zhong knew that it was hard to convince them without enough evidence. After all, this operation to attack Gaoping City was indeed a risky one, it could be said that it was a gamble. If he won this gamble, then he could escape from this quicksand that was Vietnam, and gain access to the other side, which was home. If he lost the bet, then those survivors that were following him would die.

The moment Yue Zhong left, Wang Xingchun directly asked Shu Wenyan: "Wenyan, seems like he had already made up his mind to attack Gaoping City!! What do we do? Are we going to risk it together with him?"

Shu Wenyan contemplated a while before replying: "Let's wait and see!"

The Chinese Association was not willing to bear such a huge risk on a gamble, after all, it was a lot safer here.

Evening, Yue Zhong had just finished his dinner, and was taking a stroll in the nearby woods with Ming Jiajia.

"Come out!" Yue Zhong suddenly looked to a dark corner within

the forest and called out.

"How did you do that? That's twice you've discovered me!!" Zheng Qiang was slightly annoyed as he walked out of that dark spot, walking towards Yue Zhong as he asked curiously.

Yue Zhong chuckled and changed the topic: "How is it? The Chinese Association ought to have come to a decision yea? Is it to fight, or to stay?"

Zheng Qiang stared at Yue Zhong a while, before replying in a solemn tone: "Yue Zhong, you're really unsure if there is a zombie horde at Gaoping City right now?"

Yue Zhong looked calmly at Zheng Qiang and replied: "I'm not a god, how can I confirm what the situation is like over there right now. I've only come to a conclusion based on the available information."

Zheng Qiang had an earnest look as he tried to appeal to Yue Zhong: "Let's go scout the place out now? You have the Type 2 Mutant Beast as a mount, we can check the situation out in just a single night."

Yue Zhong thought for a while, before rejecting it: "No way!! I need to conserve enough Stamina and Spirit to deal with the fight tomorrow."

Zheng Qiang's suggestion was pretty decent, but he neglected one point, which was Yue Zhong did not trust the Chinese Association.

If Yue Zhong left to conduct reconnaissance, it was likely that the Chinese Association will swallow his subordinates. If he came back, he wouldn't be able to do anything. He couldn't possibly kill the members of the Chinese Association. These days, Yue Zhong did not step too far away from his people, because of his concerns.

Zheng Qiang was a little disappointed, but he continued trying to plead with Yue Zhong: "Then Yue Zhong, shall we wait till we confirm the intelligence, before taking action? As long as we can

confirm the authenticity of the situation, we'll set out together, and our forces will be stronger together."

Yue Zhong shook his head and extended his olive branch: "Speed is vital!! Who knows what might happen after today. I need to grab hold of this chance, otherwise, we'll definitely be wiped out if we stay here. Zheng Qiang why don't you come with me?"

Zheng Qiang rejected him straightaway: "No! I can't do that. The president has treated me well! I can't abandon him at this time!"

"I'll follow you!!" Right at this time, the beautiful Shu Tianya stepped out.

Yue Zhong looked towards Shu Tianya with a questioning gaze. Based on his abilities, Shu Tianya had actually gotten so close before being discovered by him, she was obviously not simple.

In this post-apocalypse, women had a disadvantage at survival. However, those who possessed authority and power, not one was a simple character. Shu Tianya had risen to an elder position, this was entirely due to her own strengths.

Shu Tianya smiled coyly at Yue Zhong: "Why? Am I not welcomed?"

Yue Zhong looked at that absolute beauty and replied with his own smile: "How is that possible! Tianya, you're really coming with me? Have you obtained your brother's approval?"

Shu Tianya replied in a bright voice: "He is he! I am my own person! The things I decide, why should I seek his approval. What you said earlier today, I do see your point and agree with it. Since it's going to be like this, why not try giving it a shot. When should we wait till? The enemy is stronger than me, only by a miracle can we break out of this."

Shu Tianya was a woman with strong views, and did not just agree with everything her brother said. During the establishment of the Chinese Association, Shu Tianya had helped laid quite the

foundation.

Yue Zhong laughed and said: "Great!! Then let's work hand-in-hand to slaughter our way out!"

Other than Shu Tianya, the Chinese Association had no one else willing to take the risk with Yue Zhong.

The 2nd morning, Yue Zhong led his 1,000-strong force, all having done with their preparations, as they started marching towards the north. Shu Tianya led her own force of 46 female soldiers as they joined Yue Zhong in their northbound march.

Within the forest, there were 6 camouflaged soldiers, their faces smeared with mud, and they donned helmets covered in green as they made their way carefully along the main paths and searched. They were elite soldiers deployed by Wuyan Hong, and they were specifically gathering information on the Chinese Association and Yue Zhong.

These 6 were experienced, and as they searched the forests carefully, they were meticulous to not leave their own traces.

Having searched extensively, they across this huge tree, when suddenly, a hail of bullets were fired downwards, causing 3 of the reconnaissance soldiers to die immediately.

The remaining 3 soldiers immediately dodged towards the side, as they ran for cover and raised their own guns to fire back up the tree.

"It's no use!!! There's no point in a useless struggle! Since you've been revealed, there's only one path left for you: death!!"

Zheng Minghe jumped down from the tree, dodging the bullets and swiftly threw a hand grenade towards one of the soldiers.

With a huge explosion, the grenade exploded and blasted the recon soldier into bits and pieces.

The faces of the other 2 soldiers immediately fell, as they started

firing like their lives depended on it.

As they were spraying their bullets, a Shadow Wolf suddenly appeared from the shadows, and immediately snapped its jaws around the throat of one of the soldiers, snapping his windpipe.

After killing the soldier in a single bite, the Shadow Wolf did not pause, and instantly pounced on the other soldier, ripping his throat off as well.

The sounds of gunfire immediately died down in the forest.

"What a strong summon!!" After the conclusion of the gunfight, Zheng Minghe walked out from behind a tree, as it looked at the Shadow Wolf with a complicated gleam in his eyes.

The might of this Shadow Wolf was simply terrifying, appearing like a ghost on the battlefield. It had noiselessly killed 2 elite soldiers. Even for someone like Zheng Minghe, to handle those 2 soldiers would have required a bit more time. That Shadow Wolf actually accomplished it in less than a few breaths of time.

Ming Jiajia, decked in a military uniform came stepping out from another part of the woods, as she asked Zheng Minghe: "Is it settled?"

"Yes! Miss Jiajia!" Zheng Minghe looked at Ming Jiajia with a complicated gaze as he replied.

Ming Jiajia's ability [Summon Shadow Wolf] had a huge potential on the battlefield, Yue Zhong had hence arranged for Ming Jiajia to be part of the recon group led by Zheng Minghe to be trained under him, allowing her to gain some experience and to be more comfortable with her command of the skill.

After dealing with those recon soldiers and a few sentries hidden around the area, Yue Zhong's group continued on their march towards the North-east direction. The moment Wuyan Hong found out his recon soldiers and sentries were killed, he would react quickly, hence this place was not safe to linger for long.

Yue Zhong and his troops marched on for an entire morning, before they finally heard the sounds of a battle from the north, it was obvious that there was an intense battle going on at the moment.

"Those are the sounds of heavy artillery!! That's right!! They are definitely fighting the zombie horde!!" Yue Zhong heard the sounds of the heavy artillery, his eyes flashed with excitement, as he summoned Wei Ningguo "Wei Ningguo! I'll leave things here under your command temporarily. I'll go in front and scout the situation."

Only by seeing the situation with his own eyes, Yue Zhong will then have confidence in his next step.

Wei Ningguo replied: "Yes!! Boss Yue!!"

Yue Zhong jumped onto Lightning's back as they shot forward like a meteor towards the north.

Lightning's running speed at its maximum was far beyond that of a sports car, and Yue Zhong came to the frontlines in a few breaths.

Only to discover that the zombie horde had surrounded Gaoping City, not leaving even space for water to trickle past, as the densely packed horde of zombies were engaging in a fierce assault on the walls.

The troops of Li Guangyi were currently making use of their covers and fortifications to help defend against the onslaught.

The horde of over 500,000 zombies was pretty fearsome, even with the defences and fortifications, under the constant attacks of the zombie horde, there were a few important bases that were overrun.

"Damn it!! The bridge is jammed!!!!" Yue Zhong rode on Lightning as they circled one time, at the same time killing a few zombies, as they discovered that the bridge towards Gaoping City

had been blocked by the zombie horde.

The horde of 500,000 were simply too many, stretching for miles. The commanding Z-Type had also split the horde in 2, one half moving towards the east, the other moving towards the west, as they both launched a 2-prong attack on Gaoping City.

By this time, the zombies and humans were engaged in an intense battle, the numbers of the zombies massive, there were even evolved ones within the mix. The humans had the aid of fortifications and powerful modern weaponry. A large number of the zombies were being picked off under the heavy assault from Li Guangyi's troops, although they had gained some ground, they didn't kill that many either.

# Chapter 344: Hunting the New Type 2 Hunters!

---

"No! If this goes on, even if we take an entire day, we can't pass!!" Yue Zhong eyed the battle in the distance as he frowned. The zombie horde had been blocked by the fortifications and defences placed by the humans, and in that narrow area, the horde could not press forward with its huge size.

Based on the current situation, it seemed the battle will at least go on for days.

"What's that?"

Just as Yue Zhong was in deep thought, amongst the zombie horde, 6 2m-tall shadows suddenly appeared as they leapt forward. Their bodies were covered with a weird mucus and had long tails. Their 4 limbs moved on the ground, with sharp claws extending from the ends. They shot forward like spectres, dodging the hail of bullets, as they came quickly in front of the fortress, and opened their huge mouths to spit out enormous green globs of saliva into the fortress.

Immediately, an agonized scream came resounding from within the fortress, as the heavy machine gun and its user that had killed over a hundred zombies was liquefied by the green spit.

"Level 50 Strange Beast: Type 2 Hunters. Possessing super speed, and the ability to spit corrosive saliva." Yue Zhong had just cast a glance at the 6 weird beasts, before the notification resounded in his head.

Those 6 Type 2 Hunters had a speed just slightly lower than Lightning, the moment they went all out, their speed was way above Yue Zhong's. These 6 strange beasts weaved in and out constantly on the battlefield towards the various defence points, and spat out their terrifying corrosive spit, destroying the



defences.

When the 6 beasts joined in the battle, there was a huge shift in the tide of the fight. As those defences were destroyed one after another, the horde swarmed in to attack those locations, overrunning those strategic points.

Yue Zhong looked at the horde as he whipped out his walkie-talkie, as he commanded Wei Ningguo: "Wei Ningguo! Think of a way to cross the nearest river. Do not get closer to Gaoping City anymore!"

The fighting capabilities of this 500,000-strong horde had exceeded Yue Zhong's expectations, obviously while humans were evolving, the zombies were evolving as well. The zombies could easily cause the small entourage that Yue Zhong brought to be decimated within seconds. Yue Zhong had no choice but to get his men to get across through other means.

"Yes! Boss Yue!!" Wei Ningguo started for the direction of the river after he received the order.

Amongst Yue Zhong's troops, there were Chinese survivors from Gaoping as well, and they were familiar with the surrounding territory.

Just as the 6 Type 2 Hunters were running around rampant on the battlefield, all of a sudden, one of the hunters was stopped in place, as a rocket landed on its body, exploding out, blasting that Hunter into pieces.

"They've finally made their move!" Yue Zhong's gaze retracted, as he looked towards the distance, and noticed a few strong Enhancers appearing at the forefront of the battle. Li Guangyi had finally snapped, and sent out his experts to hunt and kill those Type 2 Hunters.

If they allowed the 6 Hunters to do as they like, Gaoping City would likely fall within a day.

Yue Zhong observed the surroundings before he leapt down from Lightning's back and climbed up an overly large tree. Settling in, he pulled out his Bartlett Sniper and used it to scope the distance.

From the scope, Yue Zhong could clearly see about 15 Enhancers currently engaged in a fierce battle with the remaining 5 Type 2 Hunters.

Flames, ice spears, ground spikes, all sorts of enhanced abilities were being casted, as they were directed at the Type 2 Hunters.

Under those explosive attacks, the 5 Type 2 Hunters were reduced by 1 more. However, near those Hunters, there were over a hundred S2s. After 2 of the Type 2 Hunters had been killed, the S2s started charging towards those 15 Enhancers as well.

As they were caught off guard and 2 of their comrades were killed, the remaining 4 Type 2 Hunters started to give off an intense killing aura. One of them leapt forth in a frenzy, appearing behind one of the Enhancers, as it shot out its tongue, and pierced through the head of the Enhancer, pinning him to the ground, dead.

Another of the Hunter jumped on top of a wall, and ran with all its speed, suddenly appearing in front of a summoning Enhancer, as it spat out its corrosive spit to envelope the Enhancer, causing the Enhancer to be melted into a pile of bones.

The 4 Type 2 Hunters had instantly retaliated and killed a few of the experts under Li Guangyi, however, the forces of Li Guangyi still remained steadfast.

The leader of this band of experts was called Lei Kewang, an Evolver of Level 42. His entire body was encased in a thick armour of more than 10cm. He moved like a tank as he charged towards those Type 2 Hunters, as he surrounded himself with 8 pieces of sawtooth rotating at high speed, killing any unfortunate S2s that got too close to him.

Another Hunter shot out its tongue to pierce the brains of another Enhancer, and after it retracted its long tongue, it opened up its huge mouth to spit its green corrosive saliva at Lei Kewang.

Lei Kewang's eyes flashed, as the surrounding metal plates shot towards the green spit.

The moment the green spit landed on those metal plates, they caused some holes to be corroded through, forming a puddle on the ground.

Lei Kewang charged towards the Hunter without any decrease in his momentum, and along the way, the 8 metal plates still surrounded him and rotated extremely fast, mincing the S2s all around him.

When the Type 2 Hunter saw that Lei Kewang was charging towards it, its body flashed, and in one leap, it had jumped to the top of a building, as it quickly ran, before appearing behind Lei Kewang, and it shot its tongue towards him.

The tongue of these Type 2 Hunters could easily pierce a vehicle, but facing Lei Kewang, with such an impregnable defence, it only managed to create a huge dent in his armor.

Lei Kewang was knocked back a few metres after receiving that blow from the Type 2 Hunter, but at the same time, he slashed at the air towards the Type 2 Hunter in a claw-like gesture.

In that instant, steel beams exploded out from the building the Hunter was on, as they pierced into the Type 2 Hunter. The 8 metal shards that were rotating around Lei Kewang shot towards the head of the Hunter, shredding it into minced meat, causing blood to splatter everywhere.

Lei Kewang had taken down a Type 2 Hunter all by himself, and the number of remaining Hunters dropped to 3. The pressure on the rest of the experts was lessened considerably.

After Lei Kewang had killed that Type 2 Hunter, he also heaved a

sigh of relief. As long as they expended a little more effort, they would be able to bring down the remaining 3 Hunters.

Peng! The gunshot rang out, just as Lei Kewang had relaxed, as one of the Strength-based Enhancers found a new hole in his brain, as he dropped to the ground lifelessly.

"Sniper!! Damn!!" Lei Kewang saw his subordinate's brains blow apart and could not help but curse out loud.

Peng!

The gunshot rang out again, this time, an Enhancer with [Plant Manipulation] who was holding his own against 7 S2s died.

After having 2 of their Enhancers sniped, Lei Kewang led his team to quickly search for cover, as they retreated hastily.

The moment the team of experts retreated, they lost their control of the battle, and the attacks of the remaining 3 Hunters became even more ferocious. They charged forward at an insane speed, appearing behind those fleeing Enhancers as they shot out their tongues and pierced the humans brains.

A large number of those Enhancers could not withstand the blows from the Type 2 Hunters, and they were hunted like flies by the joint attacks from the Hunters and S2s.

"Damn it! Everybody, give your all to kill those 3 Type 2 Hunters!!" Lei Kewang had a desperate look as he hollered out madly, before charging towards one of the Type 2 Hunters.

The speed of the Type 2 Hunters were simply too fast, if this team of experts were to retreat, they would immediately be picked off by the Type 2 Hunters.

"Kill them!" A Level 34 Enhancer with the [Air Manipulation] ability shouted out as well. His eyes were both bloodshot, as he slashed towards the empty air, activating his skill and creating multiple pockets of air to restrain one of the Type 2 Hunters. At the start of the battle, it was he who had stopped the movement of

the first Hunter, allowing it to be blasted by the rocket.

Peng! Another gunshot rang out, and the poor sod had a new hole in his head, as he slumped to the floor, dead.

When even the Enhancer with [Air Manipulation] was killed, the rest of the Enhancers were forced to hide behind cover, and there, Yue Zhong had no way of dealing with them.

When an Enhancer had just entered a house, all of a sudden, a sharp bone blade had noiselessly cleaved off his head from the back.

"What....?" The last thought flashed by the brain of that Enhancer, as the last sight that met his eyes was the fiery black eyes of White Bones.

Yue Zhong suppress them from far, while White Bones ambushed them in near combat. This was Yue Zhong's simple choice of tactic. He wanted to make use of the zombie horde to take care of the experts of Li Guangyi. If he allowed those experts to live, then they would likely be the ones to chase after Yue Zhong and his troops. To prevent such an event from happening in the future, Yue Zhong had decided to make use of the zombie horde attacking Li Guangyi, to pick off the enemy experts one by one.

# Chapter 345: Using Enemy Monsters To Slay Them!

---

2 of the Enhancers retreated to a small room, only to face one of the Hunters that smashed through the window. It leapt to the wall, defying all sense of physics, and began climbing around the room.

Out of the 2 Enhancers, one was a Level 34 Strength-based Enhancer, the other a Level 32 Agility-based Enhancer. The Agility-based Enhancer looked at the Type 2 Hunter with shock as he hastily pulled out a gun and fired rapidly at it.

Agility-based Enhancers tend to prefer to use submachine guns, handguns and blades to attack. With their superior speed and reaction, they could exhibit the prowess of such weapons to the fullest.

However, this Agility-based Enhancer discovered that even when pushing himself to the limits, he could not catch up with the speed of the Type 2 Hunter. Countless bullets hit only the shadows of the Type 2 Hunter, none of them found their target.

In the midst of its constant jumping about, the Type 2 Hunter shot out its tongue, penetrating the head of the Agility-based Enhancer and pulling his body away! It then landed, and appeared behind the Strength-based Enhancer, before slashing viciously at his back.

The Enhancer was knocked down as he roared in pain. Pouncing and piercing through the Mutant Beast hide that the Enhancer was wearing, the Type 2 Hunter quickly dug out his heart. The Enhancers were no more.

The Type 2 Hunter gobbled up the heart of the Strength-based Enhancer in a single mouthful, and leapt out of the room, following its instincts to go hunt down another Enhancer.

3 Type 2 Hunters, with over a hundred S2s were currently

encircling the elite troop of Li Guangyi, as the experts fell one by one.

Peng!!

Following the sound of that gunshot, Lei Kewang received a bullet in his right leg, and even though he had such a thick armor protecting him, he was still affected by the intense impact.

Lei Kewang rolled once on the ground, before standing up swiftly.

However, the moment he stood up, a huge axe came swinging down towards him, breaking the sound barrier.

Lei Kewang's face turned pale, as he raised both his hands, and shards of metal came flying from his back, and formed a barrier in front of him.

When that huge axe landed on his shield, it caused a huge booming sound, and the shield was also hacked apart. After the shield was split in two, the might of the bone axe had been expended, and could not drive itself further towards Lei Kewang.

Lei Kewang raised his eyes only to discover White Bones staring at him with its White Bone Axe.

Lei Kewang had just seen White Bones, before 2 extremely sharp bone spikes sprouted out from its chest, and pierced him squarely on the chest, causing 2 huge 1cm deep indents, and sending him flying. If it wasn't for the protection of that flying metal armor, he would have been killed right then.

Lei Kewang swiftly stood up, only to hear a 'peng' sound, as a sniper bullet hit him right on the head, causing him to fly back again for another 3, 4 metres, as he crashed to the ground.

White Bones shot forwards like an arrow, its huge axe swinging viciously down on Lei Kewang. Those bone spikes from its body could not deal any life-threatening blows to Lei Kewang, and hence it could only rely on its huge axe.

Lei Kewang looked at White Bones charging towards him, and forcefully repressed the shockwaves caused from the previous blow to his head, as he raised his hands towards White Bones, and a few metal shards shot towards White Bones like rain.

Those metal shards could easily shred a person into pieces, and as they landed on White Bones, they caused bits and pieces of bone to be chipped away.

However, under the onslaught of those metal shards, White Bones did find it somewhat hard to advance. Lei Kewang seized his chance to jump to his feet, and dodged behind some nearby cover. Although Yue Zhong's sniping could not kill Lei Kewang, it was enough to wear away at his Spirit and Stamina. To Lei Kewang, Yue Zhong was also a huge threat.

White Bones blocked the assault of those metal shards, before quickly pouncing towards the place where Lei Kewang went for cover.

Lei Kewang's eyes turned frosty as he waved his hands, and the 8 metal shards once again shot towards White Bones.

White Bones saw the high-speed rotation of those metal shards, and it waved its huge axe down, causing 2 of the shards to be flicked away. At the same time, 6 bone spikes shot out from its body at the remaining 6 metal shards, also knocking them away.

When the 8 metal shards were sent flying, they rotated one round in mid-air, before shooting towards White Bones again under the control of Lei Kewang.

Atop the huge tree, Yue Zhong was still aiming at Lei Kewang's position with his Bartlett Sniper, not moving even a single inch. He, together with White Bones, had locked down Lei Kewang and prevented him from stepping out to save his other comrades. As long as they could block him from saving the others, the Type 2 Hunters and S2s would be able to deal with the team of experts.



At this time, various positions were beginning to fall, and Lei Kewang's position would soon be surrounded by countless zombies, which would cause him to expend more energy, after which, it would be easier for Yue Zhong to deal with him.

After clashing for awhile, Lei Kewang bellowed out with a mixture of Vietnamese, English and Chinese with some anxiety: "Friend from afar!! I am Lei Kewang, do you know what you're doing? Inside Gaoping City, there are 400,000 lives. Your actions are going to endanger the lives of those 400,000 people!! If you still have some humanity in you, let me leave!!"

Li Guangyi wasn't any good man as well. Although he did not engage in open slaughter of the Chinese like Wuyan Hong, those Chinese and foreigners under him did not lead a better life. He had caused the deaths of various families, and naturally had plenty of enemies. As he did not know which race this enemy of Li Guangyi was from, he could only use all 3 languages to shout.

Yue Zhong's tone became icy as he yelled: "400,000 people? Aren't they all beasts? Lei Kewang, your lot has already thrown in with Wuyan Hong right? Then to me, your 400,000 lives are worth that of animals! Just go and die!"

Wuyan Hong was simply too strong. If he gained these 400,000 survivors from Li Guangyi, he would expand even faster. If there was a chance, Yue Zhong would definitely not allow this to happen. As long as it was to spoil Wuyan Hong's plans, even if he had to send 400,000 people to their deaths, he would not hesitate to do so. Hard times required harder choices, but if he wanted to go home, there were things he had to do.

Lei Kewang heard the words and his heart fell. He knew that things were not looking good. Wuyan Hong had caused so many Chinese to die, his enemies were literally everywhere. Wanting to convince an enemy full of vengeance to give some leeway, was not going to be easy.

Lei Kewang fell silent for a moment, before he used a righteous tone to converse in Chinese: "Friend!! Your grudge with Wuyan Hong, that's between the both of you. You can't send 400,000 lives into the hands of the zombies just because of some hatred right?! That's 400,000 people!! They're not pigs or dogs, but like you and me, they're human beings. For this small grudge, you want to send 400,000 people to their deaths, don't tell me you don't have a single shred of conscience or humanity?"

Lei Kewang wanted to use the righteousness and conscience to sway Yue Zhong, and get him to change his mind. Under these circumstances, it was likely that the 400,000 people would fall to the zombie horde soon.

Yue Zhong responded coldly: "Conscience and humanity! You bastards dare to speak of this? How did you fuckers treat the Chinese, you guys know it. So, you can go and die!"

Yue Zhong was resolute enough to not let such words easily sway his decision.

Lei Kewang immediately fell silent again, it was true, they had treated the Chinese like pigs and dogs. He himself wasn't a decent person, in his own house, he had 3 Chinese beauties serving him. He only hoped that Yue Zhong was a good man, and would choose to respond enmity with mercy.

Seeing that his righteous words had no effect on Yue Zhong, he changed the direction of his appeal: "Friend! Amongst the 400,000 survivors, there are about 2,400 Chinese. They are your fellow countrymen after all. The moment the city is breached, they will face certain death too! Are you heartless enough to watch your countrymen die at the hands of the zombies?!"

Yue Zhong contemplated a while before replying calmly: "Then too bad for them! Can't blame others for their shitty luck!"

Yue Zhong was not a god! \*1

He had no way ensuring that the zombies could wipe the entire Gaoping City and still be able to save his fellow countrymen.

"You god-damned crazy lunatic!!" Lei Kewang cursed out loud, at the same time he saw the 3 Type 2 Hunters leaping out from rooms, covered in blood.

Seeing this, Lei Kewang felt like his heart was stabbed by a knife. He had brought almost ? of the experts under Li Guangyi to deal with this. As of now, other than him, the rest of the experts had been killed by those Type 2 Hunters and S2s. Their operation was a huge failure.

Lei Kewang sighed deeply, and leapt out from behind his cover, as he ran into the distance.

The speed of Lei Kewang was pretty fast as well, such that 2 shots from Yue Zhong did not manage to hit him. The distance between them was truly too far.

However, out of all the experts that came out to the forefront, ? have been killed and the remaining experts could only make use of the fortifications and covers to hold their position and defend.

Under the intense assault by the 3 Type 2 Hunters, the rest of the defences were soon wasted. With the ceasefire, the zombies started to push in, and enveloped the forces of Li Guangyi.

With that fearsome coordinated zombie charge, the newer recruits of Li Guangyi's troops collapsed, as they threw their weapons away and ran for their lives towards the other directions.

One by one, the various battalions collapsed and broke away from their positions, as they ran towards the west side of Gaoping City. If there were still experts remaining, with the protection of the defences and fortifications, they could still maintain a defensive stance. However, now that that experts have been eradicated, they had no more confidence or will to fight on, after all they were new recruits, and their training had not even

exceeded 3 months, few of them actually had any experience on a true battlefield.

# Chapter 346: Crossing The River!

---

A huge number of the evolved Zombies pounced over, knocking those Vietnamese survivors who were trying to escape, onto the ground. They opened their gruesome mouths and viciously bit down on those survivors, biting huge chunks of meat off. The battlefield was filled with the agonized screams and wails of the Vietnamese survivors, as blood and innards started to splatter everywhere. The entire place was engulfed in a mirage of hell, full of blood and terror.

Originally, if Lei Kewang could mobilise and lead the team of experts to take down the 3 remaining Type 2 Hunters, then the battlefield on the east side could still withstand the zombies for quite a while. It definitely wouldn't have collapsed so easily. However, with the harassment of Yue Zhong, the entire team was wiped out, and they could not support the frontline anymore, resulting in the current carnage and hell-like scene.

The sea-like horde of shambling, rotten corpses was swallowing up the east side, survivors and all, as they followed the bridge towards the west side.

Hong! An explosion rang out, and the huge bridge was blasted into pieces. Thousands of zombies on the bridge fell into the water, and the Mutant Beasts in the water opened their jaws as they devoured the falling meal with gusto. \*1

"Go!" Yue Zhong eyed the huge horde in the distance, as he jumped atop Lightning's back, and issued the order to leave. There was nothing much he could do now. Losing the positions on the east side now was a huge blow to Li Guangyi's troops, and it was going to be three or four times harder to deal with the horde now that he had lost a number of troops and equipment.

Upon receiving Yue Zhong's command, Lightning swiftly brought Yue Zhong out of the place.

Within Gaoping City, a middle-aged man looked at the huge zombie horde overrunning the east of the city with a steely expression. This man was precisely the leader of the Vietnamese Revival Army, Li Guangyi.

Li Guangyi turned his attention to Lei Kewang standing beside him and asked in a low voice: "That man was Chinese?"

"Yes! He was speaking in Chinese, therefore he must be Chinese." Lei Kewang had an exhausted look as he nodded. He had expended a huge portion of his Stamina in his previous battles.

Li Guangyi's expression turned ugly, the fury in his eyes were unmasked as he gritted his teeth and cursed: "Damn Chinese dogs, they can't see the big picture at all. They're going to forsake 400,000 lives, and help the zombies to raid us humans, what a bunch of animals!!"

A staff officer, L?? Sunwang standing behind Li Guangyi had a strange look in his eyes upon hearing those words. Li Guangyi was not as brazen as Wuyan Hong who had committed open genocide, but he wasn't a decent man himself. Under the leadership of Li Guangyi, the Chinese and foreigners all led a slave-like existence, and were lower caste members who were humiliated and tormented by the any Vietnamese. Numerous Chinese and foreigners from the European and American countries had killed themselves as a result.

Lei Kewang looked at Li Guangyi and asked directly: "Leader, what do we now?"

The eastern regions of Gaoping City had been overrun, and Li Guangyi's losses were amounting to about 4 battalions, a total of 1,600 or so fighters. At the same time, the equipment, ammunition and rations there were considered lost as well.

Currently, the western regions had the support of the elite troops and the 400,000 survivors could still withstand, however, without the support of reinforcements, Gaoping City would most likely fall

to the zombies.

Li Guangyi's eyes flashed, as he assured Lei Kewang: "Don't worry!! Wuyan Hong had promised to send some help!! As long as the reinforcements come, we'll be fine!"

If the troops from Li Guangyi and Wuyan Hong were to combined their strength, they would have so hope of withstanding the onslaught of the zombie horde.

L◆◆ Sunwang quipped in with a reminder: "Leader!! Wuyan Hong is a vicious man. If we're weak, it's hard to guarantee that he won't swallow us up."

When he heard that, Li Guangyi instantly turned silent. In this post-apocalyptic world, stronger factions absorbed weaker ones all the time. If Li Guangyi spent all his strength to defend agaisnt this crisis, Wuyan Hong would most likely turn around and subjugate them.

Li Guangyi eyed L◆◆ Sunwang and asked: "What good idea might you have?"

L◆◆ Sunwang walked to Li Guangyi and in a small voice, suggested an extremely cruel idea: "Let's leave a battalion to snipe the advance of the zombies. We will bring the rest of the soldiers and brothers towards Tuy◆◆n Quang Province. Since the zombies around the area have been gathered here, there must be less zombies elsewhere. It would therefore be relatively easier for us to breakout of this encirclement. As long as we have our firearms, finding a new base to establish shouldn't be an issue."

If it wasn't for the need to protect the 400,000 survivors, Li Guangyi could absolutely bring his men to slaughter their way out. Although the gathering of the horde was huge under the control of the Z-Types, they could not compare to the craftiness and adaptability of humans.

Li Guangyi's eyes retracted, as his sharp gaze remained fixed on

L❖❖ Sunwang, causing the latter to panic.

After a long while, Li Guangyi retracted his gaze as he slowly said: "Those 400,000 survivors are all our countrymen and brothers. How can we just abandon them just to escape on our own? If you're to mention this again, don't blame me for being merciless!"

L❖❖ Sunwang's back broke out in cold sweat, as he immediately said: "Yes! Yes!!"

Li Guangyi could become a leader in the post-apocalyptic world was precisely because he wasn't a benevolent man. L❖❖ Sunwang was extremely clear that he could lose his life if he were to mention such a preposition again.

After warning L❖❖ Sunwang, Li Guangyi then issued out an order solemnly: "Go gather all the Chinese, and issue them weapons, get them to fight at the frontlines. Those who dare to retaliate, execute them on the spot. Let the 2 battalions from Wuyan Hong guard the forefront. Gather the survivors and prepare them to breakaway. Tell them the moment they break free from the encirclement of zombies, escape in all directions, and not to move together. 2nd and 3rd Battalions to prepare and cover the escape of the survivors!"

Li Guangyi was extremely clear on the dire circumstances, and maintaining the defence of Gaoping City could last at most one or two more days. Breaking out of the siege was their best choice. As long as he brought enough troops to cover, the large majority of the survivors would be able to succeed. However, if they went through with this, they would have to abandon a lot of resources and items. At the same time, they could not move together, otherwise the huge source of humans would attract the zombies, and wipe them out.

L❖❖ Sunwang replied respectfully, and dismissed himself: "Yes!"

Li Guangyi looked to the distance and cursed under his breath:



"Damn Chinese dog!!!"

If it wasn't for Yue Zhong's meddling, Li Guangyi could still withstand longer, and could even kill a larger number of zombies, and hold out until Wuyan Hong's forces come. However, because of Yue Zhong, Li Guangyi's plans were thrown into disarray, and he was filled with fury towards Yue Zhong.

Zheng Minghe was extremely familiar with the layout and surrounding of Gaoping City and Lang Son City. Under his guidance, Wei Ningguo brought the 1,000+ survivors and the vehicles towards the west, where they arrived at the river that was in their way to Guangxi.

The river was about 6m wide, and it was just this 6m distance that was currently blocking the advance of this group of people.

"What do we do?" Wei Ningguo looked at the river helplessly. He was an Enhancer that reached Level 34, and had plenty of battle experience, but he lacked resourcefulness and the ability to adapt to the situation. It could be said that he had talent in combat, but as a leader, he truly was lacking!

Yue Zhong had selected Wei Ningguo as the temporary leader because he valued his performance and growing loyalty, and hence felt that he could be trusted. However, he didn't expect Wei Ningguo to be that indecisive.

As he hesitated, the 1,000+ survivors halted near the river, not knowing what to do.

Upon seeing this, Ming Jiajia went up to Wei Ningguo's side and asked: "Uncle Wei! Didn't Master ordered for us to cross the river? Why aren't we moving?"

Wei Ningguo looked at Ming Jiajia and dared not underestimate her, as he laughed bitterly: "Ming Jiajia, you can see for yourself. There're no boats here, I've no idea how to cross."

Ming Jiajia frowned, as she looked at the river before suggesting:

"We can construct a makeshift pontoon\*2 to cross. First we can get some people to cross over, before making use of the steel cables of the vehicles to create a paved way for the rest of the people to cross."

Wei Ningguo's eyes brightened up, as he praised: "Great idea! However, this can only transport the people over. The vehicles can't be moved! Without the resources, it would be hard for us to survive."

Yue Zhong had brought along several trucks, carrying loads of fuel, food, and weapons. These 3 were the most basic resources of a faction, and if they were to be abandoned, the 1,000+ people would not be able to survive past a few days.

Wei Ningguo had no ideas, and he did not mind seeking the advice of someone much younger than him like Ming Jiajia.

Ming Jiajia pondered a while as she frowned, before saying: "Let's get the people across first!! As for the vehicles, I'll think about it more!"

"Ok!" Wei Ningguo immediately replied, before assigning people to begin the operation.

Zheng Minghe tied a rope to an arrow, before aiming and firing it proficiently across and hitting a tree. He then made use of the rope as he brought along the metal cable to climb across. When he reached the opposite shore, he hammered the metal cable to the ground.

After nailing 6 metal cables to the ground, he then climbed atop those metal cables, and secured pieces of planks on them, and the simple pontoon soon took shape.

Yue Zhong had prepared beforehand, in case they had to cross a water body, and had prepared ample supplies. In one of his transport trucks, there were plenty of cables, ropes, wooden planks, and were fully utilized in this operation.

After the simple pontoon was constructed, the survivors started to make their way across.

When Yue Zhong rode Lightning and arrived, he saw that most of the survivors had crossed, and there were only a hundred or so left, with the vehicles still on this side of the shore.

# Chapter 347: Assault of the Type 2 Mutant Crocodile!

---

"Job well done!! Wei Ningguo!!" Yue Zhong looked at the remaining 100+ survivors waiting to cross the river, and his heart relaxed, as he praised Wei Ningguo.

Wei Ningguo turned red as he replied honestly: "Boss Yue! It wasn't my idea, it was Miss Ming Jiajia's. Zheng Minghe had constructed the pontoon."

Although Wei Ningguo was a coward, he was extremely honest. He did not take undue glory for himself.

Yue Zhong looked at Ming Jiajia with surprise, and approved silently in his heart.

Ming Jiajia spoke up a little dejectedly: "Master! The people are sent across. What about the vehicles? Jiajia's useless! I can't think of a method to bring the vehicles across!"

Those vehicles weighed over a few tonnes each, and the simple and crude pontoons could not possibly support the weight of those vehicles.

Yue Zhong replied confidently: "Relax! I naturally have a plan!"

Ming Jiajia looked at him half-believingly, as she stood quietly by his side, not saying anything else.

At this time, Shu Tianya came under the protection of 2 of her female soldiers, bringing with her a slightly scented breath of air.

Shu Tianya laughed brightly as she said: "Yue Zhong, are you racking your brains over the issue of getting the vehicles across? Shall I lend you a hand?"

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed with curiosity as he said: "Oh! What idea might you have?"

Shu Tianya reached out with her right hand, and there was a flash of icy light, before a piece of ice accumulated in her hands. She smiled at Yue Zhong, not saying a word.

"So you possess the [Ice Manipulation] Ability! Not bad, this skill definitely can get the vehicles across. I shall bother you then!" Yue Zhong looked at the ice within Shu Tianya's hands, and understood immediately the cause of her confidence.

As long as the river surface could be frozen over, then the dozens of vehicles can get across without hassle. After all, it was in the midst of autumn now, and the temperature wasn't high, with the Level 3 [Ice Manipulation] Ability, Shu Tianya could freeze a small part of the river with no issues whatsoever.

Shu Tianya chuckled lightly: "Yue Zhong, I can definitely help you! However, in return, you must give me 20 AKs, 2,000 bullets, 20 tonnes of food. Although I'm travelling with you, I'm not your subordinate, and not your vassal. We are just allies. If I help you, surely I can seek some form of compensation right?"

Shu Tianya was astute in her foresight, and could see that the Chinese Association was in dire straits. She had no way of convincing the rest of them to join Yue Zhong, and hence had only brought her trusted aides along. However, she would definitely not bow to Yue Zhong, and she wanted to carve a position for herself in this new world order through her own strength. In order to do that, she needed the necessary firepower and rations.

Yue Zhong grinned: "No problem!"

"Great!"

Shu Tianya was relieved that Yue Zhong was that easy going, and gave him a bright smile as well, before she walked over to the riverbank, and pointed to the water as she activated her skill.

Following the expenditure of her Spirit that flowed out like water, the surface of the water started to freeze, and the ice cap

grew and extended towards the opposite bank. It managed to touch the bank before it began to solidify further, creating a path atop the water.

"Quickly get your vehicles to move!! I can only maintain this for half an hour!!" Once the icy path was formed, Shu Tianya called out loudly as her entire body was drenched in perspiration. Forming this icy path had expended a large amount of her Spirit and Stamina, it was the first time that she actually froze a river. She could feel that while her [Ice Manipulation] ability had been raised to the 3rd level, freezing part of a river was still exhausting.

Yue Zhong immediately ordered: "Set out!"

The vehicle fleet immediately followed the icy path as they drove towards the other bank.

Seeing the vehicles crossing one by one, Yue Zhong suddenly felt a huge sense of crisis, and he immediately shouted out: "Those vehicles numbered from 33 onwards, immediately turn back! Vehicle 32, continue forward, get to the other side as soon as you can!!"

Hearing that, the vehicles all went into action, as the huge transport truck charged towards the other bank, whereas the other turn back and swiftly retreated.

Right when both trucks had just left the icy path, the river suddenly burst in a huge wave, as a gigantic beast charged into the icy path viciously, breaking it into pieces.

When the bridge was smashed into smithereens, Shu Tianya who was maintaining the skill could not help but spit out a mouthful of blood, as she fell to the floor. Her face was pale and she obviously lost some of her energy.

To those Enhancers who have to cast and maintain their skills, the moment the ability was broken, the caster would definitely suffer the backlash.

When the gargantuan beast in the water had destroyed the icy bridge, countless water beams were shot towards the skies, as a huge grey colour head emerged from the water, covered entirely in thick scales. An enormous crocodile emerged from the waters, as it emitted a terrifying pressure on everything around it. Its eyes had a ferocious glint, as it caught sight of Shu Tianya by the bank, and swam speedily towards her like a huge tank.

"Level 68 Mutant Beast: Type 2 Giant Crocodile. In the waters, it is definitely the tyrant. Its huge steel-like teeth could even crush any armored vehicles into pieces."

Shu Tianya looked at the Type 2 Mutant Giant Crocodile swimming towards her and her eyes flashed with a hint of despair. Its speed in the waters was simply too fast, and it could be in front of her in the next second. Based on her speed, she was definitely unable to evade it. She was after all not an Agility-based Enhancer.

Just as Shu Tianya was about to be swallowed whole by the Type 2 Mutant Giant Crocodile, a rocket was aimed and detonated on its head! The result was a huge explosion, and an even bigger cloud of steam enveloped the head of the crocodile.

Shu Tianya turned around to look, only to discover Yue Zhong wielding a rocket launcher aiming at the Type 2 Mutant Giant Crocodile.

"Quickly escape!! It hasn't died yet!!" Yue Zhong eyed Shu Tianya and shouted at her. After firing that fearsome rocket, the sense of crisis still had not abated yet.

Shu Tianya obeyed and without any delay, she quickly climbed up and escaped towards another side. She knew that Yue Zhong had enraged the Type 2 Mutant Giant Crocodile, and running to his direction would spell certain death for her.

The smoke of the explosion had not cleared yet, but the Giant Crocodile was already charging out from the smokescreen, its eyes filled with killing intent. It currently had a fist-sized wound on its

head, bleeding profusely. That was the damage done by that single rocket launched by Yue Zhong earlier.

Yue Zhong had just used a rocket launcher that was manufactured in Vietnam, and its power was not comparable to the PF98 that Yue Zhong usually used, however the little damage caused to the Giant Crocodile was shocking to Yue Zhong.

He quickly swapped out another rocket and aimed once more at the Giant Crocodile, before firing.

The Giant Crocodile also activated its own innate ability in the water, as a huge water arrow was slapped out and shot towards Yue Zhong.

With a bright flash, the rocket launcher detonated when it met the huge water arrow, causing a huge splash of water in all directions, yet it could not do anything to the Giant Crocodile within the waters.

With that huge wall of water, the remaining 20 trucks were all entrapped within the walls of the water flow. Under the innate control ability of the Giant Crocodile, the wall of water reached a width of more than 10m, separating Yue Zhong with the trucks from the rest of the troops.

The Giant Crocodile made use of its advantage in water to pounce towards Yue Zhong. If it was on the shore, its speed would not be able to match Yue Zhong and would most likely be eating Yue Zhong's dust. However, in the water, Yue Zhong could not even match a tenth of its speed, even when comparing before the apocalypse set in, a human would never be able to match a crocodile in the water.

Yue Zhong faced the terrifying Type 2 Mutant Giant Crocodile, as his eyes flashed, and he activated his [Bone Encompassing Armor], and White Bones turned into an orb of light as it transformed.

Just as Yue Zhong finished casting the ability, the attack from



the Giant Crocodile came, and opened its huge mouth, as it exploded up out of the water and bit towards Yue Zhong quickly.

When the Giant Crocodile bit down, its speed was at its maximum, and even Lightning which was almost peerless in Agility could not dodge such a bite, not to mention Yue Zhong in the water.

Yue Zhong raised his right hand, as he shot out a bone spike into the ground, before sending himself into the mouth of the Type 2 Mutant Giant Crocodile.

When the jaws of the Giant Crocodile snapped shut, most of Yue Zhong's body was within the mouth already. However, his left leg was instantly dismembered by those sharp teeth of the Giant Crocodile, and not even the Type 2 Mutant Black-Scaled Boar hide could withstand that impact.

Yue Zhong felt the intense pain shooting up from his left leg the moment it got bitten, and it caused him to shudder in pain.

The Type 2 Mutant Giant Crocodile then retracted its tongue, before sucking in a huge breath of air, intending to use suction to draw Yue Zhong towards its stomach.

At this critical juncture, Yue Zhong kept his cool while tolerating the pain, and with a thought, his shoulders shot out 2 incredibly sharp bone spikes that embedded themselves within the soft flesh of the Giant Crocodile, preventing himself from going further into the Mutant Beast.

The Giant Crocodile felt its throat being lodged, and it opened its jaws again, taking in a huge breath. A gigantic spray of water came rushing in and smashed onto Yue Zhong, causing the bone spears to snap, before washing him down into the noxious stomach....

# Chapter 348: Slaughtering The Type 2 Mutant Crocodile!

---

Facing the torrential assault of the water, Yue Zhong ended up in a stomach that was filled with dissolving slime. Each time the foul-smelling ooze dripped onto his bone carapace, it would release a Tssssssss' sound, melting at and corroding his bone armor.

At the same time when Yue Zhong just entered the stomach, 3 zombies that had been bitten in two were swallowed into the stomach as well. The moment those 3 corpses landed in the stomach, they were almost instantaneously corroded into a pile of flesh and blood.

"5 minutes, I can at most hold on for 5 minutes, before being dissolved. 3 minutes and the lack of oxygen will kill me!" Yue Zhong was currently encased by his [Bone Encompassing Armor], with not a single gap. It was pitch black everywhere, and the strong sense of danger was rampant all around him, yet he could still assess the situation calmly and think of a way to escape.

With a thought, he activated his [Devil Flame], and a few fireballs were conjured out of thin air, surrounding himself. The moment the Devil Flame came in contact with the stomach wall, it caused the acid to start burning, evaporating into clouds of gas.

Yue Zhong raised his right hand and shot a bone spear into one side, before retracting and bringing himself towards it.

He then expended almost all his Spirit, to channel it into the [Devil Flame] skill, as the fireball in his hands rapidly condensed into a 2m long Devil Flame Spear. He then used all his strength to pierce it into the stomach wall, bellowing in rage: "Break!!!!"

Under the condensing of the Devil Flame Spear with almost all his energy, the moment the stomach wall was penetrated, the flesh started to burn and was almost incinerated into nothing. It caused

a huge hole to appear in the wall of the stomach, at the same time, piercing through that incredibly tough scales that could withstand even the impact of a rocket launcher.

The moment the hole was created, huge amounts of blood started flowing from the wound, and the Giant Crocodile started to squirm and twist in agony.

Inside the stomach of the Giant Crocodile, there were countless huge rocks as well, and as the Mutant Beast thrashed about, the rocks in its stomach were churning about within as well, smashing and crashing around violently.\*1 Those rocks smashed into Yue Zhong, and the impact caused him to shudder, spitting out a fresh mouthful of blood.

Yue Zhong forcefully endured the pains all over his body, as he stretched his hand towards the hole he made in the stomach, and a bone spear shot out piercing into the ground outside. He caused the bone spear to retract, pulling himself out of the Giant Crocodile's body.

"Congratulations on achieving Level 51, you have gained 2 points of enhancement to be allocated!"

"Congratulations on achieving Level 52, you have gained 2 points of enhancement to be allocated!" Within Yue Zhong's mind, the sweet notification sound resounded. He quickly allocated them all into Agility.

"Have I killed it?" When Yue Zhong escaped out from the Giant Crocodile's body, with a thought, he quickly released the Bone Armor from his face, revealing his handsome features, as he rapidly took in large breaths of the fresh air, as his gaze landed on the corpse of the Giant Crocodile.

[Dedition: I'm not 100% sure but wasn't he called average looking in one of the beginning chapters?]

By this time, the huge area of water around the Giant Crocodile

had been dispersed, and its body flopped to the side, revealing the hole in its head that Yue Zhong had accidentally caused when he used the Devil Flame Spear to incinerate what he pierced. It was this fortunate blow that killed the Giant Crocodile.

Right beside the carcass of the Giant Crocodile, there were 2 skill books, a green treasure box and 200 Survivor Coins.

"Level 3 Skill: Water Flow Manipulation. An active skill, requires 5 Spirit and 5 Stamina to activate. Maintaining the skill requires 2 Spirit, 1 Stamina every 10 seconds."

"Level 4 Skill: Type 2 Water Flow Manipulation. Advancement of Water Flow Manipulation. Requires skill to be enhanced thrice, and 2 free skill points to learn this ability."

Opening the green chest Yue Zhong found: "Level 4 Treasure: Crocodile Tooth Saw Blade! Sharp beyond measure, possesses ability to cut through all metal. If user has Strength of above 100 points, one swing could render any weapon of Level 3 and below broken."

Yue Zhong kept the 2 skill books, before he observed the Crocodile Tooth Saw Blade in his hands carefully. The blade was double-edged and 1m long, the handle of about 30cm. The back of the blade was extremely straight, lined with serrated teeth. It was shorter than the Dark Tooth Blade by quite a bit, but it was a lot more suitable for close combat with its length. At the same time, the dual serrated teeth could be used to deal with tough armored creatures.

After doing all these, the sharp pains from his left leg finally registered, as he took a close look at it, realising that almost everything below the knee was gone. The bones could be seen and fresh blood was constantly flowing. The fact that he could still stand was due to the Bone Armor that White Bones had intuitively transformed into acting as support for Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong looked at his leg again, as his heart dropped: "The

entire leg is broken! This wound would require at least 2 to 3 days to recover fully."

With his leg broken, Yue Zhong would have to spend the next few days in a vehicle. It would be his most vulnerable time, and in this post-apocalyptic world, if he wasn't careful, he could be easily killed.

A flash of light, the Bone Armor was deactivated and White Bones appeared from an orb of light. Its entire body was covered in scars. If it hadn't been for the fact that it had always been absorbing the bones of other Mutant Beasts, it could not have withstand the blow from the Type 2 Mutant Giant Crocodile.

White Bones immediately rushed over to the carcass of the Giant Crocodile, and burrowed into its body, grabbing a bone and made use of its ability to absorb the essence, replenishing what it had lost and expended.

Yue Zhong stuck the Crocodile Tooth Saw Blade into the ground, using it as a crutch, as he observed the surroundings.

The Type 2 Giant Crocodile's [Water Flow Manipulation] ability had a wide area of effect, and many people and vehicles had been enclosed within the watery cage earlier. The moment it died, those people gathered again and made their way towards Yue Zhong.

When those people saw the dead Giant Crocodile that was killed by Yue Zhong, their eyes were filled with shock. However, when they caught sight of Yue Zhong's broken leg, and was supporting himself with the scary looking blade, many of them had a strange gleam in their eyes.

Wei Ningguo rushed over and saw Yue Zhong with a leg missing, and his face changed. In this post-apocalyptic world, only a strong leader could suppress the majority and make them listen. With a broken leg, Yue Zhong was as good as a cripple, and his battle prowess would diminish. It was hard for people to accept such a leader. After all, this wasn't Long Hai City, where it was filled with

Yue Zhong's supporters. Many of the survivors here had been forcefully drafted into Yue Zhong's camp, and their hearts were not set in stone yet. If Yue Zhong was truly crippled, many of them would change their tune.

Ming Jiajia looked at Yue Zhong, and her heart ached, as she swiftly came to Yue Zhong's side, and supported his left arm.

Zheng Minghe was looking at Yue Zhong's leg, and his eyes were filled with a complicated expression. If Yue Zhong was healthy and well, he was willing to follow such a strong leader to fight Wuyan Hong. However, since he had lost a leg, it made him feel conflicted.

Yi Shuixiong looked at the broken leg, his eyes brightened with joy, as he looked towards the river, and noticed that the ice bridge had already been destroyed. There was only the cable pontoon left, and the people on the other side would not be able to make it across in a short time.

Yi Shuixiong suddenly stepped forward and said: "Yue Zhong! You have lost a leg! I think that you're not suitable to be our leader anymore. Please hand over all your weapons, we can give you rations for 3 days, and let you leave alone!!"

Wei Ningguo's face turned pale, as he called out enragedly: "Yi Shuixiong!! What's the meaning of this? Our leader can only be Boss Yue! Are you trying to rebel?"

Wei Ningguo had betrayed Wuyan Hong and had been heavily relied on by Yue Zhong. He was considered Yue Zhong's number 2. He was extremely happy with his position, and was confident in Yue Zhong who had brought them consecutive victories.

Yi Shuixiong laughed coldly, pointing at Yue Zhong and said: "What rebel? Your words are too horrid! We were all Freemasons, it was this Yue Zhong who killed our leader, and forced us to listen to him. Now he's a cripple, how can he still lead us?"

He then continued with a passionate look in his eyes: "Dali,

Changsui! We can get Vice-leader Zheng to be our leader!! As long as the 4 of us work together, we can definitely bring them down!"

Under the instigation of Yi Shuixiong, members of the Freemasons started to gather with Yi Shuixiong, Zhou Dali, Ning Changshui and Zheng Minghe.

As a majority of the survivors had crossed over, of the about 60 people left, 40 were from the Freemasons. The remaining 20 people were the Chinese survivors that Yue Zhong had saved.

Those 20 who had been saved by Yue Zhong stood by his side, raising their guns against Yi Shuixiong and glared at them.

Shu Tianya brought her aides as they retreated from the standoff. She had just expended a huge part of her energy and stamina earlier, and wasn't in the best condition to fight. Furthermore, her relationship with Yue Zhong was not so close that she had to fight for him.

Yi Shuixiong looked at the 40 some soldiers with him, as he laughed coldly at Yue Zhong: "Yue Zhong, do you see this? This is the difference in our strength! You still have time to surrender, as long as you surrender, I can let you walk away with your life!"

# Chapter 349: Quelling The Insurgency

---

Yue Zhong did not so much as look at Yi Shuixiong, instead he sternly questioned Zheng Minghe in any icy tone whom he was staring at all this while: "Zheng Minghe! Are you planning to betray me?"

"No!!" Zheng Minghe was frightened by Yue Zhong's demeanor and couldn't help but blurt out. However, as he said that, he retreated two steps, and his face was conflicted, it was obvious that he had not sorted out his thinking yet.

Although he had retreated, he did not raise his hands against Yi Shuixiong, it could be seen that he was still struggling to decide which side of the fence he should be on. If Yue Zhong was healthy, he would naturally not falter. However, to everyone present, Yue Zhong was a cripple now, and at his weakest, if Zheng Minghe were to say he did not feel swayed, it would be a lie.

If he could take over Yue Zhong's establishment, then Zheng Minghe would have the equipment of 3 battalions, over a thousand people and plenty of logistics. It was a huge difference from his position when he was in the Freemasons.

When that single sentence from Yue Zhong had caused Zheng Minghe to quail, his gaze then fell to Zhou Dali and threatened him menacingly: "Zhou Dali! I recall that you have a 13-year-old son and an extremely pretty wife. You must consider this carefully! If you were to fail! I would throw your son into the horde, and your wife would be cast with several men. You can be made a cuckold a thousand times over! Your entire Zhou family will cease to exist!!"

Zhou Dali's expression promptly soured, as his body trembled uncontrollably, his heart full of torment. His son and wife were his bottom line. He had sacrificed god knows how much just to protect both of them. He had almost been swallowed up by the darkness of his heart a few times, but because of his wife and son, he found the



strength to carry on and live. They were his strength, and his weakness as well.

Yi Shuixiong hurriedly tried to placate him: "Dali, there's no need to fear him. If the 4 of us join hands, he's almost crippled already, what can he do to us? If he had the ability, based on his character, he would have killed us all."

Hearing Yi Shuixiong's consolation, Zhou Dali's face turned slightly better, but he pondered a while before saying: "I'm not concerning myself with the matters here. I just want my wife and son to be safe."

After which, Zhou Dali brought his 7 soldiers and threw their weapons down, as they stood at a distance, obviously not taking any side.

Yue Zhong then turned to look at Ning Changshui.

Ning Changshui did not even wait for Yue Zhong to speak, and immediately opened his mouth in a self-righteous manner: "Yue Zhong, you're overbearing and vicious. You kill without discrimination, and even kill captives. You killed our leader of the Freemasons....."

"Your bullshit annoys me!! Die!" Yue Zhong's gaze turned icy, and without waiting for Ning Changshui to finish talking, he pulled out his Stinger and fired a shot at his brain.

Peng! The gun shot resounded out and Ning Changshui's brain was immediately blasted apart, as red and white matter splattered onto the ground.

After killing Ning Changshui with one shot, he immediately activated his [Art of Fear] on Yi Shuixiong, and a horrifying Spirit attack engulfed his mind, bringing all sorts of cruel and tormenting hallucinations with it, causing his face to contort with fear and his body trembled. Yue Zhong grabbed onto his body in that instant, and swiftly fired another shot at his head.

With a peng, Yi Shuixiong's brains were also blasted apart, red and white matter dyeing the ground as well.

Yue Zhong then swiftly waved his hands and switched out his Stinger for a .05 submachine gun, firing it at those whom he had just called his subordinates a while ago. With his accurate and swift firing, before those ex-Freemasons even got the time to react, many of them had been shot dead.

Yue Zhong sprayed at those Freemasons, while casting a glance at Zheng Minghe and called out: "Zheng Minghe! Act now and kill the traitors! Otherwise, it will be you and your subordinates' heads to roll! All your family members will be cast into the Scum Battalion to be fed to the zombies!"

Zheng Minghe's face promptly turned to one of fear, and finally made the difficult decision, as he gritted his teeth and ordered: "Everyone listen up, kill the traitors!"

Under Zheng Minghe's commands, the tens of soldiers swiftly took up their arms and started firing wildly at the remaining Freemasons.

With the joint attack of Yue Zhong and Zheng Minghe's troops, the subordinates of Ning Changshui and Yi Shuixiong were all turned into sieves from the hail of bullets.

2 soldiers from Yue Zhong's side also suffered some superficial injuries from the stray bullets.

After decimating the troops under Ning Changshui and Yi Shuixiong, Yue Zhong stared coldly at Zhou Dali.

Zhou Dali instantly felt his body turn clammy, he never would have expected that Yue Zhong was still able to take down and suppress the rebellion even after losing limb. Every single traitor had been killed. As for those who were still alive, the soldiers under Yue Zhong stepped forward and chopped their heads off without any hesitation.

At this time, Lightning brought a hundred or so of its little brothers as they slowly walked out from the forest, coldly staring at everyone.

By now, after seeing Lightning and the hundred+ Mutant Leopard Cats, no one dared harbor any ill intentions.

Zhou Dali's heart felt heavy, this time, without any hesitation, he brought his men as they came in front of Yue Zhong and knelt down. They kowtowed while Dali said: "Zhou Dali was blind and ignorant, and didn't act immediately to put down the rebellion. Regardless of how Leader would like to punish me, I'm willing to bear it. However, my family is innocent, and I plead that on account of my lack of participation in the revolt, Boss Yue would be magnanimous and spare them."

Yue Zhong gazed at him and said indifferently: "Zhou Dali, you knew Ning Changshui and Yi Shuixiong were revolting yet you did not help to stop it. It is still a considerable offence, and I sentence you to join the Scum Battalion. After killing a 1,000 zombies or a 100 enemies, you'll be considered to have served your punishment. As for your son and wife, I will pardon them, are you satisfied with this?"

Zhou Dali heaved a sigh of relief, as he kowtowed profusely: "Thank you Leader for your mercy!! Zhou Dali is truly grateful!!"

As long as his own wife and son were fine, he was extremely satisfied. He was after all a Level 36 Agility-based Enhancer, killing a thousand zombies was only a matter of time.

Yue Zhong waved his hand, and threw the Level 4 Black Tooth Blade as well as the Crocodile Tooth Saw Blade to Wei Ningguo, saying: "Wei Ningguo, bring some men and go cut up that Type 2 Giant Crocodile!"

Only those weapons could possibly butcher the carcass of that Giant Crocodile at a decent speed. Otherwise, if they had the alternative of a chainsaw, they would then be able to breeze

through the task as well.

"Yes! Boss Yue!!" Wei Ningguo received the 2 weapons and quickly gathered 2 Strength-based Enhancers as well as a few other helping hands to dismember the Type 2 Giant Crocodile.

The 2 Strength-based Evolvers made use of the weapons to pry open the scales, while the rest of the people worked to slice and cut the meat and packed into the transport trucks.

Yue Zhong had brought along quite a number of transport trucks, a few of them being empty. Under the hardworking labour of those survivors, the transport trucks were slowly filled up with the meat of the Type 2 Giant Crocodile one by one. The hide was also retrieved in its entirety, and packed into one of the truck.

Wei Ningguo then came back to Yue Zhong's side and report: "Boss Yue, it's completed. However, Miss Shu Tianya had expended too much of her energy, and is unable to create the ice bridge again. Do we wait till tomorrow to cross?"

Yue Zhong replied in a low voice: "No need! Let's prepare to cross immediately!"

Every additional minute spent here spelt an additional minute of danger. The moment Wuyan Hong's forces came chasing, with Yue Zhong's current condition, it was very likely they would be annihilated entirely.

"Yes!" Wei Ningguo did not ask Yue Zhong how they were going to cross, the moment he received the order, he started to delegate the duties and prepared the rest to cross.

"Form a bridge!!" Yue Zhong saw that Wei Ningguo had left, before he ordered White Bones.

The eyes of White Bones flashed with its demonic fire after receiving the order, and it went to the bank, before reaching out both its hands to the other side, and secured all 4 limbs into the ground.

When it had laid over the river, its body started to change, and numerous bone spikes extended to form a huge Bone net, creating a platform to cross. Although this platform wasn't as comfortable as the ice bridge that Shu Tianya created, it was enough for those huge transport trucks to cross.

The moment the bone net was formed, the transport trucks drove and crossed the river, Yue Zhong directly hopping into one.

Lightning also brought its little brothers as they followed along.

After they crossed the river, Zheng Minghe acted as the vanguard as he led some of his followers forwards, scouting the road ahead.

Vietnam was filled with forests and hills, if there were no main roads, the transport trucks would find it hard to traverse the terrain.

Wei Ningguo also led the 2 Strength-based Enhancers who wielded the weapons that Yue Zhong passed them to cleave the way through, cutting down any logs, wild grass, trees that blocked the way.

The Black Tooth Blade and the Crocodile Tooth Saw Blade were Level 4 treasures, and exhibited their might in the hands of those Strength-based Enhancers. With their constant hacking and slashing, they created a road that those vehicles could drive through.

This forest wasn't without humans though, and the Mutant Beasts were manageable, after killing about 20 Mutant Monkeys, Yue Zhong's troops came across a small village after walking for about an hour and passing through the forest.

There were a few dozens zombies within the village, and Ming Jiajia summoned her Shadow Wolf to deal with those zombies, before everyone shuffled in to occupy the village.

By this time, it was close to evening, and the survivors were feeling exhausted. Yue Zhong ordered for the troops to rest, and to

start a fire for cooking.

Within that small village, the fire burnt brightly, and meat was cooked. Other than the captives of the Scum Battalion, all the survivors could get to enjoy the Type 2 Giant Crocodile Meat, replenishing their sorely lacking energy.

# Chapter 350: Homecoming!

---

Yue Zhong was currently resting in bed, and Ming Jiajia was kneeling by his side, carefully carving out the Mutant Beast meat, placing it on a plate for him to eat.

Ming Jiajia looked at the bandaged leg, her eyes darkened slightly: "I'm sorry Master! Jiajia is useless! Jiajia didn't manage to protect Master."

When they were facing that terrifying Type 2 Mutant Giant Crocodile, the Shadow Wolves that Ming Jiajia summoned could not do a single thing against it. Her battle ability was dependent on those summoned Shadow Wolves, and they couldn't even do anything, much less herself.

"There's no need to blame yourself, you've already done your best!" Yue Zhong ruffled her hair, and consoled her. When Yi Shuixiong had tried to revolt earlier, Ming Jiajia, Wei Ningguo and the 20-other survivors had not hesitated to stand by his side, providing that he had not yet failed as a human being.

When Ming Jiajia felt Yue Zhong stroking her head, she was like a little kitten that was petted by her owner. Her eyes wrinkled, as she broke into an extremely comfortable expression, looking extremely cute.

When Yue Zhong looked at the cute Ming Jiajia behaving like a kitten, the heavy feelings in his heart were swept away.

Wei Ningguo pushed the door open and entered. Discovering Yue Zhong comforting Ming Jiajia, he spoke out: "Boss Yue! Did you want me for something?"

Hearing Wei Ningguo's words, the little Ming Jiajia jumped up like a startled rabbit and bolted away from Yue Zhong's side, her entire face flushed red, as she sat at a corner and lowered her head.

"Could Boss Yue be a lolicon?" Wei Ningguo saw that Ming

Jiajia's reaction was so dramatic, and his gaze on Yue Zhong turned stranger, as he thought to himself silently.

After the apocalypse, society norms and order had collapsed, there were all sorts of characters who displayed their personalities under the absence of moral codes and laws. Wei Ningguo had come across several people with authority that had lolicon tendencies.

Another man came in, his age about 32, height of 1.6m, a clean shaven head and a muscled body. As he bowed, he saluted Yue Zhong and said: "Leader! Were you looking for me?"

This clean-shaven man was one of the survivors that Yue Zhong rescued from the hands of Li Guangyi. His name was Wu Yin. He was also appointed as a squad leader by Yue Zhong. He had trained harder and more diligently than others, and earlier, he had led the other soldiers to suppress the soldiers of the Freemasons.

Yue Zhong waved his hand, and 2 bottles of Snake Birth Fruit juice appeared. He passed them to Ming Jiajia as he spoke to the men: "Your performance today had satisfied me! This is a medicine that can allow a person to become an Evolver! Drink this, and after a day, you guys will become Evolvers!"

Evolvers!! When Wei Ningguo heard this, his face instantly changed, and a storm raged on within his mind. Evolvers were the apex existences amongst humans. When he was under Wuyan Hong, he had only come across 6 Evolvers. It could be seen how rare they were. Every single Evolver was a frightening existence, and they possessed battle capabilities far surpassing Enhancers. When all else is equal, if an Evolver were to face off against an Enhancer, the Evolver definitely had the advantage.

Wei Ningguo immediately swore fealty to Yue Zhong as he exclaimed loudly: "I'm willing to serve Boss Yue till the day I die!!"

"Wu Yin definitely won't fail to live up to boss' expectations!!" Wu Yin also couldn't suppress his own excitement as he loudly pledged, his heart overwhelmed with ecstasy. He had already



heard about the prowess of Evolvers to some extent: as soon as one became an Evolver, although one wouldn't be unrivalled under the heavens, one would still possess huge power and superiority that normal people would find it hard to strive for.

Yue Zhong waved a hand, and Ming Jiajia subsequently handed the two bottles of Snake Birth Fruit juice to Wu Yin and Wei Ningguo.

Wu Yin and Wei Ningguo both rapidly opened the glass bottles and drank all the juice in one mouthful. They had followed Yue Zhong for some time now and knew that he wouldn't harm them.

After the two had gulped down all the Snake Birth Fruit juice, it wasn't long before the juice's medicinal strength began to take effect. The two peoples' bodies began to feel feverish, and they instantly fainted onto the floor.

White Bones, who had been standing by, then came over and promptly snatched up the two, before throwing them onto a bed at the side to let them evolve by themselves.

Ming Jiajia watched the two people who were currently unconscious and glanced towards Yue Zhong, asking curiously,

"Master! Why don't you bestow a bottle of evolution elixir upon Zheng Minghe? He is much more capable than Wei Ningguo!"

Zheng Minghe's ability was not ordinary. His leadership, charisma and decisiveness were all far above that of Wei Ningguo. Apart from having great strength, Wei Ningguo couldn't compare with Zheng Minghe if he assumed leadership.

Ming Jiajia saw that Yue Zhong had let Wei Ningguo undergo evolution rather than Zheng Minghe, and she couldn't help but feel slightly baffled.

Yue Zhong remained silent for a while before saying lightly, "Zheng Minghe still needs to be observed for a period of time!"

Zheng Minghe's capability couldn't be doubted, but Yue Zhong

didn't know if his dedication was heartfelt or not. If Yue Zhong let him evolve, it would truly be dangerous if Zheng Minghe then conversely backstabbed him. After all, Zheng Minghe had been a member of the Freemasons: Yue Zhong's methods of subduing the Freemasons had been slightly too extreme, which was demonstrated by the armed rebellion of the ex-Freemasons fighters.

Ming Jiajia nodded in a half-understanding way.

After resting for one night, the huge vehicle fleet immediately set off early the next morning after breakfast, driving towards the border with Guangxi. Their army could only have the opportunity to expand within the borders of China.

In the Vietnam region, Yue Zhong found that it was truly too difficult to recruit reliable helpers. At the same time, most of the Vietnamese frontier's weapons arsenals had already been opened by Li Guangyi and Wuyan Hong. He couldn't obtain any weapons or equipment, making it very hard for him to be able to defeat Wuyan Hong's troops.

After leaving the small village, they marched for a few more hours. Ming Jiajia's Shadow Wolves finished off a dozen Mutant Beasts before Yue Zhong and the rest finally found a highway, beginning to move towards the northeast.

On a small hillside covered with weeds, four men holding large axes lay prone in the underbrush. One of them, a man who seemed slightly small in stature and figure, was holding a crossbow as he stared rigidly at an area of open land in the distance, where there was some maize placed.

There were quite a lot of bird species in this region; through the hunting method of simply waiting idly, these survivors had already hunted down quite a few sparrow type birds. However, if their luck wasn't so good and the maize attracted some larger Mutant Birds or an entire flock of normal Mutant Birds, then they

could only return empty handed.

"Don't move! Put down your weapons! Surrender immediately, or I'll directly shoot you!" A towering voice suddenly sounded out from behind the hunters, and six warriors suddenly appeared.

The six warriors instantly pounced forward and subdued the four who were holding axes.

The leader, whose figure was tall and sturdy, shouted out loudly in the Zhuang dialect, "Who are you people?"

Wu Yin's eyebrows furrowed slightly, and he spoke with some uncertainty in Chinese, "You people are Chinese?"

Wu Yin had spent most of his time living in Vietnam, so whilst he could understand Mandarin, he couldn't quite understand a dialect like the Zhuang type.

The robust man called out loudly in slightly broken Mandarin, " I am Chinese!!"

"Then good! Come with me to go see the boss! Our boss has something to ask you!"

Wu Yin waved and the warriors quickly escorted the four men to Yue Zhong's location.

"Who are you people? Where is this place?" Sitting on a wheelchair, Yue Zhong watched the four sturdy men being escorted over and asked lightly.

The four men looked left and right, and a hint of alarm flashed past their eyes as they saw the warriors holding AKs surrounding Yue Zhong. Three of the captured men's gazes instantly fell onto the sturdiest-looking man's body.

That man was watched by his companions for quite a while. Only then did he summon his courage and say to Yue Zhong,

"I am Wang Hualiang, a person from Dong Ping Village. Those three are Yao Hong, Shen Ming and Luo Qiang! This is Jing Xi

County's Dong Ping Village."

"Jing Xi County!! We've finally returned!!" Upon hearing those three words, Yue Zhong let out a slight sigh of relief inside his heart. They had finally returned to their home country.

Only upon returning to China did Yue Zhong and his party feel a little more safe. Vietnam was Wuyan Hong's territory, meaning that he had an enormous advantage there as someone Vietnamese. Within China, however, that sort of home advantage belonged to Yue Zhong's side; at least he would now be able to recruit many Chinese subordinates, and wouldn't be at a loss to enlist troops anymore.

Yue Zhong directly tossed a slice of cake to Wang Hualiang and asked, "Are there any large-scale gathering places in Jing Xi County?"

In this apocalyptic world, a slice of cake was even more precious than gold. Upon receiving the cake, a hint of excitement shone past Wang Hualiang's eyes. He hesitated for a while before saying, "In Long Teng Town there's a person called Chen Liang who's organised a large-scale gathering place. However, I advise you not to go there, for that Chen Liang isn't some good person. Luo Qiang is precisely someone who escaped from there, so he knows quite a lot!"

Yue Zhong directly tossed a slice of cake to Luo Qiang and said, "Tell me everything you know!"

Luo Qiang saw the cake in his hands and couldn't help but lick his lips, before nodding his head and spilling the beans, telling all the information he knew about Long Teng Town to Yue Zhong.

Long Teng Town's Chen Liang was a brutish hoodlum before the apocalypse. Afterwards, by some great fortune, he managed to awaken and became an Evolver.

It wasn't long before the town was recaptured by the nearby

governmental forces, and Chen Liang managed to make his way into the base. Relying on his abilities, he quickly became the sole tyrant of Long Teng Town. Two months ago, Chen Liang schemed and killed off most of the official military officers, killing all those who opposed him and thus forcefully seizing control over the entire Long Teng Town.

After seizing control, Chen Liang spent his days in a drunken stupor, viewing all the survivors under him as animals and regularly killing people. In Long Teng Town, apart from Chen Liang and his confidants, everyone else lived like walking corpses. Luo Qiang didn't want to live like this, and so he fled out of the place.

"Long Teng Town!" Yue Zhong muttered to himself for a while, before asking Luo Qiang, "In Long Teng Town, how many warriors and guns are there? What is Chen Liang's ability? How many experts does he have under him?"

Luo Qiang hesitated for a while before smiling bitterly, shaking his head as he said,

"I do not know any of this!"

# Chapter 351: Long Teng Town

---

Yue Zhong remained silent for a long time before saying in a low voice, "Since it's like this, then never mind! Wang Hualiang, take us to Dong Ping Village."

Currently, the top priority was to find a place to rest for this exhausted army of survivors that had continuously marched for two days.

Wang Hualiang carefully reminded him, "Sir!! There are a lot of zombies in Dong Ping Village, as well as many evolved zombies as well."

Yue Zhong replied lightly, "You don't need to worry about this. We'll deal with it!"

Wang Hualiang glanced at Yue Zhong's subordinates, who were all holding AKs, and he didn't say anything else. He led Yue Zhong's army in the direction of the village.

"This is Dong Ping Village right here!!" Wang Hualiang pointed to a small village in the distance as he spoke to Yue Zhong.

"Jiajia! You and Wu Yin go deal with the zombies in the village!" Yue Zhong glanced at the village and ordered the two behind him - Wu Yin and Ming Jiajia, who was pushing his wheelchair.

"Yes! Master!" Ming Jiajia obediently complied. Her small hand extended and a streak of light flickered past. Two Shadow Wolves soon appeared before her and they rushed towards the village.

After summoning the two Shadow Wolves, Ming Jiajia stood obediently behind Yue Zhong, with both her hands clutching onto his wheelchair. These two days, the little Ming Jiajia had been responsible for pushing Yue Zhong's wheelchair.

On the other side, Wu Yin held a Dark Magic Blade and took the lead to rush towards the village like a thunderbolt.

Yue Zhong saw that Wu Yin had already made a move. He immediately told Ming Jiajia, "Let's go!"

Standing at the side, Wang Hualiang's expression suddenly turned very shocked as he said,

"Sir!! There are over 300 zombies in there, are you really just going to send that one guy in?"

"Don't worry!! Let's go!" Yue Zhong did not explain further, and just ordered mildly.

Ming Jiajia pushed Yue Zhong's wheelchair as they made for the village.

The huge vehicle fleet also continued its advance towards the village.

Wang Hualiang and his group helplessly followed.

The moment they entered the village, Wang Hualiang and the rest discovered that there were countless zombie corpses that were either beheaded or had their throats ripped out by some beast.

The soldiers under Yue Zhong then gathered all the dead bodies together, as they set fire to the pile of corpses, burning them to ashes. If they allowed the dead bodies to remain in the village, even if there was no infection, it was definitely still a health hazard.

"Is this the strength of this fleet? Too fearsome!! They're really strong!" Wang Hualiang looked at the pile of corpses and his heart trembled. Just by sending one person, Yue Zhong had totally brought the village under his control, it was the first time that Wang Hualiang had seen such strong people.

Zheng Minghe looked at the bodies strewn all over town, his eyes flashed with a complicated gaze. His heart was full of regret as he thought to himself: "Evolver!! This is the power of an Evolver! It really is too amazing!! Damn it! If only I hadn't hesitated that day, I would have become an Evolver as well!!"

When Wu Yin evolved, he became an Agility-based Evolver. After evolution, he even gained comprehension into the Level 3 Skill [Agility Solidification]. After he became an Evolver, he also gained a Dark Magic Blade, and once he donned on some common System equipment, it became easy for him to slaughter normal Mutant Beasts and zombies.

In just a short span of 2 days, Wu Yin had already reached Level 17 from killing a huge number of Mutant Beasts and zombies. His combat skills were growing exponentially under the constant fights. Zheng Minghe knew that while he could still contend with Wu Yin now, the moment he became a Level 30 fighter, it wouldn't be the same anymore.

Furthermore, Yue Zhong was obviously more biased towards Wu Yin, Ming Jiajia and Wei Ningguo. The equipment he obtained from killing the Wolf Fang Battalion and troops under Li Guangyi were all passed to the 3 of them to be used. This added to their already growing power, while Zheng Minghe was still using the equipment from when he was still under the Freemasons.

Zheng Minghe knew clearly why there was such a difference in treatment. At that time when Yi Shuixiong had revolted, he had hesitated. It was because of this, that led to the loss of Yue Zhong's trust, and hence he didn't get to become an Evolver. At the same time, he lost out in terms of resources.

Now Wu Yin, Ming Jiajia and Wei Ningguo held 200 people's worth of equipments in their hands, and yet Zheng Minghe had 20 subordinates, but they each only had a single clip of ammunition.

When Yue Zhong entered the village, he quickly assigned some of the people to comb the entire place for usable resources. Then the goal was to gather them into the transport trucks, ready to be moved on a whim.

Soon after, a fragrant aroma wafted forth from the middle of the village. Other than the Scum Battalion and Woman Scum



Battalion, the rest of the survivors, be it Chinese or otherwise, all got to enjoy the tasty Type 2 Mutant Giant Crocodile meat. With that delicacy, their vitality and energy got replenished.

With just 3 days of eating this Type 2 Mutant Beast meat, the 1,000 or more survivors regained almost 80% of their health back! Many of the women were beginning to regain luster in their skin, while their sunken faces were starting to fill up. The men felt their energy and vigor returning to them. As for the children who had been malnourished and suffered as result, they were beginning to pack more meat on their bony frames.

Due to the existence of the Type 2 Mutant Beast meat, there were no deaths on this gruelling march for those survivors. If there wasn't the Type 2 Meat available, with the constitution of the survivors, a number might not have made it with the nonstop marching of 2 days.

"Can we eat as well?" Wang Hualiang looked at the bowl of rice and Type 2 Mutant Giant Crocodile meat in front of him, and he couldn't help but gulp his saliva.

Luo Qiang and the other 2 were also staring fixedly at their plates, their stomachs rumbling loudly. If it weren't for the fear of Yue Zhong and his armed soldiers, they would have gobbled up everything clean. It was hard to survive in this post-apocalyptic world, and the 4 of them had always lived each day as it came, never having eaten their fill in a long while.

Yue Zhong chuckled: "Help yourself! This is thanks for the intel today!"

In the short term, Yue Zhong was not lacking in food. However, in the long run, unless they could raid a national reserve, any faction would still be lacking in food.

Wang Hualiang quickly picked up the plate of rice and meat, as he started to stuff himself; it was a long while since he had eaten rice or meat.

Yue Zong picked up the slices of meat that Ming Jiajia had prepared for him, as he dipped it in coconut milk and ate it leisurely.

After Wang Hualiang and the rest had eaten their fill, they looked at each other and seemed to have come to a decision.

Wang Hualiang summoned his courage as he asked: "Sir, how should we address you?"

Yue Zhong replied: "I'm Yue Zhong!"

Wang Hualiang looked expectantly at Yue Zhong as he continued: "Sir, is it possible for us to join your team?"

It was at least ten times tougher to survive in the wild now compared to times before the apocalypse. The main reason was that there were countless strong Mutant Beasts in the wild, be it in the air, on the land, or even in the waters. There would be signs of them all over. Unless one was a high level Enhancer or Evolver, there would only be certain death if a human was to face any of these Mutant Beasts.

Even Yue Zhong himself could not guarantee that he would be able to survive if he was faced with the assault from a powerful Mutant Beast, much less any other normal person.

And it was because of this, that the 4 of them sought salvation and safety within Yue Zhong's fleet.

Yue Zhong called Zheng Minghe over: "Sure! However, joining me means that you'll have to adhere to my rules! Zheng Minghe, explain the rules to them!"

Yue Zhong would not force such stragglers to join his fleet, instead he let them choose. After all, a melon forcefully picked before ripening would not be sweet, this would ensure that the potential of people who harbored ill intents against him would be kept low.

When Zheng Minghe came over, he delved into the rules and

regulations almost immediately.

After a short round of discussion, Wang Hualiang and the rest all agreed to join. It was, after all, a place with some form of order.

Yue Zhong then called Luo Qiang over: "Luo Qiang! Do you know the way to Long Teng Town from here?"

Luo Qiang replied: "Leader! I know!"

"Very good! Wei Ningguo! Stand guard here! Wu Yin, Ming Jiajia, Zheng Minghe and Luo Qiang, the 4 of you will follow me to pay a visit to Long Teng Town!" Yue Zhong then threw away the blanket covering his legs, and stood up.

Zheng Minghe saw Yue Zhong standing and almost fell back in shock: "He can stand!! His leg had regenerated!! How is this possible?"

"Master! You can stand!! You've recovered! That's great!" Ming Jiajia saw Yue Zhong standing up, and her face was filled with joy.

"Leader truly possesses otherworldly abilities, you can even regrow a leg that's been broken! Truly amazing!" Wu Yin's eyes flashed with admiration and veneration when he saw Yue Zhong stand.

Wei Ningguo had a similar look of joy and reverence: "Too powerful! He truly is Boss Yue!!"

"Yue Zhong, your leg's fine! Congratulations!!" At this time, Shu Tianya came over, with a hint of soft scent in the air that she brought along. Her eyes flashed with a strange glint, when she saw Yue Zhong stand up, as she quickly laughed and said: "Can I join you on the trip to Long Teng Town?"

"Ok!" Yue Zhong looked at Shu Tianya as he pondered a short while before replying.

Long Teng Town was a small town that belonged to the border between Guangxi and Vietnam. At this moment, atop a hill near to

the town, there were 7 people standing quietly, they were precisely Yue Zhong's team.

"That must be Long Teng Town?" Yue Zhong pulled out a set of military grade binoculars as he looked towards the distance with them.

At the entrance of the town, there were 4 soldiers who stood about idly for half a day, before they put their guns down and began a game of cards.

Near the entrance, there were 4 gun turrets, but within those turrets, there wasn't a single gunman, this kind of defence was truly shoddy!

# Chapter 352: Entering the Town!

---

"It really is quite a mob!!" Yue Zhong glanced at the situation within the town and thought to himself.

This small town's defence was the most negligent that Yue Zhong had ever seen. It seemed to not have been fortified at all: if there weren't any hidden traps, then just one battalion of warriors would easily be able to take down this town.

"Let's go!!"

Yue Zhong brought Ming Jiajia and the others with him as they all put on a simple disguise, beginning to walk towards the small town shortly afterwards. This was China, not Vietnam, so Yue Zhong could pretend to be an ordinary survivor and thus sneak into the town. Had this been Vietnam, then Yue Zhong, who didn't know Vietnamese, would find it very difficult to sneak into any sort of strategic military location.

"Stand still right there! Who are you people??"

Right when Yue Zhong and his party had arrived at the town, one of the four soldiers who had been playing cards stood up, blocking Yue Zhong's way as he shouted out loudly.

Luo Qiang lowered his figure and explained to the soldier in front of them, "We are survivors from Dong Ping Village. We've heard that there's a survivor base set up by the government here, so we've come here to seek shelter."

That soldier carefully took a look at Yue Zhong and his party. As soon as he saw their backpacks, his eyes immediately lit up. He pointed at the backpacks and said,

"Take those bags over here. If you want to enter the base, all of you must first be inspected! No prohibited items can be taken into the base!"

Luo Qiang glanced at Yue Zhong, and upon seeing that he wasn't

opposed to it, Luo Qiang and the others immediately took off their backpacks one by one. They placed the bags onto a table at the side before opening them.

"Cakes!! Milk!! There's even cigarettes!! Good stuff!! This time I your father have really hit the jackpot!!"

Upon seeing the contents of the bags, that soldier immediately revealed an avaricious expression and he began to frantically scoop up all the items.

Another one of the soldiers also came over: upon seeing the things inside the bags, his eyes also revealed an incomparably greedy look. He immediately stretched out his hands and tried to snatch away some of the items.

"Let me have a look!! Fuck! Xue Gang! Don't you hog all of this good stuff to yourself!!"

The only benefit of being sentries at the town gate was that they could try to plunder the survivors who entered the small town. They naturally wouldn't let go of this sort of opportunity. The other two soldiers also surrounded the table, all of them stretching out their hands to snatch away the items and stuff them into their bosoms.

Upon seeing this scene, Yue Zhong's eyebrows furrowed slightly. These soldiers' behaviour was truly like that of a troupe of bandits.

Luo Qiang put on a timid expression and implored,

"Brothers!! Leave a bit for me, alright!! I'm begging you!! I still need those items to survive!!"

Xue Gang glanced at Luo Qiang and his expression darkened. He cursed angrily,

"Negligence! If you don't give me face then I don't want it! This daddy here is taking your things because he thinks highly of you! If you keep blabbering, be careful of this daddy shooting you! All of you, enter the town and get lost!"

Only then did Luo Qiang let out a sigh of relief, scowling miserably as he brought Yue Zhong and the others into the town.

"Slow down!!" Just at this moment, a soldier suddenly shouted at them to stop.

Upon hearing that soldier's shout, everyone in Yue Zhong's party felt their muscles beginning to tighten as they prepared to make a move and kill off those four soldiers at any time.

As soon as they made a move, then they would have to exterminate all the enemies who opposed them in a manner as fast and as powerful as thunder. If they acted rashly under a situation in which they didn't know the exact situation of Long Teng Village, then just one careless mistake would mean that Yue Zhong and the others might be captured in this place.

Luo Qiang bent over his waist as he asked that soldier softly in a timid voice,

"What is it? Big bro!!"

That soldier's eyes flashed with a silvery light as he began to size up Shu Tianya, who was standing behind Yue Zhong.

Even though Shu Tianya had already smeared quite a lot of dirt onto her face, her ample, sexy figure still couldn't be concealed by her clothing. At the same time, every movement of hers possessed a confident temperament and charm; she hadn't made an effort to conceal those yet.

As soon as the soldier saw Shu Tianya, he was firmly entranced by her temperament and figure. His eyes didn't leave Shu Tianya's ample bosom for even one moment.

He then pointed towards a small room at the side and smiled deviously at Shu Tianya, saying,

"Come with me to go take a trip over there!!"

"Tian Duming! How is it that you can even put an ugly person

like this into your eyes? It's very likely that this woman hasn't bathed for several weeks!"

"Tian Duming, you're truly hopeless!! Although this ugly woman's figure is actually decent."

"..."

The other three soldiers sat at the side, eating the food that they had plundered from Yue Zhong's team whilst laughing loudly at their companion.

Upon hearing those four soldiers' unrestrained laughter, Shu Tianya was so angry that her expression turned ashen. She almost felt like making a move herself, directly freezing those soldiers into chunks of ice. Even though she had always gone along with the current ever since the apocalypse, it was still the first time that she had been insulted by others like this.

Tian Duming saw that Shu Tianya stood there quietly, not moving, and his expression darkened. He berated her loudly,

"Fuck! You're still not moving! Don't you act like this, I've given you face yet you don't want it!!"

A series of thoughts went by in Shu Tianya's mind like lightning. She turned around her head to look at Yue Zhong, who seemed to have no intention of taking the initiative to save her. She subsequently steeled herself and quickly grabbed onto Yue Zhong's left arm, putting on the act of a pure and shy married woman as she said timidly,

"This is my husband!"

Yue Zhong's expression went blank for a moment. He didn't expect that Shu Tianya would actually push him out to use him as a shield.

"You're her man?" Tian Duming glanced askance at Yue Zhong and threatened disdainfully,



"Make your woman accompany me for one night! Otherwise, I your father will shoot you dead right here!"

Ever since the apocalypse, human lives were as lowly as those of ants. Tian Duming and the other soldiers were all criminals who had taken several human lives before, and they simply didn't see ordinary survivors as actual humans. Within Long Teng Town, apart from the people behind the scenes whom they didn't dare to provoke, they didn't put any of the normal survivors in their eyes.

Yue Zhong turned his head around to take a few glances left and right, discovering that there were barely any survivors in the vicinity of the town gate, almost making the place seem like a ghost town. Within a radius of 100m, there was only a sandbag and a front formed from wire-netting, in which a Heavy Machine Gun was positioned. It was just that the two machine-gunners were both in a deep sleep; apart from them, there wasn't anyone else paying attention to this side.

"Fuck! You dare to ignore this daddy here! I your father will shoot you dead!" Upon seeing Yue Zhong's mannerisms, Tian Duming felt furious. He immediately raised his gun and aimed at Yue Zhong. Up until now, Tian Duming had become accustomed to acting rampantly; there were barely any survivors who dared to anger him, and so Yue Zhong's behavior made him feel as if his dignity was being provoked to the extreme! \*1

As soon as Yue Zhong turned around, a cold radiance flashed past in his eyes. His right hand suddenly stretched out into a claw, clutching Tian Duming's throat. He exerted some force and his huge strength erupted, instantly crushing Tian Duming's throat.

A hint of terror flashed past Tian Duming's eyes, for he had never imagined that he would actually be killed in this way.

Yue Zhong ordered coldly, "Take action! Don't let them say anything! I want them captured alive!"

Wu Yin instantly burst forwards, rushing towards a soldier like a

cheetah. He chopped with his hand at the soldier's back, making the soldier instantly faint in one move.

Zheng Minghe was also a strong fighter with plentiful experience. Even before Yue Zhong had given out the order, he had already made battle preparations and chosen the most advantageous spot to fight from. As soon as he received the order, he pounced at the enemy, sending out two slashes with his hands in succession and knocking the other two soldiers unconscious as well.

Yue Zhong watched the two machine-gunners sleeping 100m away and both of his eyes concentrated on them. He activated his Art of Fear two times in succession. Two streaks of incomparably formidable spirit attacks broke into the two soldiers' minds, presenting countless terrifying scenes inside. The two soldiers were directly frightened to death.

In the process of dealing with these six soldiers, there wasn't any noise made at all.

Yue Zhong left Zheng Minghe and White Bones behind to take care of things outside, before dragging Xue Gang and the other two into the small room at the side.

Wu Yin directly took a bucket of water and poured it onto the three soldiers' bodies, thus waking them up.

"Be a bit more well-behaved! Otherwise, I'll directly kill you all!" Xue Gang and the other two had just awoken when they heard Yue Zhong's icy voice. At the same time, they felt the muzzle of a gun pressed against the back of their heads. They instantly became much more well-behaved and didn't start shouting and screaming, which might alert the other people inside the town. After all, warning the others wasn't as important as preserving their own lives.

Yue Zhong watched the three as he said coldly,

"I wish to know everything about Long Teng Town. If you people explain everything sensibly, then I can let all of you live. If none of you will speak, then you can all go die!"

Xue Gang instantly brightened up, kneeling before Yue Zhong and repeatedly kowtowing as he said,

"This humble person will definitely reveal all that he knows!! Sir, please ask whatever you wish! As long as I know the answer, then I am willing to tell sir everything about it!"

"I am willing to tell you anything!!"

"As long as I know the answer! I definitely won't conceal anything from you!"

"..."

The three soldiers constantly kowtowed and pleaded to Yue Zhong without any courageous spirit whatsoever. They easily yielded, only wishing to continue living.

Only then did Yue Zhong begin to inquire about Long Teng Town's real situation. The three soldiers also tried to outdo each other as they revealed everything they knew to Yue Zhong.

This Long Teng Town had about two thousand and several hundred survivors. Amongst them, four hundred were Chen Liang's subordinates, although most of them were nothing more than mob members like Xue Gang. The number of Chen Liang's confidants who could actually fight only numbered in the forties, who were all equipped with high-level Mutant Beast leather armor, making them almost invulnerable. At the same time, they were all Enhancers above Level 10. Only by relying on these 40+ aides and his own formidable fighting strength did Chen Liang become the controller of this small town.

Amongst the forty plus confidants, there were four high-level Enhancers who were all above Level 30, whom had been named by Chen Liang as the Four Great Vajrapanis.

The Four Great Vajrapanis were known as Strength King Ma Xiong, Fire King He Sheng, Sky King Yuan Zhen and Azure King Xu Jin.

After he had seized Long Teng Town, Chen Liang didn't really possess any management skills. The entire town had been neglected and ruined by his earlier actions, whilst he and his subordinates continued to spend most of their time playing with women. Therefore the entire town seemed somewhat dead, with all the good-looking and respected women not daring to leave their homes, or making themselves look filthy and smell bad on purpose, which meant that no one took an interest in them. If it wasn't for all the survivors being terrified of the tyrannical fighting power of Chen Liang and his subordinates, then the entire town would have long risen up in rebellion.

Yue Zhong had also gotten a very precious piece of intelligence from Xue Gang, that after Chen Liang had seized Long Teng Town, he had captured a company of border guards. He had only imprisoned them, with the wholehearted intention of assimilating the border guards. However, up until now, he had only been able to make 6 or 7 of the soldiers from the frontier army capitulate.

## Chapter 353: Shadow Wolf!

---

That company of soldiers were specially sent to subdue Long Teng Town. However, the moment they had conquered it, the commanding officer was set up and murdered by Chen Liang, and the rest of the soldiers were suppressed and locked up. They had no chance to exhibit their combat prowess.

"A company of soldiers! That's great!!" When Yue Zhong heard this news, his eyebrows relaxed.

Those who had received prior professional training were the best combatants. With this company as the core of his new battalion, he could quickly train up the other troops, and with the experience of a few more battles, the battalion would be able to stand on its own.

Yue Zhong stood up and directly ordered Xue Gang, "Go! Lead me to the prison!!"

Xue Gang's face paled and he glanced at Yue Zhong's companions awkwardly as he said, "Sir! There are 20 soldiers guarding the prison, whilst at the same time, there is also the most powerful Sky King Yuan Zhen standing guard. Wouldn't you say that perhaps you don't quite have enough people?"

Upon hearing this, Yue Zhong's expression sunk a little.

Wu Yin immediately bumped the muzzle of the gun against Xue Gang's head and said icily, "If we want you to lead the way then do so! Don't waste any words. Or do you want to have a hole blown in your head right now?"

Xue Gang was startled and hurriedly replied, "I'll lead!! I'll lead!! Let's go right now!!"

Wu Yin glanced at the other two soldiers and a cold light flashed past his eyes as he directly asked, "Boss! What should we do about these two? Should we kill them off?"

After experiencing so many things, Wu Ying was already no

longer a normal, naive person. Rather, he had grown to now become an iron-blooded warrior. In his eyes, those enemies' lives were as lowly as those of ants: if necessary, he definitely wouldn't hesitate to slaughter them.

Upon hearing this, those two soldiers' expressions instantly turned deathly pale as they repeatedly kowtowed towards Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong glanced at the soldiers and said lightly, "Knock them unconscious and tie them up! I've agreed that they can keep living if they cooperate. If they appear on the battlefield, then it's best to finish them off there!"

Upon hearing Yue Zhong's words, Xue Gang, who was standing at the side, let out a slight sigh of relief. Xue Gang was truly afraid of Yue Zhong 'destroying the bridge after crossing the river' and killing him after he had accomplished his goal.

"Yes!" Wu Yin received Yue Zhong's order and immediately knocked the two soldiers unconscious, before using rope to firmly tie them up.

"Go!"

The town seemed to be dead. There wasn't a single store open to do business, nor was there anyone wandering outside. Most of the survivors were hiding inside their homes, waiting for their deaths like walking corpses.

It was only in the meadows, which still had some life in them, that there were quite a lot of survivors surrounding the large trees. They were searching for insects, tree leaves, wild herbs and other similar things to eat, trying to eat their fill with great difficulty and continue surviving.

None of the survivors even glanced at Yue Zhong and the rest, for they had no strength left to pay attention to the matters of others. It was very challenging for them to even keep living. From time to

time, one would see human corpses on the roadside, the cause of death being either starvation or suicide. Even then, there was no one who paid attention to these corpses, nor was there anyone who could be bothered to dispose of them.

The entire town didn't have a single trace of vitality, emitting a rotten lethargy. Perhaps even without a zombie invasion, this small town wouldn't be able to hold on for more than a few months.

"This Chen Liang really is useless! To actually turn this small town into this state!" Yue Zhong saw the dead atmosphere in the town and his eyebrows furrowed slightly. This was his first time seeing such awful management, a town without any order whatsoever.

Back then, regardless of whether it was Qing Yuan County or SY City, although the lives of the survivors were all very bitter, there was still social order to some extent. There was even a hint of hope, of emerging vitality. Yet in Long Teng Town, there wasn't any liveliness whatsoever-almost all of the survivors were doing nothing more than waiting for death.

After walking for a while, Yue Zhong and his party arrived at the prison.

Outside the prison gate stood four soldiers holding Type 81 Rifles.

"Finish them!" Yue Zhong directly ordered White Bones in a low voice.

The demonic spiritual fire in White Bones' eyes flashed, and White Bones opened its right hand. Four bone spears explosively shot out and instantly pierced through the heads of the four soldiers, killing them.

"How terrifying!" Upon seeing this scene, Xue Gang felt a slight chill in his heart. Yue Zhong had actually ordered his subordinate to kill without any further hesitation whatsoever, and the deed

had been done instantly without any noise, leaving behind no traces. His heart went cold.

"Kill of all the guards inside!" Yue Zhong ordered White Bones in a heavy tone. Since he had already taken action, Yue Zhong decided to show no quarter.

After receiving Yue Zhong's order, White Bones rapidly rushed into the prison like lightning.

White Bones possessed speed five times that of a normal person; although it couldn't compare to Yue Zhong in this aspect, its speed was still far above that of an ordinary person. As soon as it rushed into the prison, bone blades began to shoot out violently one after another, beheading the prison guards inside one by one.

[Dedition: Fun fact: The average man jogs at a speed of 8.3 MpH which equivalates to 100m in 27 seconds. That means White Bones speed is at a shocking 41.5mph! Don't really understand? Usain Bolt's 100m fastest speed is at 27.79mph. You guys can do the maths from there.]

White Bones was truly too nimble. By the time one of the prison guards had reacted, it had already beheaded 13 others in succession. The remaining guards all raised their guns and opened fire with all their might at White Bones. It was just that when the lead bullets hit White Bones, all of them immediately ricocheted off!\*1 White Bones effortlessly riposted with bone blades he sent flying through the air, directly beheading all of the remaining few prison guards.

Once White Bones had killed the last guard, the door to a room opened and a topless man wearing just his underpants rushed out. This man was precisely Chen Liang's subordinate, one of the Four Great Vajrapanis-Sky King Yuan Zhen!

Yuan Zhen saw the dismembered bodies of the prison guards in the surroundings and his heart shivered. He berated White Bones loudly, "Who are you? To think that you dare to commit such



atrocities here!!!"

White Bones did not even waste any breath,\*2 instead, it raised its huge axe, and dashed forward with a heavy killing intent towards Yuan Zhen.

"You deserve to die!!" Yuan Zhen's eyes flashed, and he bellowed in rage, as he stepped forward, activating his "Ground Manipulation" ability. An incredibly sharp spike made of earth shot out from the ground towards White Bones.

The sharp spike had formed very quickly, and it pierced White Bones, lodging White Bones against the ceiling of the cell.

Sky King Yuan Zhen had the [Ground Manipulation] ability, which he had enhanced thrice; at the same time, he was a Level 39 Spirit-based Enhancer. His control of the [Ground Manipulation] ability was faster than most other normal Enhancers, and the speed of which it pierced his enemies was extremely quick.

Although it was the same skill, in the hands of different people, it could be utilized differently and exhibit varying amounts of strength. Sky King Yuan Zhen truly had the ability as a combatant, within the entire Long Teng Town, Chen Liang was the only person whom he had no confidence of winning against.

Yuan Zhen eyed White Bones that was pinned to the ceiling as he laughed coldly: "Trash! Just based on your ability, you want to lay siege on this place, truly audacious and not knowing your place!"

All of a sudden, his face turned pale, and instantly conjured up a huge wall of earth to defend himself.

At almost an instant later, gunshots rang out from a distance away, as 6 bullets landed explosively on the wall of earth. The bullets created 6 holes, penetrating them and exploded on the body of Yuan Zhen, sending him flying to the ground.

Yue Zhong waved his huge Dark Tooth Blade, and the wall of earth was instantly sliced apart, and Yuan Zhen could be seen

struggling to stand up.

"Still not dead? What a tough Mutant Beast hide! It must belong to a Type 2 Mutant Beast!" Yue Zhong eyed Yuan Zhen, and quickly made an assessment.

Only a Type 2 Mutant Beast hide could properly withstand the bullets from the Stinger, but even then, a low-level Type 2 Mutant Beast hide would at most minimize the damage, not block it fully.

Yuan Zhen had just pushed himself off the ground, when a sharp bone spike shot towards his head in a flurry from the ceiling.

Yuan Zhen reacted in a frenzy and activated his [Ground Manipulation] ability again, as he raised another wall of earth to defend himself.

The sharp bone spike pierced through 30% of the thick wall before it came to a stop.

White Bones then morphed its bones, and dropped down from the ceiling. As it fell it swung its huge Bone Axe viciously downward in an explosive attack on the wall of earth!

When that axe swung down, the huge wall instantly shuddered, before shattering beneath the enormous oppressive force.

On the other side, Yuan Zhen was frantically pushing himself and controlling the wall of earth to rejoin and lock the axe in place. At the same time, with a thought, he opened up 2 small holes, allowing him to view the situation on the other side of the wall.

Just as he wanted to observe, a Shadow Wolf appeared by his side noiselessly. Opening its huge jaws, it clamped down on his unguarded throat without mercy!

"When did it appear?" That was the last thought flashing through Yuan Zhen's mind as his throat was snapped in twain by the Shadow Wolf, fresh blood splurting all over.

The Shadow Wolf could hide itself within the shadows, escaping

detection from enemies. As Yuan Zhen had focused all his attention when facing against White Bones, the Shadow Wolf had made use of the chance to attack. If it were a fight between Ming Jiajia and Yuan Zhen, he might have ended the fight within a second.

With the death of Yuan Zhen, the maintenance of the spell was dissolved, and the earth wall as well as the earth spike immediately broke down, returning to their original form.

After Yue Zhong had finished off Yuan Zhen, he ordered Zheng Minghe to release the soldiers within the jail cell and gather them at the field.

Yue Zhong watched the soldiers, who almost numbered a complete company, and said in a heavy voice,

"I am Yue Zhong! It is I who saved you all! Right now you have two choices. The first one is that as long as you agree to not oppose me, then you can leave the town by yourselves. The second is to serve me, and go exterminate Chen Liang together with me. You will all henceforth obey my orders. I will bring you weapons, food, victory, glory and respect!"

Upon hearing Yue Zhong's speech, the soldiers from the frontier army remained taciturn for a period of time. They all looked at each other and began to discuss spiritedly. None of them understood exactly what sort of person Yue Zhong was - it would be almost impossible for them to immediately start obeying Yue Zhong. After all, they weren't like Gan Tao, someone who had suffered enough from the Vietnamese Army's torment and humiliation. As soon as he was rescued, Gan Tao had immediately been full of gratitude towards Yue Zhong.

A dark-skinned, very robust-looking soldier who was 1.7m tall stood out and said in a low voice,

"Hello. Yue Zhong! I am Shen Jianguang! We are willing to put an end to Chen Liang together with you. As long as you don't do

anything that will harm the people of Long Teng Town, we can follow your orders for one month. After one month, we will decide whether to properly follow you or not. Do you think this is ok?"

# Chapter 354: Grinding!

---

Yue Zhong heard their decision and directly agreed,  
"Fine!"

As long as these soldiers could serve as military instructors for one month, then they could train some new recruits for Yue Zhong. As long as they underwent a period of tempering and actual battle, those new recruits would possess better fighting strength. Real combat was the best method of training troops; only under the influence of real combat and the training provided in such a situation could such soldiers truly become elites.

Upon hearing Shen Jianguang's proposal, the other soldiers of the frontier army also agreed to it. After all, the outside world was currently extremely dangerous; even if Yue Zhong magnanimously let them go, without weapons, it would be very difficult for them to survive outside of this small town in the wilderness.

After incorporating these new troops, Yue Zhong then distributed all the different firearms seized from Chen Liang's subordinates to his new soldiers. Yue Zhong alone could wipe out one company of soldiers, so even if Shen Jianguang and the others revolted, he would still be able to suppress them.

Only after they had picked up the Type 81 Rifles and the ammunition did Shen Jianguang and the other 19 soldiers feel a little more secure in their hearts.

"Take me to Chen Liang's place!" Yue Zhong summoned Xue Gang and directly ordered.

Xue Gang saw how Yue Zhong had successfully attacked the prison that had over 20 soldiers guarding it so easily, and he felt even more reverence and respect in his heart,

"Yes! Sir!!"

After exiting the prison, Yue Zhong looked left and right, only to

his surprise, he didn't see any reinforcements. It must be known that he and his team had just made quite the disturbance inside the prison, with sounds of gunfire resounding all over the place. If this had happened in the territory of some other power, police sirens would've long erupted and the army would've driven over!

Zheng Minghe and Wu Yin took the lead, rushing in the direction of the most luxurious villa compound under Xue Gang's guidance. Chen Liang and his confidants resided precisely in that villa compound, living their lavish lives of debauchery in a drunken stupor.

The villa compound was surrounded by a 3m tall perimeter wall, which had high voltage electricity surging through the surface. Inside the wall, there stood four towering machine gun turrets, each of them defended by two soldiers.

At the entrance to the villa, there were another 8 soldiers standing guard.

Inside the villa itself, squadrons of soldiers were constantly patrolling the place one after another, making the security seem extremely tight. The defense inside this villa were even more rigid than that of the entire combined Long Teng Town.

Zheng Minghe glanced at the villa from afar, his eyebrows furrowing as he said,

"It seems that this place won't be so easy to attack!"

Xue Gang heard this and directly said,

"Sir, you needn't worry! They seem to be guarding the place tightly, but in reality, each and every one of them can't fight!! As long as you get rid of a few of them, then they will directly fall apart!!"

"Oh!!"

Zheng Minghe heard Xue Gang's words and his heart stirred. He directly took out an AK and released a torrent of frenzied machine

gunfire towards the entrance of the villa.

The sudden arrival of a metal storm of bullets instantly enveloped the soldiers patrolling at the entrance. In that dense rain of bullets, four of the eight soldiers protecting the entrance instantly collapsed onto the ground.

"Enemy attack!! Enemy attack!!!" The remaining four soldiers instantly turned incomparably frenetic. As they shouted loudly, they crazily ran inside the villa.

The soldiers stationed around the villa's four machine gun turrets similarly fell into a panic. They directly pulled the triggers, spraying out a myriad of flames into all directions, firing randomly everywhere.

Their shooting had no accuracy whatsoever and they hit absolutely nothing but thin air, wasting a huge amount of bullets in vain.

Yue Zhong's gaze flashed as he took out a Type 03 Rifle and fired two shots in succession at one of the machine gun turrets. The two soldiers stationed there immediately had their heads blown off.

After those two soldiers had been finished off, the other machine gun turrets promptly stopped firing. The 6 remaining machine-gunners all lay down on the ground, not daring to emerge in the slightest.

Wu Yin raked the villa entrance with gunfire using his Type 05 Light Machine Gun, wounding or killing the soldiers one after another.

The soldiers inside the villa compound all hid behind cover, not daring to show their heads in the slightest. They would only fire randomly at Yue Zhong's direction from time to time, not even daring to emerge.

"Defeat them!!" Yue Zhong ordered White Bones, who was standing beside him.

Upon receiving Yue Zhong's order, a fierce radiance flashed past White Bones' eyes. It directly rushed over to the villa entrance without bothering to dodge any of the enemy's bullets. A huge number of the bullets hit White Bones' body before they all ricocheted off. No matter how both sides saw it, a hint of fear flashed past everyone's eyes.

Xue Gang's expression paled and he thought to himself,

"How terrifying! To think that there's actually someone who's impervious to gunfire. With this sort of existence, just how many people would be able to block his assault!"

Shen Jianguang's expression also changed,

"Sure enough, these people are Enhancers with tyrannical strength. No wonder they dare to challenge Chen Liang with such few numbers. It's just still unknown whether their emergence will be good or bad to the people of Long Teng Town!"

Braving the dense rain of bullets, White Bones soon rushed up to the villa entrance. Four bone blades flew out backwards from its hands, and four human heads all flew into the air at once, with fresh blood splattering everywhere.

"I surrender!! Don't kill me!!"

"Surrender!! I surrender!! Please don't kill me!!"

"..."

Upon seeing this frightening scene, the soldiers inside the villa instantly lost all their fighting spirit. One by one, they either threw down their firearms and fled further inside the villa, or knelt down on the ground crying out loudly for mercy. They had no more determination to fight whatsoever.

White Bones didn't pay attention to the soldiers begging for mercy on the floor. Rather, it continued to crazily charge forward, constantly beheading the soldiers who were still resisting.



Bone blades and bone spears constantly flickered about, bringing forth huge patches of fresh blood. Those amongst Chen Liang's confidants who still attempted to resist were all easily beheaded by White Bones, or impaled to death.

Yue Zhong brought his party along as he followed behind White Bones, continuously subduing the terrified mobs of soldiers.

"That son of a bitch actually dares to misbehave here! Does he not want his life anymore?" Accompanied by a furious shout, a sinister-looking brute walked out from a villa and coldly looked down at the current situation outside. He was 1.8m tall and had a shaven head, with a huge Wolf Fang Club in his hands.

With a 'bang', the club-wielding brute instantly had his head blown apart, and his body fell backwards.

The smoke being emitted from the Stinger in Yue Zhong's hands still hadn't completely dissipated as he glanced at the brute and said coldly,

"You spout too much nonsense! Fool!"

Standing beside Yue Zhong, Xue Gang looked at the brute who had his head blown off, and his heart felt slightly complicated.

That brute was one of Chen Liang's Four Great Vajrapanis-Strength King Ma Xiong. Ma Xiong possessed a body full of monstrous energy: just one strike of his club could smash an L2 zombie's head into pieces. At the same time, he wore Mutant Beast Armor with astonishing defense capabilities on his body. Back when Chen Liang had first seized Long Teng Town, Ma Xiong had killed many other experts, yet today he had actually been finished off by Yue Zhong in one shot; he didn't even have time to announce his name. From this, it could be seen just how terrifying Yue Zhong's power was.

As soon as Ma Xiong had been killed, White Bones directly rushed into the villa in which he had resided. Very quickly, tragic death

cries could be heard from within the villa: evidently, White Bones was currently slaughtering those soldiers who posed no threat to it whatsoever.

Not long after, White Bones, who was covered in blood, immediately walked out of the villa and continued to act as the vanguard, rushing further inside the villa compound.

Under White Bones' devilish assault, the soldiers who had no hearts to fight all fell apart and surrendered. In fact, the entire way, all Yue Zhong and his party had to do was gather captives. They simply didn't encounter any sort of resistance at all. Those who did resist were insta-killed by White Bones in one strike anyway!

Yue Zhong and his team launched attacks the entire way with irresistible force. Once they had reached the center of the villa compound, however, the situation suddenly changed. One after another, rattan vines began to suddenly rise up from the ground, trying to engulf White Bones.

Nevertheless, White Bones was still a powerhouse who had experienced countless battles. Two bone blades erupted from both of its legs and easily chopped those two rattan vines in half.

Just when the two rattan vines had been severed, four more of them burst out from where White Bones had landed. With great precision, they shot towards all four of White Bones' limbs.

As soon as White Bones was caught by those rattan vines, it would have no way of moving at all. It would then only serve as the best target for the other strong enemies.

Those four rattan vines were insanely fast and unpredictable. It would be very difficult to dodge them even for Yue Zhong, who possessed the consummate speed of more than 10 people! White Bones only had speed five times that of a normal person, and so it simply couldn't avoid the assaulting vines. It was instantly entangled by the fearful rattan vines.

White Bones' eyes flashed with a demonic spiritual fire, and the bones that had been bound by the rattan vines turned into incomparably sharp bone blades in an instant. Its figure flashed and it rushed forward, directly chopping all the rattan vines in half.

Once White Bones had struggled free from the rattan vines, it extended its right hand and pointed to a room in the distance. A sharp bone spear flew out from its finger and instantly pierced through the head of the man inside the room, nailing him to the wall like a freshly framed picture!

That man was precisely one of Chen Liang's subordinates, the Azure King Xu Jin of the Four Great Vajrapanis. Now that Xu Jin was dead, all of the rattan vines disappeared without a trace, leaving nothing but several large holes behind, which showed that something had emerged from the ground just now.

Zheng Minghe watched White Bones kill Xu Jin with ease and his heart was full of astonishment,

"How powerful!! This White Bones is truly too tyrannical! To actually be able to easily behead someone as strong as this. No wonder he can represent Commander Yue Zhong's entire army! If there were no heavy weapons, perhaps even an entire battalion wouldn't be able to stop him!!"

Just at this moment, a short, ordinary-looking young man in his twenties walked out from one of the nearby villas. He had dyed yellow hair, ear piercings and was dressed like a gangster. With a hazy expression, he said coldly,

"Who is it?! Who dares to come to my place and murder people?! Fuck, do you not want to live anymore?!"

Xue Gang looked at Chen Liang, who was dressed like a gangster, and he couldn't help but inhale a breath of cold air. He retreated a few steps and said,

"Chen Liang!! This demon has finally emerged!!"

Yue Zhong glanced at Chen Liang and directly used the Stinger to fire a shot at his head.

With a 'bang', the Stinger bullet almost instantly appeared between Chen Liang's eyebrows.

Just as Chen Liang was about to have his head blown off by Yue Zhong, threads of green light began to rush out from the pit of his stomach. A small green bell flew out and landed onto his head, emitting many halos of green light that formed a protective layer around his body! The Stinger bullet bombarded the green halos, yet immediately bounced off....\*1

# Chapter 355: Battling Chen Liang!

---

"What's that?" Yue Zhong looked at the green bell on Chen Liang's head, and his eyes shined, it definitely was some kind of treasure.

"You dare to attack me!!! I will destroy you!!!" Chen Liang's features contorted, as he bellowed with rage and bravado, while his heart secretly palpitated with fear. If it wasn't for that Level 5 Treasure Bronze Spiritual Bell, he would have his head blasted beyond recognition.

"Go die!!" Chen Liang's expression was steely as he stepped forward, and threw an explosive punch towards White Bones.

White Bones seemed to have been assaulted with a huge weight, as it was sent flying back a few metres. That bone carapace that could withstand even the impact of a 12.7mm heavy machine gun was currently full of scars.

Shen Jianguang, Wu Yin and Zheng Minghe used their guns to fire wildly at Chen Liang, and the dense hail of bullets seemed to envelope him. However, those bullets were immediately stopped in mid-air! When the Bronze Spiritual Bell shot out a green beam to protect Chen Liang, it caused the bullets to fall to the ground, leaving Chen Liang unscathed.

"It's useless!! Hey you bunch of bastards!! Watch while, I, your father kills all of you!!" Chen Liang laughed grimly, and like a devil, he shot towards Yue Zhong and the rest.

"His attack has a limited range!" Yue Zhong looked at Chen Liang charging over as he quietly assessed.

"Retreat!" Yue Zhong barked out, as he waved his hands, and a PF98 appeared in them. He quickly took aim at Chen Liang and fired off a rocket.

With a flash, the anti-tank rocket exploded towards Chen Liang.

"Rocket!! Damn bastard!" Chen Liang looked at the rocket in Yue Zhong's hands and his eyes narrowed. He kicked off with both his legs, as his entire body rolled towards a small ditch.

The rocket brushed past Chen Liang's body, and exploded when it came into contact with a wall of a villa, blasting a huge hole in it.

"While the defence of that green bell is extraordinary, it seems that it cannot withstand the impact of a rocket!" Yue Zhong watched Chen Liang dodging his attack, and quickly came to a conclusion about the treasure.

"Fuck! Die bitch!!" With the shattering of glass, Chen Liang appeared from another room by jumping through the window. His eyes flashed with a furious killing intent as he threw out an explosive punch.

Yue Zhong was currently about 40m away from Chen Liang, yet the latter had actually thrown out a punch in mid-air!?! This punch was seemingly harmless; however, Yue Zhong did not dare be careless and raised his hands in front to defend.

At the next instant, a torrential energy wave came crashing heavily onto Yue Zhong's shoulders, bypassing the Type 2 Mutant Ferocious Pig's hide he was wearing. It caused him to fly back a few metres and his shoulder blades almost shattered.

"What a terrifying strength! This fellow!" Yue Zhong leapt to his feet, his gaze filled with shock.

Although Chen Liang did not know how to manage a town, and the people working for him were just a mob, he did indeed possess power. If it wasn't for Yue Zhong's own resilience, that earlier blow might have shattered his bones. Even with his Endurance, he still felt his shoulders go numb from the pain.

"Die!!" Chen Liang's eyes turned cold, as he laughed out icily. He pushed off with his feet, and he suddenly shot towards Yue Zhong as though he had grown wings and because of the leap, he was

moving at a speed 20 times faster than a normal person.

Right at this moment, White Bones flashed forward, and it blocked Chen Liang's charge, waving its huge axe towards him in a vicious manner. Regardless of the defence mechanism, maintaining it would require the expenditure of energy, and if there was a limit to its capabilities, as long as the force exceeded it, it could destroy the defence.

Chen Liang smiled coldly and in an instant, his fist came to a halt before bombarding towards White Bones, "Trash! You have such puny power, yet you still want to block this daddy's path! Let I, your father, blast your head apart!"

White Bones, who was standing a dozen meters away from Chen Liang, twisted its body slightly. The very next moment, its shoulder blades shattered and it flew backwards a dozen meters, before crashing into a villa and disappearing inside.

During that instant when Chen Liang had stopped his assault on White Bones, Shen Jianguang and the other soldiers all used their rifles to fire at Chen Liang in a frenzy.

Countless bullets hit the green halos covering his body before they all immediately ricocheted off.

"Trash! Go die!"

Chen Liang saw that they were firing at him and his figure flashed as he rushed towards one of the soldiers. In just a few breaths, he was already within forty meters of that soldier, and he sent out a punch into the void.

In an instant, the soldier's head was directly split open and exploded by that terrifying, tremendous force.

Upon seeing this horrifying scene, each and every person's expression changed greatly, and their figures instantly retreated.

At this moment, Chen Liang seemed like an unrivalled demon. Not only was he invulnerable to their gunfire, but at the same

time, he possessed incomparably terrifying killing methods. Although Zheng Minghe and the others had the advantage in numbers, very few of them possessed the means of injuring Chen Liang.

"Go die! Go die! Those who betray me should all go die!! I am an unrivalled existence!! Hahaha!! Haha!!"

Chen Liang let out an insane laugh as he repeatedly waved his fist.

Facing Chen Liang's terrifying and bizarre abilities, the soldiers were killed one after another.

Either their head was blasted apart, or a large hole was blown through their heart. Otherwise, they were hit directly in the waist and bombarded in half, and would start emitting painful cries on the ground.

With the protection of the Bronze Spiritual Bell, Chen Liang possessed the potential to single-handedly destroy an entire company of soldiers that did not possess any heavy weapons. This was the reason why he was able to terrorize the entire town even though he possessed zero governing ability.

"Animal!!!" Shen Jianguang saw his comrades dying in front of him, and his eyes turned bloodshot as he wielded his Type 81 rifle as he fired at Chen Liang in a frenzy.

A large number of the bullets landed on the green halo and ricocheted off, serving only to draw his attention away.

Chen Liang turned around and glanced at Shen Jianguang, before smirking coldly, and waved that fist of his that could snatch a person's life easily. At this moment, he felt a sudden surge of crisis, and he immediately shifted about 5m in mid-air, as a rocket flew past him, and exploded on another villa behind him, blasting a new hole.

"He has the [Danger Perception] ability!! What a troublesome



fellow!!" Yue Zhong put down his rocket launcher and eyed Chen Liang at the distance as he pondered.

Chen Liang mocked Yue Zhong with a cold laugh, and he shot towards Yue Zhong like a rocket, even though he hadn't make any movements, as he said: "It's useless!! I'm invincible!! Today, all you bastards are going to die at my hands!!"

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed, and he activated his [Bone Encompassing Armor] and [Shadow Steps], at that instant, White Bones turned into an orb of light and reappeared on Yue Zhong's body. Yue Zhong then pulled out his Crocodile Tooth Saw Blade and charged towards Chen Liang.

Both parties approached each other, and within a distance of 40m, Chen Liang laughed coldly again as he sent out a fist: "Trash! Die!"

Yue Zhong's gaze frosted over, as his body dodged towards the right, and a huge blast of energy brushed past his body, landing on the ground behind and resulted in a huge hole.

While Chen Liang's attack was extremely brutal, it was crude and simple, and Yue Zhong simply side-stepped with his boosted speed and evaded the blow, before continuing with his own. He quickly arrived in front of Chen Liang.

"Idiot!! Just die!!" Chen Liang looked at Yue Zhong who had charged in front of him, and he barked out a cold laugh, and sent another fist at him.

Yue Zhong had just thought of evading, but he felt a deadly premonition, and instead shot out 2 bone spears from his feet, sending him towards the sky.

Chen Liang's fist had just exploded out, and did not hit the 2 bone spears, but they shattered, turning into countless bone fragments.

"Air Cannon!! You must be using the [Air Manipulation] ability!" Yue Zhong landed on the ground, and managed to see through

Chen Liang's ability.

Chen Liang responded with a grim smile, and with a thought, he conjured 10 air cannons, sending towards Yue Zhong: "That's right! Even though you have figured it out, it's still useless! My ability is an unparalleled existence!!"

The closer the air cannons were to Chen Liang himself, the more threatening they become, he could also feel that Yue Zhong was going to be hard to deal with, that's why he had purposefully lured Yue Zhong closer.

Chen Liang had, by a stroke of luck, come across and killed 2 Type 3 Mutant Beasts that were engaged in a fight. They had been exhausted and Chen Liang gain the benefits at the end, not only obtaining the Bronze Spiritual Bell, he also managed to raise his [Air Manipulation] ability to the 2nd Level, on top of that, he even reached Level 53. His power was truly considered without peer in the vicinity. It was because of this, that he was full of confidence dealing with Yue Zhong.

The 10 air cannons were truly frightening, and when they exploded on Yue Zhong's body, his Bone Encompassing Armor was immediately blasted apart. His own body felt like it was hit by countless heavy weights, as the impact knocked and sent tremors within his internal organs, causing him to spit out blood.

Yue Zhong took a deep breath, before he activated his [Art of Fear].

An oppressive spirit attack immediately weighed towards Chen Liang, bringing with it countless horrifying images.

Chen Liang only frowned slightly, with no change to his body. His Spirit was after all close to Yue Zhong's level, the [Art of Fear] did not work against him.

"Still not dead? Let me send you on your way!!" Chen Liang sneered, before pointing at Yue Zhong, and activated his ability.

Right at this time, a ice spear came flying out of nowhere and exploded viciously on the green halo released by the Green Spiritual Bell, causing the halo to tremble, before becoming dimmer.

Chen Liang immediately shot a look towards the direction, and discovered Shu Tianya whose face was pale.

Chen Liang eyed Shu Tianya and his expression turned to one of viciousness and ferocity: "Fucking bitch!! After your daddy I catch you and fuck you over, I'll tear your limbs apart! Then I'll send you to be messed with by the people in town!!"

Hearing such venomous words, Shu Tianya's face turned white, based on his strength, he truly did possess the ability to carry it out.

"Before then, I'll incinerate you!" Yue Zhong's eyes flashed with an icy light, as he created his Devil Flame Sword and swung it down viciously towards Chen Liang in a supremely powerful attack!

# Chapter 356: Finishing Chen Liang!

---

The huge Devil Flame Sword came swinging down viciously onto the halo of the Bronze Spiritual Bell, and that intense fiery energy that could even incinerate the protective scales of a Type 2 Mutant Beast came down, exploding on the halo.

Under Yue Zhong's control, the Devil Flame exhibited an unparalleled might, and the green halo started to crack.

The level of damage from the Devil Flame was dependent on Yue Zhong's combined attributes as well as the level of the Skill. As a Spirit and Endurance dual-Attribute Evolver, his overall strength was definitely a cut above most other Evolvers. The Devil Flame was likewise many times more fearsome, and could easily pierce through even the toughest of scales of a Type 2 Mutant Beast.

Just when the Devil Flame Sword was about to slice Chen Liang's neck, the Bronze Spiritual Bell atop his head flashed, and a huge green halo spread out in all directions. The terrifying flames from the Devil Flame Sword were dissipated as a result,

At the same time, the Bronze Spiritual Bell dimmed a lot, and fell on the ground, the green halo also disappeared as a result. Although it was a Level 5 Treasure, it had its limits as well, and defending against that one fearsome strike from Yue Zhong took all of its energy.

When the Bronze Spiritual Bell broke, Chen Liang's face instantly fell. There was nothing so far that had managed to break his defence ever since he obtained that treasure. He had even experienced countless rockets in his face fired by normal people, and he was always unscathed. This was why he dared to be a tyrant and oppress everyone else.

When Wu Yin and Zheng Minghe saw the Bronze Spiritual Bell land on the floor, their mind trembled, and immediately lifted their guns and fired wildly at Chen Liang. Without the protection

of the bell, Chen Liang wasn't an invincible foe anymore.

"Bunch of bastards! I'll remember this!!!" Chen Liang roared in anger, as he activated his Level 2 [Air Manipulation] ability, and a barrier made entirely of air appeared around him.

The countless bullets hit the barrier, and ricocheted off.

Chen Liang waved his hand, as he sent out a wave of energy, and collected the Bronze Spiritual Bell into his hand.

"Go die!!" Yue Zhong's eyes flashed with coldness, as he reached out with his fingers, and 10 small orbs of Devil Flame shot towards Chen Liang.

Chen Liang's face turned pale, as he quickly activated his skill, and the air barrier appeared once more.

The 10 Devil Flame blasts exploded on contact, causing the air barrier to be blasted apart, and from the point of impact the resulting explosion expanded outwards. However, Chen Liang concentrated, and a current of air caused the flames to be blown away. The intense flames landed on the surrounding buildings, causing them to start burning.

Chen Liang was just an ordinary Enhancer, and his Spirit was naturally incomparable to Yue Zhong who was a Spirit and Endurance-based Evolver. However, he possessed a Level 2 skill, and just based on the might of the skill, he managed to totally suppress Yue Zhong. If he only had the Level 1 version, then he would have long been incinerated by Yue Zhong.

Chen Liang had just defended against the assault from Yue Zhong, when an incredibly sharp ice spear shot from his blind spot, aiming for his head. At the same time, Wu Yin, Chen Jianguang, Zheng Minghe and a few other soldiers were all firing at him.

Facing their overwhelming attacks, Chen Liang roared in anger once again, as his Level 2 [Air Manipulation] ability was casted

once again, defending him from the front.

The bullets landed on the air barrier and ricocheted off, while the ice spear hit the barrier and shattered, causing large chunks of ice to scatter all over the ground. Every single attack had smashed into the barrier, and was thoroughly defended against.

Having activated the skill multiple times in succession, Chen Liang's face was pale, and he quickly turned around, as he sprinted towards the distance in an attempt to escape. He had expended a huge amount of energy casting his skill in succession, and while the Level 2 ability was shocking, the consumption was likewise dangerous, if he couldn't take out the enemy quickly, he would lose his combat stamina rapidly.

"Thinking of escape?! I'll make sure to execute you today!!" Yue Zhong's eyes flashed, as he waved his hands to hide his access of the storage ring, and his PF98 appeared in his grips. He took one quick aim at Chen Liang and immediately fired off.

With his current state and activation of [Shadow Steps], Yue Zhong's speed was quicker than normal people by an absurd number of times, and that entire movement only took 1 second. He had already seen through Chen Liang's usage of the [Air Manipulation] activity to send himself charging at an extreme speed. With this attack, he was confident of hitting his target.

"I can't escape!!" Chen Liang also possessed the [Danger Perception] skill, and he felt the sense of crisis approaching from his back. He gritted his teeth, and swiftly activated his Level 2 skill once more, as the air barrier appeared again.

With a flash, the rocket landed within that barrier of air, however, the resulting explosion did not happen and instead, the rocket was trapped and suspended there..

"Here, I'll return it to you!!" Chen Liang bellowed in rage, and his eyes flashed, while he concentrated on his ability, and used the air currents to turn the rocket around and shoot it towards Yue Zhong

this time.

Yue Zhong was prepared however, as a bone spike shot out from his right arm and pierced into a nearby house, supporting him as it shot him into the sky. He leapt high up, and intended to dodge the incoming rocket.

"Naive!!" Chen Liang laughed grimly, and he pushed his skill, and the rocket seemed to gain a life of its own as it chased after Yue Zhong. By now, Chen Liang had already hidden within a small alley, and was evading the line of sight of everyone else, as he focused on controlling the rocket to hit Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong looked at the rocket surrounded by the air pocket heading for him, and his face changed. His left hand shot a bone spike towards the rocket within the air pocket, intending to slice it in two.

"It's too late!!" Chen Liang laughed out madly, and the rocket swiftly shot towards Yue Zhong under his control, and immediately detonated. The fearsome thing about the Level 2 [Air Manipulation] ability was that with his intense focus, he could do anything with it.

The resulting explosion swallowed Yue Zhong up.

"Hahaha!! I'm the strongest!! Haha!!" Chen Liang laughed out madly, he could feel that amongst the enemies present, the one posing the greatest threat to him was Yue Zhong. As for the rest, once he recovered, he could slaughter them all.

As he was still gloating, from amidst his shadows, a Shadow Wolf pounced over noiselessly, and bit towards his neck.

All of Chen Liang's attention had been on Yue Zhong, and only when the razor-sharp teeth were touching his neck, did Chen Liang react, and sent out an explosive fist towards the Shadow Wolf.

Following that strike, the Shadow Wolf dissipated into nothing.

At the same time, Chen Liang also let out a moan in agony. The

Shadow Wolf had bitten off a huge chunk of meat from his neck, causing fresh blood to flow.

"Damn it!! Damn it!!" The sharp pain caused Chen Liang to lose focus and grow light-headed, as he continued to moan in agonizing pain, like a wild beast.

Peng! A Stinger bullet lodged itself between Chen Liang's brows, and blasted his head apart into pieces, as his headless corpse slumped to the floor.

Chen Liang's combat ability was truly shocking, however his experiences with life and death were simply too little. The reason he could become a Level 53 Enhancer was attributed to the fact that he was lucky enough to kill 2 tired out Type 3 Mutant Beasts. Without the protection of the Bronze Spiritual Bell, he was simply a tough opponent, instead of an invincible one.

At a nearby rooftop, with his Bone Encompassing Armor broken in many places, and his body riddled in injuries, as well as a huge hole in his right abdomen, Yue Zhong looked on at the headless corpse, his right eye swollen shut, as he heaved a sigh of relief. That fearsome opponent had finally died.

Chen Liang was lacking in management skills, and his lackeys were a bunch of mobs, running the moment they were defeated. However, if they were Mobs, he was definitely the Mob Boss. His personal combat ability was the strongest out of the enemies Yue Zhong had faced so far. His level was even higher than Yue Zhong, possessing a Level 5 treasure, and possessed a Level 2 Skill, his abilities were truly not simple. However, in the end, he was still killed by Yue Zhong!

Yue Zhong waved his hand, and shot out a bone spike like a crutch, as it supported him for walking towards Chen Liang's corpse.

When he landed on the ground, the pain was so immense, he immediately tumbled down to the ground, and panted in ragged



breaths. The injury from his right abdomen was causing him excruciating pain, such that his brows were furrowed and he almost went mad with the pulsing waves of agony.

Yue Zhong swiftly pulled out a Life Saving Grass and crudely applied it to the wound, and at the same time, retrieved the blood essence of the recent Type 2 Giant Crocodile and gobbled it up.

The moment the blood essence entered Yue Zhong's stomach, it transformed into a hot wave of nourishment, as it boosted his body. At the same time, the Level 4 [Regeneration] skill and his powerful Vitality kicked in, allowing the huge wound to recover at a visible rate.

Yue Zhong looked at his regenerating abdomen and thought to himself: "This kind of recovery is truly too scary! If it was before the apocalypse, I would definitely be treated as a freak!"

With the nourishment of the blood essence, Yue Zhong could slowly make his way to the corpse, and started to loot the System equipment from Chen Liang.

"Level 5 Treasure: Bronze Spiritual Bell! As long as one has it, can gain +4 Endurance and +4 Spirit. It possesses the automatic ability: Halo Protection! Description: Can release a green halo to protect the owner of the treasure. Maintains for about 60 minutes. Cooldown 24 hours."

"Level 3 Treasure: Spirit Consolidating Ring. Upon equipping, Spirit +8."

"Level 3 Treasure: Clear Spirit Ring. Upon equipping, Spirit +8."

"Level 3 Treasure: Agility Ring. Upon equipping, Agility +6."

Yue Zhong gained a variety of System equipment from the body of Chen Liang, there was even a Level 2 Defense Armor. However, out of all those equipment, he only lacked the previous 4 treasures. He had the rest of the items already. Even still, all these equipment could raise his battle ability and his subordinate teams stood to

gain immensely.

# Chapter 357: Type 3 Mutant Beast Hide

---

"You have gained an enhancement of +8 in Vitality!" When the hot energy flow within Yue Zhong's body dispersed, the notification resounded in Yue Zhong's mind.

"Only +8 Vitality? The Type 2 Mutant Beast blood essence is truly losing its effectiveness for me!" Yue Zhong thought silently when he heard it.

The Type 2 Mutant Giant Crocodile was obviously stronger than many other Type 2 Mutant Beasts, however, its blood essence had only allowed Yue Zhong to gain 8 points in Vitality. It was clear that the constant dosage of blood essences was losing its effectiveness for Yue Zhong, and if he continued at his current rate of consumption, it was most likely that it would have no effect soon.

"Are you alright Yue Zhong?" Shu Tianya came to his side quickly, her face full of concern.

"Of course I'm fine! Thanks for helping out this time!" Yue Zhong smiled slightly, and offered his thanks. Shu Tianya had helped to distract Chen Liang a number of times, and without her, it might have been much more difficult for Yue Zhong to kill Chen Liang.

Shu Tianya responded with a coy smile: "Since you want to thank me, why not offer something more practical!"

"Here, for you!!" Yue Zhong threw a Level 3 Treasure Fireball Ring to her. He had killed countless Enhancers, and had looted plenty of System equipment, in fact, of this particular ring, he had 3 of them.

These rings could be found by killing low-level bosses at the initial stages of the apocalypse, however, up till now, unless one managed to kill a Type 2 Mutant Beast or some fearsome high level zombies, it was rare for it to drop. Even when using the System

equipment to kill over 10,000 zombies, it was difficult to guarantee the drop of such a loot.

"Many thanks!" Shu Tianya received the ring and immediately wore it, whilst admiring it.

The Level 3 Fireball Ring allowed the user to gain 6 points in Spirit, and even came with a Fireball skill. In some situations, even a small fireball might make the difference between victory and defeat. To Shu Tianya, this was extremely suited to her tastes.

Yue Zhong continued: "On top of this, I'm giving you 20 AKs, 2,000 bullets and 20 tonnes of rations!"

When she heard it, Shu Tianya immediately broke into a resplendent smile, her heart full of excitement and joy as she thanked Yue Zhong: "Thank you!!"

Firearms, ammunition and rations were the most valuable resources of this post-apocalyptic world. Since Shu Tianya wanted to establish a faction of her own, she required such resources. When she heard Yue Zhong's promise, she was extremely gratified and felt excited about her future.

"Jiajia! Come over here! This is for you!" Yue Zhong bade Ming Jiajia to come over and handed a set of System equipment to her.

A Level 2 Defence Vest, Strength Gloves, Fireball Ring, Ice Ring, Strength Ring, Green Agility Boots and a Strength Belt. Yue Zhong handed these 7 items over to the little loli. In this operation to kill Chen Liang, Ming Jiajia had contributed as well, although the Shadow Wolf did not manage to kill him, it injured him greatly, which allowed Yue Zhong to finish him off.

Shu Tianya saw the amount of equipment that Yue Zhong gave Ming Jiajia and her eyes went wide: "Good stuff! How come you didn't give them to me?"

Those 7 items were not ordinary, and when equipped, they could turn even a normal person into a fearsome combatant. If an

Enhancer with enough power were to equip them, they could increase their battle prowess beyond those of similar levels as well.

Ming Jiajia equipped everything, and could distinctly feel her body enhanced, as she smiled brightly at Yue Zhong: "Thank you Master!!" Yue Zhong ruffled Ming Jiajia's hair and walked towards the distance.

When Chen Liang was killed, there was no one else in the town that could possibly stand up to Yue Zhong, and accordingly, the remaining soldiers surrendered without much resistance. Yue Zhong thus easily subjugated the town.

"Leader!! Come take a look!! We discovered something good!!" Wu Yin came to Yue Zhong and spoke with excitement.

Yue Zhong saw how excited Wu Yin was, and quickly followed him to a huge warehouse.

Wu Yin had gotten some men to open up the warehouse, to reveal the contents within.

Yue Zhong peered into it, only to discover neat piles of black snakeskin hide. In fact, the snakeskin almost filled up the entire warehouse.

"Leader, look!!" Wu Yin excitedly pulled out a piece of the hide and after setting it up, used a heavy machine gun to fire at it.

That heavy machine gun that could pummel holes into an armored vehicle, could not do a single thing to that black snake skin hide, the bullets only ricocheting off, not leaving even a scratch.

Wu Yin continued with fervor: "This is definitely a Type 2 Mutant Beast's hide!!"

With this powerful Type 2 Mutant Beast hide, Yue Zhong could start the manufacturing of them into protection for an entire army.

"It's not just this warehouse, look, there's one here as well!!!" Wu Yin called for some men to open another warehouse.

Within the 2nd warehouse, there were piles of golden yellow scales, that came from some unknown Mutant Beast. The beast must have been massive as well, because the amount of scales also filled up the entire warehouse.

"This is great!!" Yue Zhong looked at the 2 warehouse filled with Mutant Beast hide, his eyes also filled with excitement. If he were to convert the hides as well as the hide from the Type 2 Mutant Crocodile, it was barely enough to equip a battalion of soldiers. A single battalion that was impervious to weapons and bullets was enough to conquer a province easily.

In his excitement, Yue Zhong took a piece of the black snake skin hide, as he tried his Black Tooth Blade on it, intending to test its durability.

With a 'ding', the Level 4 treasure Black Tooth Blade did not even manage to leave a mark on the hide.

Yue Zhong's heart skipped a beat, as his eyes narrowed, and he expended his awesome Strength while he slashed at the hide again. With that kind of strength, Yue Zhong could forcefully slice the scales of a Type 2 Mutant Beast.

The fearsome blade slashed down on the hide, but it only caused another ding to reverb out. The recoil from the hit caused the Black Tooth Blade to shudder uncontrollably, but the hide was not even damaged at all.

"This is the hide of a Type 3 Mutant Beast!!!" Yue Zhong's face was full of shock, and he felt elated. Such a precious piece of hide, with an astonishing defence, had just fallen into his arms. It would enable him to train up a battalion that would be able to withstand the attacks from 3 or 4 elite battalions.

Yue Zhong pondered a while, before taking out his Crocodile

Tooth Saw Blade, and while using the saw-edged side, coupled with his strength, he tried to saw the skin.

Under his maximum effort, he finally managed to split the snake skin. He heaved a sigh of relief, if it hadn't worked, then even using chainsaws would not be effective.

Yue Zhong waved his right hand, and a ball of Devil Flame appeared, as it tried to burn the skin. Amidst the fiery heat, the skin was still intact and not a trace of damage could be seen.

Yue Zhong sighed, before expending 60 points of Spirit and 20 points of Stamina to condense the Devil Flame into a 2m-long Devil Flame Spear, which could easily pierce the scales of a Type 2 Mutant Beast. He then tried piercing the snake skin ruthlessly. Under that fierce strike, the Devil Flame Spear released an intense force at the tip, trying to burn through the skin. However, regardless of the degree of heat, all it did was cause a small hole in the hide.

Yue Zhong looked at the miniscule hole and was speechless. The Devil Flame Spear was the strongest attack that he could muster in his arsenal, yet it could only burn a small hole in this snake skin. It could be seen that the defence of the Type 3 Mutant Beast was truly, supremely terrifying.

This was the hide of a dead Type 3 Mutant Beast after all! If it was still alive, Yue Zhong would find it next to impossible to even injure it.

"Seems like only when I've evolved the Devil Flame into its 2nd stage, then I will be able to cause some actual damage to a Type 3 Mutant Beast. Otherwise, considering my skills now, even breaking their defence is going to be difficult!" Yue Zhong silently assessed in his heart.

As the humans were evolving, the Mutant Beasts and zombies were evolving as well. They were growing even faster than the humans, and this gave Yue Zhong pressure. If the humans didn't

evolve fast enough, they would be wiped away in this new world.

Zheng Minghe was deployed to notify Wei Ningguo who was stationed at Dong Ping Village.

On the 2nd day, Wei Ningguo brought the 1,000 something people and entered Long Teng Town. Since breaking away on his own, this was the first time Yue Zhong had gained a moment of rest.

After subjugating Long Teng Town, Yue Zhong gathered the inhabitants, and assigned them to begin production on the Mutant Beast armor. They first made use of the Type 2 Giant Crocodile hide before the Type 3 ones.

While the Type 3 Mutant Beast hides were indeed tough, the chainsaws could still cut them apart. With their usage, pieces were cut out and sewn together to create some armor.

On the other side, Yue Zhong separated the Chinese survivors from Vietnam and the strong males from Long Teng Town into 2 camps, as he engaged in relentless training with them.

The 2 battalions trained rigorously according to the training regime of the Special Combat Forces. They pushed past their limits everyday, and if it wasn't for the meat of the Type 2 Beast, they wouldn't have been able to withstand it.

As for Ming Jiajia, Wu Yin, Wei Ningguo, Zheng Minghe and a few other Enhancers, they were also tasked by Yue Zhong to train with the Special Combat Forces. Although they had decent body constitutions, they had not gone through proper training, and could not exhibit their full potential...



# Chapter 358: Individual Ideals! Zhang Zhi's Decision!

---

"Congratulations on gaining 1 point in Spirit!" Yue Zhong opened his eyes, as the sweet sound of a System notification rang out in his mind.

After conquering Long Teng Town, Yue Zhong had a chance for a true breather, and he ingested the Pearl Fruit under the protection of White Bones. Yue Zhong gobbled 5 of them in one shot, and his Spirit gained 12 total points of enhancement.

"Is this the limit?" Yue Zhong proceeded to pop in one more fruit, and he swallowed it, yet he found that while there was a cool stream of energy within his body, it could not help enhance his stats anymore.

"Get Chen Jianguang in to see me!" Yue Zhong told Ming Jiajia.

Ming Jiajia nodded and dismissed herself, saying: "Yes! Master!"

Not long after, Chen Jianguang was brought by Ming Jiajia.

Yue Zhong looked at Chen Jianguang with a piercing gaze: "Chen Jianguang! A month has passed, what is your decision? Are you all staying, or leaving? If you choose to leave, on account that you guys have helped to train my men, I can let you guys have 5 days worth of rations each, as well as 5 Type 81 rifles, and 100 bullets.

Currently, it has been a month since Yue Zhong had conquered Long Teng Town, and in this month, he had used a harsh training regime to train up his 2 battalions. Those 2 battalions were made up of the survivors who had suffered greatly, and could tolerate the harsh training. At the same time, Yue Zhong fed them with the Type 2 Mutant Beast meat to help them recover their vigor and boost their constitutions. Under that intense training, the 2 battalions were starting to show signs of a proper army, at the same time, while they were still far from an actual military, they

could match against an army which had been training for a year.

These 2 battalions had trained hard, but they still lacked the battle experience. As long as they were forged through the flames of war, they would become an elite troop. Since his troops were trained, Yue Zhong's mood was good as well, and naturally was willing to let those previous troops leave.

A forcefully picked melon was not sweet and if Yue Zhong kept them against their will, it would only breed contempt and dissatisfaction. And in time, if they were to backstab him internally, it would be a problem. It had been the case with the Freemasons previously.

Chen Jianguang responded with a straight look at Yue Zhong: "Yue Zhong! I want to ask you, what's the deal with the slaves?"

Amongst Yue Zhong's troops, there were the Scum battalion and Women Battalion, which didn't exist prior to the apocalypse. Other than those, there were even slaves. Many of these slaves were the family members of those Vietnamese who had engaged in a crazy slaughter of the Chinese.

Yue Zhong looked at Chen Jianguang and responded: "They are the family members of the traitors and Vietnamese who slaughtered the Chinese. You should be clear on this."

Chen Jianguang stared at Yue Zhong and asked in a righteous tone: "Those traitors and Vietnamese that engaged in slaughter were guilty beyond doubt. You can kill them or send them to the Scum Battalion, I have no issues with that. However, their family members are innocent! Aren't your measures too much?!"

Chen Jianguang had always been an upright soldier, even though Yue Zhong was the ruler of the town now, and could easily order his death, he did not hesitate to berate Yue Zhong according to his principles.

Yue Zhong looked at Chen Jianguang coldly and unmoving:

"Innocent? When those traitors wanted to betray, why didn't their families advise against it? When those Vietnamese wanted to engage in slaughter, why didn't their families discourage them? If they were to succeed in a revolt, everything of mine would fall into their hands, and their family members would get to enjoy their success as well. As for those Vietnamese, didn't the families enjoy whatever they stole from us Chinese?"

Yue Zhong eyed Chen Jianguang and continued indifferently: "If you're that righteous, go bring your brothers and take a tour around Vietnam! There are countless numbers of Chinese awaiting your saving."

If these soldiers could integrate into his troops, it would be the best case scenario. However, as they had helped train up a new batch of soldiers, even if they wanted to leave, Yue Zhong would not force them to stay.

Chen Jianguang was also a quick-tempered man, without saying anymore, he turned around and said: "Fine! I'll bring my men away!"

Yue Zhong watched Chen Jianguang's retreating figure, and sighed as he shook his head lightly. He truly was a righteous and moral man, however, it was not the right era for his ideals, and furthermore, it was in conflict with Yue Zhong.

Ming Jiajia who was standing beside Yue Zhong flashed a cold glare as she asked: "Shall I take care of him?"

With Ming Jiajia's current power, as long as she summoned her Shadow Wolf out, she could easily kill a normal person like Chen Jianguang silently.

Yue Zhong lightly sighed " No, it's not necessary! As long as he isn't an enemy, we don't have to silence him. Such a righteous man, the more such characters exist, the better it is for the world. It's just that he has differing views from us."

Yue Zhong was someone who did not mind any means to achieve his goals, and lived by "an eye for an eye, a tooth for a tooth". However, he didn't dislike those with righteousness nor morals. As long as they did not hinder his goals of course. Otherwise, he wouldn't treat them any better than others.

Ming Jiajia looked at Yue Zhong with a somewhat understanding expression, as she pouted and kneeled in front of Yue Zhong, and started massaging his legs carefully.

When Chen Jianguang reached his camp, he immediately gathered the rest and said: "Let's leave!"

Upon hearing Chen Jianguang's words, the entire group of military personnel went into uproar, as a whole load of chattering and voices resounded.

One of the platoon commanders Zhang Zhi looked to Chen Jianguang and questioned: "Old Chen, what happened? Did Yue Zhong chase us out?"

Chen Jianguang replied extremely honestly: "No, he didn't! He asked me over today, and it was to ask if we wanted to stay or leave. The moment we stay, we will have to listen and obey his orders, and become his troops! If we want to leave, he would not stop us, and he would give each and every one of us 5 days worth of rations, 5 Type 81 rifles, and 100 bullets."

One of the soldiers immediately quipped: "Commander! Then why are we leaving? Yue Zhong is not like Chen Liang that bastard, and he has not mistreated the people of Long Teng Town. Here, as long as people are willing to work, they get a decent meal. We ourselves get to eat our fill and there's even meat and vegetables. If we have to leave, where will we go?"

"Yea!!"

Some of the other soldiers also called out disgruntledly. Under Yue Zhong's command, while training was in fact tougher than

before, they got their fair share of meat and rations, of which the meat was even from a Type 2 Mutant Beast, which nourished their bodies. They had an incomparable physique now, and many were unwilling to leave.

Chen Jianguang's face turned ugly as he hollered: "What's the noise for? Just a little bit of meat and rations can buy you guys over? You must remember, you are soldiers of this country. Did you not see those slaves? He actually reintroduced the slave system, which is immoral! He would be tarnished in history as a warmonger, and are you guys going to join him in his offence?"

When Chen Jianguang lost his temper, all the soldiers quietened down. Chen Jianguang was an upright and moral man, and had decent standing amongst his fellow men here.

Zhang Zhi kept silent for a while, before lifting his head and said: "Old Chen! If you want to leave, then leave by yourself! I will not leave! I want to stay here. The purpose of the army, is to protect the citizens. As the citizens are here, the army should be here. I want to stay on to protect the people of Long Teng Town. As long as Yue Zhong does not harm the interests of the inhabitants of Long Teng Town, I will listen to his commands."

Chen Jianguang stared at Zhang Zhi for quite a while, before sighing and said: "Fine! Those who wants to leave with me come! Those who would like to stay go over to Commander Zhang's side!"

Many of the soldiers hesitated and contemplated for a long while, before finally coming to a decision. A good number of them went over to Zhang Zhi's side, while only 6 started towards Chen Jianguang. In the middle of their walk, 2 of them faltered, and came over to Zhang Zhi's side.

In this new world, there were still countless ordinary people. And these soldiers also wanted to live ordinary and peaceful days. Compared to going with Chen Jianguang on an unknown journey to an unknown destination, many of them would rather stay here.

After all, Yue Zhong was Chinese, and these soldiers had no issues working for him.

Chen Jianguang swept his gaze around the camp, and let out a slow sigh, as he brought the 4 soldiers and left without turning back.

Zhang Zhi looked at the back of Chen Jianguang silently, and executed a military salute.

Not long after Chen Jianguang left, Yue Zhong walked into the camp with big strides, and gazed at the 100 odd soldiers still standing there, as he chuckled and said: "So you guys have decided to stay?"

Zhang Zhi looked at Yue Zhong, his eyes flashed with a resolute gaze as he said: "Yes! Leader! We're willing to work hard for you!"

"We're willing to work hard for leader!!"

In the camp, their uniform voices rang loud and clear, those who had decided to stay had steeled their hearts in preparation to serve Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong smiled at Zhang Zhi: "Good! Zhang Zhi! From now on, you're the Vice-Commander of my 1st Battalion! Work hard!"

Zhang Zhi's heart leapt with joy: "Yes Leader!"

Yue Zhong had established 2 battalions of soldiers, one of which labelled as the 1st Battalion, directly under his control. All sorts of equipment, manpower, and resources would be prioritized on the 1st Battalion as well.

The commander of the 1st Battalion was currently Wei Ningguo, and although he was a poor commander, he had followed Yue Zhong the earliest, and was loyal to a fault, other than his combat prowess, everything was basically a mess. However, he listened to everybody, and that was a superb quality. With such a person as the commander, the vice-commander would be the person truly calling the shots, hence Zhang Zhi was extremely happy. He had

risen to become an official, and fulfilled his dream that was impossible before the apocalypse!

# Chapter 359: Assault on Jingxi Province

---

The departure of Chen Jianguang did not cause any particular waves in Long Teng Town.

Yue Zhong also dispatched those soldiers from the Border Security Forces to become the core group of the 2 battalions, enhancing the combat ability of both battalions.

After reorganizing these, Yue Zhong then arranged for Wei Ningguo and Wu Yin to lead the 2 battalions separately and bash the zombies gathered around the vicinity of Jingxi Province.

Ming Jiajia, Zheng Minghe and a few other Enhancers also joined in the operations, putting in effort to wipe out the zombies in the nearby villages, and rescuing any survivors that were hiding within. They even managed to obtain a huge amount of resources and gathered them in Long Teng Town.

At the same time, Yue Zhong commanded Lightning and its little brothers to clean up the other villages that were not under the jurisdiction of the 2 battalions. The scattered zombies posed little threat to Yue Zhong, but if they were to gather into a horde, it would become a problem.

Yue Zhong himself was sitting within Long Teng Town and maintaining order and security within the newly established Police Force. With his presence, even an entire company of proper troops would find it tough to attack Long Teng Town.

The 2 battalions initially set out to attack in turns, as they swapped each other during their assaults on the neighbouring towns. After a few days, and the increase in experience, they split up, and changed to the tactic of using companies to take turns attacking. The effectiveness and speed at which they were clearing the towns hence sped up.

In the process of cleansing the towns of zombies, there were



countless Tang Replica Swords dropping from the zombies. Adding on to the initial amount of 20 Tang Replica Swords from Long Teng Town, it allowed for a small group of Enhancers to be trained up, and they were even expanding.

Under that kind of intense battle training, the scums within the Scum Battalion were whittled away, some dying from their injuries. Even the elite soldiers from the 2 battalions suffered some losses during the cleansing, with a death count of 17 soldiers.

However, in that 20 days of constant recovering of towns, Yue Zhong had rescued a total of 90 or more survivors, which bolstered his strength, and the total number of people under him grew to a staggering 5,000-plus figure.

"Leader! That is Jingxi Province!!" Inside a jeep, Zhang Zhi pointed at the province at a distance to Yue Zhong.

Around the jeep, there were soldiers all around, dressed in blue military uniforms and carrying guns on their backs. After 20 days of constant fighting, they were starting to be transformed by the battles and were showing fierce auras and the bearings of an elite troop.

After the 20 days of forging his troops, he then gathered them all, and decided to conduct an all-out assault on Jingxi Province. Within it, there were huge amounts of rations, resources, and firearms. After obtaining this Province, they could gain another stronghold and obtain some precious resources.

"The day has turned cold!!" Yue Zhong eyed Jingxi Province, as he reached his hand out of the window, and could feel the air turning cold.

Zhang Zhi sighed as well: "Yea! Seems like this year's winter is about to arrive early, and the temperature seems to be lower."

Having stood guard at the border for over 3 years, Zhang Zhi was clear that the winter was indeed coming early, and the coldness

seemed to be harsher. In the previous years, the temperature was still about 20°C around this period, but this year, it had already dropped to 13, 14°C.

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed with trepidation, there were countless Mutant Beasts and zombies in this new world, and if this winter was to become colder, a lot of survivors would definitely suffer. Other than that, the harsh cold might bring about other unforeseen changes. To Yue Zhong, it was still unclear if it was a blessing or curse.

Yue Zhong's eyes then turned resolute, as he abandoned all random thoughts, and stared fixedly at Jingxi Province: "Fuck it! I can only take one step at a time! I must definitely conquer this Jingxi Province!"

Yue Zhong had immediately set up camp and ordered fortifications to be carried out the moment they reached near Jingxi Province. Earlier, he had sent Wu Yin out to conduct reconnaissance, and discovered that there should be a Z-Type within the province. The fact that there were almost a few tens of thousands of zombies within it points to that conclusion.

"Let's move! Follow me!" Yue Zhong called out to a platoon of soldiers behind him decked in Type 2 Mutant Crocodile hide and wielding Tang Replica Swords.

"Yes! Leader!!" The platoon saw Yue Zhong leading them personally on the frontlines and their hearts were filled with confidence and passion, as they replied loudly.

Yue Zhong brought Ming Jiajia with him as well as the platoon as they made their way towards Jingxi Province.

The moment they entered, White Bones charged forwards, and swung its axe towards the zombies near the entrance, cutting them down like a tornado.

Ming Jiajia had summoned out 5 Shadow Wolves, and they

weaved in and out amongst the zombies, killing the zombies with a single bite to the neck. Ming Jiajia had also experienced constant battling this past 20 days, and had grown to reach Level 20, her [Summon Shadow Wolves] ability had also been enhanced twice. The wolves were now more ferocious, and the number she could keep summoned at once had increased.

The platoon was split into 4-man teams, covering one another, as they waved their Tang Replica Swords to and fro, slaughtering the zombies.

Yue Zhong held his 2m-long Dark Tooth Blade and casually swung his weapon in a sweeping arc, instantly slicing through a few S2s, L2s and several unlucky normal zombies along with them.

The zombies within the province town suddenly faced such an intense assault, and soon, more than a few hundred of the zombies had been wiped out, leaving behind only a few hundred Survivor Coins and 3 white treasure boxes.

Yue Zhong opened up the 3 boxes, and gained only an ordinary Tang Replica Sword.

When those hundreds of zombies were slaughtered, it alarmed the Z-Type hiding within the other zombies. Under its frantic control, the tens of thousands of zombies lumbering around started to gather, as they made their way towards Yue Zhong's troops like waters of a flood.

Yue Zhong led the platoon of soldiers to slaughter the zombies coming from all sides continuously, any zombies that neared him would immediately be sliced in two. Countless zombies were sliced apart. He was like a huge boulder that fell into the midst of the flow of zombies, easily breaking them apart.

The moment the zombies gathered, the soldiers with the Type 2 Mutant Crocodile hide started to feel increasingly tired, and they gathered near Yue Zhong, defending his sides, leaving him to deal with enemies from the front.

More zombies were starting to launch their attacks, but the moment they came within distance of Yue Zhong's reach, they would be sliced apart, as their bones and meat fell onto the floor randomly, like splattered tofu.

The number of zombies was simply too much, and regardless of how fearsome Yue Zhong's combat ability was, under the pressure of the zombies, they had to retreat. If he forcefully remained where he was, they might be buried under the constant surge of zombies.

With Yue Zhong covering them, the platoon of soldiers also retreated. It was here that the results of their constant training and battle experience showed their worth. If it were normal soldiers, facing the impending assault from the zombies, they might have lost their morale and collapsed, but for this group, they stuck close to Yue Zhong, and exhibited an united and strong front.

Yue Zhong's retreat wasn't too slow, and the slow zombies basically could not catch up. However, all of a sudden, the horde split apart, and a few green shadows charged out from within, launching an assault on the small team.

These green shadows were S2s, and in a few moments, over 200 S2s charged out from within the horde as they lunged towards Yue Zhong.

"Follow closely! Swap to your guns!" Yue Zhong eyed the S2s and issued an order.

The force of 200 S2s was no joke. The strongest Enhancer within the platoon now was only a Level 13, facing these S2s bordering on Level 30, they would only be defeated.

Hearing Yue Zhong's orders, the 30 Enhancers took out their AKs, and started firing wildly at the incoming S2s.

White Bones shot out 5 bone blades as it twirled around, slicing

off the heads of 5 S2s easily. Yue Zhong pulled out a .03 rifle, and as he retreated, he fired the gun rapidly. His mental acuity, vision, reasoning and reflexes were all far greater than the majority of normal humans, allowing an uninterrupted stream of headshots.

As Yue Zhong's gun vibrated nonstop, the S2s would find their heads blasted apart, and their lifeless bodies crumpling to the ground. In just a second or two, he had killed 5 S2s!

The speed of the S2s looked to be like spectres to normal humans, but to Yue Zhong with his own insane Agility, he could grasp their movements easily, and take them down. This was the benefit of having a high Agility, if one's Agility was lesser than an S2, then it would be almost too hard to track their movements.

"Leader is amazing!!" The platoon watched Yue Zhong take out 5 S2s in a second, and they all sucked in a cold breath, their hearts filled with awe and respect. Their accuracy was low and hit air a few times, so although they did manage to hit a few of the S2s, it wasn't enough to cause any life-threatening damages.

Ming Jiajia had also controlled her Shadow Wolves to leap out from the shadows and lunge at the S2s, biting off their necks.

After enhancing twice, in addition to Ming Jiajia's high Spirit, the Shadow Wolves were enough to take on the S2s. However, as the number of S2s was simply too many, after the 5 Shadow Wolves killed 5 S2s, they were immediately broken apart by the surrounding S2s, as they turned into wisps of smoke and disappeared. Ming Jiajia gained 3 levels from killing the 5 S2s.

With an Agility 11 times that of normal humans, Yue Zhong was simply too overbearing, not only were his shots accurate, he could fire 5 shots every second. On the other end, White Bones was tearing its way amongst the zombie horde, its 5 bone blades slashing about violently, chopping up numerous S2s. With the combination of these 2, the 200 S2s were annihilated even before they got close to the troops!

# Chapter 360: Conquering Jingxi Province

---

After taking care of the 200 some S2s, Yue Zhong and White Bones led the platoon back to the campsite without any troubles, and in all they had suffered virtually no losses.

"Three cheers for the Leader! Long live leader!!"

"Long live leader!! Long live leader!!"

When Yue Zhong led his men back to the site, joyful cheers and celebrations resounded as the morale of the soldiers reached an all time high. Their leader was fearless, and this naturally gave rise to a sense of strength.

When the soldiers reached the camp, they immediately handed their Tang Replica Swords over to another platoon full of soldiers donning the Type 3 Snake Skin, and changed their rifles. As Enhancers, Yue Zhong had stressed the importance of training both close-quarter combat as well as ranged tactics, and while their firearm control could not compare to Yue Zhong who had been forged through countless battles, their own abilities were rising rapidly.

Seeing the slowly nearing horde, all the soldiers felt their blood stir, none of them feeling a tinge of fear. The display by Yue Zhong had thoroughly filled these soldiers with a sense of battle lust.

When Yue Zhong reached the campsite, he took up a .03 rifle and started to fire at the lumbering zombies. Each time he rapidly moved his hands, 5 shots would be fired, and 5 zombies would be pierced through their heads, slumping to the ground. Not a single shot was wasted.

On the other side, Wu Yin eyed Yue Zhong and followed suit, taking up a .03 rifle and aimed at 3 zombies before firing at each. After 3 gunshots rang out, only 1 had its head blasted by the shot, while the other 2 suffered hits to their bodies, and even fell to the

ground, they did not die.

"Truly difficult! As expected, only Leader can carry it out!" After this, Wu Yin discovered that executing 5 headshots consecutively in 3 seconds was tougher than he imagined. His heart was filled with respect for Yue Zhong. Even though he had evolved into an Agility-based Evolver, he still felt the immeasurable gap between him and Yue Zhong.

Within the campsite, gunshots started to resound, and the gunmen of the troops were engaging the zombies. Although Yue Zhong had obtained 3 battalions worth of firepower, the amount of ammunition they had to spare was still tight. Hence, in every battle, he would try to get his troops to engage in close-quarter combat as much as possible. On one hand, it could help enhance their strength, on the other, it helped save bullets.

Under that relentless assault, numerous zombies were taken out, and the ground was soon littered with corpses. However, Yue Zhong and the sharpshooters could do nothing to impede the advance of the horde, they could only slow down the movement of the zombies.

The moment the horde moved, they would become an unstoppable force of death. This was their scariest point. Regardless of any injuries, they would not be afraid or daunted, and in this aspect, they were undoubtedly better than humans.

With the onslaught of the huge horde, the soldiers started to feel nervous. Although they had killed a large number of them, facing this sea of never-ending zombies, they would still feel anxious and fearful. However, Yue Zhong was still at the forefront, fighting off the zombies like an undefeatable wargod, resolutely hunting the zombies. Seeing that, the troops felt their morale bolstered once again.

As Yue Zhong stood there by himself, he was like an immovable mountain while firing at the zombies non-stop. Every shot fired

would find its mark in a zombie's head. Every second, there would be a zombie slumping to the ground, before being ground to paste by the relentless zombies behind. Such a strong person quickly attracted the attention of the Z-Type behind.

The horde of zombies suddenly made a movement, as they split apart, and from afar, there were 30 H1s that could be seen.

A huge sense of crisis welled up in Yue Zhong's heart, as the 30 H1s had the means to threaten him. His eyes flashed coldly, and raised his hands at the H1s, before a huge tornado of Devil Flame erupted, and was sent howling towards the zombie horde, blowing towards the group of H1s.

Under that fiery tornado, all the H1s and ordinary zombies were sucked into it and incinerated almost instantly.

In that one move, Yue Zhong had annihilated 200-over zombies, leaving only a charred black trail of destruction. That single move was incredibly powerful, but had expended 50 points of his Spirit and 10 points of Stamina. Based on his constitution, he could at most cast it another 3 times.

"Victory!!"

"Victory!!"

When those soldiers saw Yue Zhong wiping out almost 300 zombies in one move, they were incredibly excited, and shouted in delight and their morale reached a peak. With such a strong person as their leader, they were confident in dealing with any enemy.

Yue Zhong immediately switched to his .03 rifle after using that move, and returned to picking off the ordinary zombies through headshots. If it wasn't for the fact he needed to deal with the 30 H1s urgently, he wouldn't have used such a taxing move. The stronger the move, the higher the expenditure, and with his stats, using a gun to kill 200 zombies would at most expend 10 Spirit and 5 Stamina points. If he slowed down his rate of shooting, he would



kill even more zombies over a longer period of time, and expended less energy.

The 300 that were exterminated were just part of a drizzle of the downpour that was the horde. The backup pretty soon filled in the ranks, and once again, resumed their advance towards Yue Zhong.

This was the strong point of the horde, and regardless of the strength of any individual Enhancer, as long as they were alone, facing a horde would mean certain death. It was only a matter of time.

"Open fire!" Yue Zhong looked at the nearing horde, and ordered loudly.

In that instant, the sharpshooters at the frontline of defence immediately started firing wildly at the incoming zombies.

Under that hail of golden rain, a large number of zombies were instantly felled, like the wheat crops when farmed with a sickle.

However, as those zombies felled, there would be many who crawled up again. The fortunate thing was that the rain of bullets was powerful enough to stop them for awhile, and the huge horde could not proceed for that instant as though they were stuck in a lock.

"Disperse!!" After firing in a frenzy for a minute, Yue Zhong issued the next command. The ammunition he had left was not enough, and could not support the battle.

Upon receiving Yue Zhong's order, the soldiers started to climb up from their defence line, and retreated as they carried their ammunition.

Yue Zhong had ordered the construction of 5 defence lines, losing one wasn't anything much.

Losing the suppression of the bullets, countless zombies started to crawl up, as their rotting and stinking bodies reached for Yue Zhong.

"Charge!!" Yue Zhong ordered the platoon of soldiers wielding Tang Replica Swords, as he led the assault on the zombie horde.

While the zombies could still get up after that hail of metal, their formation was scattered, and clearly they were at their weakest.

"Kill!!!"

The platoon of soldiers howled out in fury, and followed Yue Zhong closely as they slaughtered their way out, slicing numerous zombies all around them. Those zombies that had barely gotten up could not resist the relentless assaults from these soldiers, and were mostly chopped in two.

Yue Zhong led the platoon of soldiers and killed over 600 zombies, before gathering again and preparing to retreat towards the back.

The horde continued to surge towards Yue Zhong.

In that intense and gruelling battle, Yue Zhong had abandoned 3 defence posts, and the zombies that had died under him and his troops have exceeded 6,000, but the horde still had over 24,000 zombies, looking as tightly-packed as ever.

After they retreated to the 5th defence post, Wei Ningguo came to Yue Zhong's side and handed him a remote control: "Leader, it's done."

Yue Zhong received it and immediately pressed it.

Hong!

Hong!!

In an instant, the surrounding areas of the 4 defence posts exploded out in a deafening roar, and ignited the fuel and combustible items laid around. They were instantly enveloped in a fiery blaze.

In that huge firestorm, a large part of the horde was instantly incinerated.

The horde also seemed to have some strange movement, as the zombies started to move towards the 2nd defence post.

The zombies at the 2nd defence post seemed to be making their way out of the fiery trap! Alas, they were surrounded by fire everywhere, regardless of which direction they tried to escape to, they would be swallowed by the flames.

The pungent smell from the burning wafted in all directions.

After burning for a while, the large horde suddenly collapsed, and the evolved types escaped in all directions. The rest of the ordinary zombies just stood blankly within the sea of fire, being burnt. These normal zombies would not have any reaction to being burned alive, as opposed to the evolved types with increased intelligence, and they naturally would not stay inside.

"The Z-Type inside is finally dead!!" Yue Zhong looked towards the sea of fire at a distance, and heaved a sigh of relief.

As long as the Z-Type was killed, then there would be nothing to fear about the tens of thousands of zombies. Yue Zhong could simply burn them all in one move.

The evolved types could not break through the fiery traps regardless of their struggle, and in the end they were all burnt as well. Even the L2s that could withstand bullets were turned into ash, before they could escape out of the fire, their brains had been fried.

The huge sea of flames burned for half a day before finally dying out. Throughout the 4 defence posts, there were many burnt corpses, stretching for miles.

"Enter the town!" Yue Zhong looked at Jingxi Province and commanded.

"Enter the town!!" Zhang Zhi called out excitedly. He had not expected that the province that was swarmed with zombies had been taken down so easily, without a single death on their side.

"Victory!!"

"Victory!!"

The soldiers who had been through such a long intense battle cheered out loudly, and started marching towards Jingxi Province. They had conquered an entire city! This was extremely exhilarating!

# Chapter 361: 12 Tanks!

---

The moment the troops entered the city, they began to search for survivors, and meticulously combed and cleared the remaining zombies within the city. While the majority of the zombies might have been summoned away from the city by the Z-Type earlier, there could be some who were stuck within the confines of their homes, unable to leave even if they wanted to. These were the targets of the soldiers.

Yue Zhong walked within the province city in huge strides, with White Bones and Ming Jiajia following him. He was the strongest person within the troops, and was equivalent to an entire company of elite soldiers, hence he didn't need any protection.

Unless there were a few experts from the Wolf Fang Battalion, or some people from the Jingxi Province city that might be lying in ambush, killing Yue Zhong was going to be extremely tough in any sense of the idea. He was not some Enhancer that had just recently gotten strength after all, he had already grown to be a terrifying existence.

Zhang Zhi came running to Yue Zhong's side in excitement and spoke out: "Leader!! I've remembered something, there's an army camp here in the city, and there was a border regiment stationed here!!"

When Yue Zhong heard that, he also grew excited: "What!! Border regiment? That's great!!"

Yue Zhong had expended a few tonnes of fuel in this battle, as well as ammunition and firearms. If he could obtain the equipment and resources of this border regiment, then he would replenish his stock and further increase the strength of his troops.

A military jeep then came to a stop beside Yue Zhong, as they all boarded and Zhang Zhi led them towards the direction of the camp.

Zhang Zhi had an apologetic face: "Leader! I apologize for my memory, and did not remember the place soon. Do forgive me!"

Zhang Zhi was after all a platoon commander, and was considered an army official. Most border troops would be stationed at their own posts and seldom rotate about. Zhang Zhi had come into the province city before for a meeting, but due to his nature, he had almost forgotten about it until after Yue Zhong had conquered the province.

Yue Zhong chuckled, as he reassured him: "No problem! It's great that you remembered!"

Once he obtained those equipment, Yue Zhong intended to expand his army. Out of the 5,000 survivors under him, the army consisted of 1,000 of those people. If it were before the apocalypse, with such a huge force, governments would be strapped for cash.

However, this was the post-apocalyptic world, there were resources everywhere. As long as one could conquer a city, they could gain a lot of rewards. Furthermore, now that food could not be grown or farmed, only by constantly raiding other cities, could a power maintain its strength and existence. Otherwise, rations would run out.

As they travelled, Zhang Zhi brought a platoon of soldiers together with Yue Zhong as they stopped before a military camp on the outskirts of the city.

Yue Zhong walked directly towards the camp in huge strides.

The border military would at most have a thousand men, and based on Yue Zhong's current strength, killing a 1,000 zombies was not a problem.

Yue Zhong walked into the camp, and immediately discovered a few zombies decked in military uniform lumbering around. When they heard the sounds of Yue Zhong's footsteps, and smelled his scent, they lunged towards him in a frenzy.

"Take care of them!" Yue Zhong eyed the zombies coolly and ordered.

The platoon of soldiers stepped out, wielding their Tang Replica Swords, and under the lead of White Bones, they charged towards the group of zombies. They sliced through the zombies as easily as cutting cake, slaughtering them.

Another 2 platoons took up their arms, and started firing at another bunch of zombies in the distance. This was a good chance to train their Marksmanship skills.

Ming Jiajia also summoned out her Shadow Wolves, which pounced over and onto the zombies biting their heads off.

All of a sudden, from amidst the group of zombies, 10 S2s jumped out like spectres and immediately lunged for the platoon of soldiers with the Tang Replica Swords.

Yue Zhong had been sitting and observing the surroundings, so the moment those S2s appeared, he immediately waved his hands, and conjured 10 Devil Flame balls immediately which exploded on the heads of the S2s, incinerating them.

The L2 had also just made their appearance when they were immediately wiped out by Yue Zhong.

There were no Z-Type inside the group, hence they could not coordinate, and instead, acting on instinct and was easily slaughtered by the humans who had higher intellect.

After wiping out the zombie group, Yue Zhong casually opened up 4 treasure boxes, and received 2 Tang Replica Blades. He threw them to Ming Jiajia, as he ventured deeper into the camp.

"Ah! There seems to be living people here!!"

Yue Zhong walked for awhile, before he frowned and looked at the ground. He discovered that the ground was littered with a few zombie corpses, leading towards a storehouse in the distance. It was obvious that when the apocalypse happened, there was

someone who managed to sneak in.

Yue Zhong came to the front of the warehouse, and ordered White Bones: "Slice it open!!"

White Bones waved its huge axe and swung it viciously on the door of the storehouse. With a huge grating sound of metal on metal following that vicious strike, an enormous hole was carved out in that door.

In just a few swings, the metal door of the storehouse was chopped apart by White Bones.

"Don't move!! Otherwise, I'll open fire!!" Right as White Bones pushed the door inwards, there was a weak voice that travelled out from within the storehouse.

Yue Zhong frowned slightly, and ordered White Bones: "Go disarm those inside! Take care not to injure them!"

White Bones' fiery demonic eyes flashed in response, as it swiftly charged into the storehouse.

A few bellows of rage resounded from within the storehouse, followed by a few gunshots, after which, silence ensued.

Only then did Yue Zhong bring Ming Jiajia into the storehouse.

Inside the storehouse, there were 12 men decked in military uniform, their faces unkempt and bodies emitting a foul sour stench, as they stared at Yue Zhong and Ming Jiajia warily. There were piles of canned meat and biscuits as well as plain water at one corner of the storehouse. It was obvious that this group of soldiers had managed to survive with those rations.

One of the soldiers with a bearing of an officer eyed Yue Zhong and asked slowly: "Who're you?"

"My name's Yue Zhong, I'm the one saving you! Who're you guys?" Yue Zhong replied.

The officer pondered silently for awhile, before becoming



slightly red-eyed as he said: "I'm Kong Ziming! The Officer Commander of the Armored Company XX Regiment of the Border Guards! These are my men. What's going on out there, what has happened?"

Kong Ziming had initially witnessed his comrades turning into abominations and biting one another, causing many of his friends and co-workers to be bitten till they lacked any resemblance of a human. Even then, those dead friends suddenly arose from the dead and it seemed something out of a horror movie. If it wasn't for his quick thinking and bringing some men he could save into the storehouse, they would have died in the initial onset of the apocalypse.

Yue Zhong sighed and shook his head: "I'm unsure!! However, since you have survived, you must have heard that voice as well. This must be the mischief of a God!"

Kong Ziming gaped: "Is there really a god?"

Many people in the current society were considered atheists, but with such a huge shift in the world and its laws, everyone was clear that there was definitely a higher power.

Yue Zhong did not concern himself too much with that line of thought, instead he directly asked: "Kong Ziming! I have saved you guys! What are your plans from now on? Are you to join me, or will you leave?"

The problem of a divine being was too far for Yue Zhong to take into considerations, instead he was pragmatic and considered the current issue.

When Kong Ziming heard that, he regained his senses and directly responded with his own question: "Did you kill those zombies here?"

Yue Zhong replied with a direct statement: "Mm! They were killed by me! Oh right, Yanjing has been overrun, the military and

central government do not exist anymore. It's up to ourselves."

If the central government and military were still around, many military personnel would definitely heed the call of the government. Wanting to integrate them into one's own power would be tough.

Kong Ziming was bewildered: "Yanjing's overrun?!"

Without the directions and orders of the military or central government, it was natural for Kong Ziming to feel lost.

Kong Ziming thought for awhile before saying: "I would like to take a look before making a decision, is that ok?"

Kong Ziming was not sure what the outside world had become. He was unwilling to bring his subordinates to serve an unknown guy like Yue Zhong without fully understanding what he was like.

Yue Zhong replied light-heartedly: "Of course! However, you guys will still have to help me train up a platoon of tank operators. As long as you guys do that, you're free to leave whenever you want."

Yue Zhong valued the technical expertise and experience of these seasoned soldiers, as long as they could train up a platoon of tank drivers, even if they left, he wouldn't mind.

Kong Ziming heaved a sigh of relief and nodded: "Sure!"

Zhang Zhi had just rushed over, and called out excitedly to Yue Zhong: "Leader!! Leader! This time, we've struck gold! There're tanks!! 12 tanks!! With these, we can establish our own tank platoon!!"

Tanks were considered the kings of the battlefield after all, with 12 tanks, if they could be driven then they could drive and crush their way through a zombie horde. They were simply killing machines. Zhang Zhi was naturally exhilarated! If the 1st Battalion could have an Armored Company, then its prowess would naturally be above the 2nd Battalion.

Kong Mingzi looked at the blubbering Zhang Zhi, as he hesitated and quipped: "You're Zhang Zhi??"

Zhang Zhi faltered, taking a look at Kong Mingzi and asked: "Who're you?"

"Kong Mingzi!!" Kong Mingzi responded.

Zhang Zhi was shocked: "Commander Kong!!"

# Chapter 362: Raid!

---

Kong Mingzi and Zhang Zhi were old comrades that had not met and talked for some time, hence they naturally burst into an exchange. Yue Zhong did not disrupt them and left quietly, walking outside.

Yue Zhong had just exited the storehouse when he discovered intense gunshots from afar. His face fell and he instantly rushed towards the direction of the commotion.

At the entrance of the camp, there was a gunfight happening, as a group of militants dressed in an assortment of motley clothing were currently attacking the camp in a frenzy.

The militants however, did not make any move to charge into the camp, instead opting to hide behind cover whilst firing at the soldiers within the camp.

Countless bullets flew, yet the casualties on both sides were minimal.

"People inside, listen up!! We are from the government of Tianxin Province!! The weapons and equipment inside are properties of the country! Other than the government, no one else can use it! Quickly surrender and we can close an eye to all past transgressions!!"

Yue Zhong had arrived at the entrance by then and heard the mind games from the militants.

When the soldiers heard the cries of those militants, they started to hesitate. If it were zombies or the Vietnamese, they would not hesitate to take them out. However, if they were to act against government officials, they could not bring themselves to do it. After all, they were working for the government prior.

However, the majority of the soldiers were survivors that Yue Zhong had rescued in Vietnam, and they only acknowledged Yue

Zhong and no one else. None of them had any reservations about firing at these militants!

Yue Zhong's eyes turned cold and he called out loudly: "I'm Yue Zhong! I order you to immediately put down your weapons and kneel to receive your punishments! Otherwise, I'll spare no one!"

The loud one amongst the militants immediately responded: "Yue Zhong, is it? The weapons inside belong to the country! As long as you hand them over to the government, we will compensate you with resources and medals!! If you want to continue resisting, then it's tantamount to going against the country, the government and the people! You'll be labelled as traitors! You'll receive the admonishments of the people!!"

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed coldly, and ordered White Bones: "Kill them!"

In this kind of situation, regardless if those militants were really from the government, Yue Zhong could not care less. As long as they were attacking him, they were enemies.

Upon receiving the command, White Bones' demonic fiery eyes flashed, and in a single leap, it charged out towards the exterior like a bolt of lightning.

Ming Jiajia standing by Yue Zhong's side also summoned her Shadow Wolf, as it melded into the shadows of White Bones, following its charge out.

When White Bones emerged from the camp, those militants turned their fire towards it, and the bullets only served to ricochet off its armor, not impeding its charge in the slightest manner.

White Bones possessed a speed that was 5 times that of a normal person, and in launching itself, it managed to charge through a point of cover, and chop down viciously. In that swing of its axe, a man immediately lost his head, as fresh blood splattered onto White Bones' body.

After killing one of the militant men in a single swing, 4 sharp bone spikes emerged from White Bones' shoulder. Suddenly, they shot towards 4 other vantage points, and pierced through 4 of the militants, before pulling them towards it in a single file of struggling bodies. White Bones then swung its axe and immediately sliced them in two, causing fresh blood to flow out from their bottomless bodies!! It was truly a terrifying scene.

"Ahh!!!"

"Ahhh!!"

The 4 militants did not die at the first instant, instead they rolled around screaming and moaning in agony. It had thoroughly shaken the morale of the other militants.

"That's an Enhancer!!"

"A high-level Enhancer? Too fearsome!! It's like a demon!!"

"....."

When they saw their comrades slaughtered so easily, the remaining militants felt their hearts tremble, as they lost all sense of their fighting will.

White Bones then charged towards the hiding place of the rest of the militants in a furious manner.

The militants immediately collapsed and tried to escape when they saw White Bones charging at them.

Yue Zhong's gaze frost over, as he held up his .03 rifle, and fired a few bullets, instantly killing those escaping militants with headshots! As long as it was an enemy, Yue Zhong would not hesitate to wipe them out, regardless of their background.

"Beast! Don't go overboard!! You think only you're a high-level Enhancer?" Following a bellow of rage, 6 Enhancers decked in assorted clothings jumped out from nowhere.

One of them was a burly man, wielding a huge hammer and giant

steel shield, he was obviously a Strength-based Enhancer. Another was wielding a 2m-long mace single-handedly. 2 others held daggers in their hands, and their speed was even higher than White Bones when they charged out, it could be seen that they were Agility-based Enhancers.

Strength and Agility-based Enhancers were the most commonly seen experts. Other than those 4, there was a scrawny man with his hands wide opened, and a transparent barrier blocking in front of them, preventing any stray bullets from hitting them.

Finally, there was a young man with glasses as he stood amongst the rest and gazed at Yue Zhong coldly.

"The Heavenly Kings have made their move!!"

"This time, that Enhancer is dead meat!! The 6 Heavenly Kings are about to take action, he will definitely die!!"

"....."

When they saw the appearance of the 6 Enhancers, the remaining militants who had lost all their morale immediately regained some sense of confidence, as they shouted loudly.

Yue Zhong flipped his hand, and a PF98 appeared within his hands, as he aimed quickly and fired a shot at the 6 Enhancers.

With a flash, the rocket shot forwards and exploded on the transparent barrier with a loud boom! Under the flaming explosion, the barrier was shattered into pieces. The Enhancer with the [Barrier] skill suffered the backlash as he spat out a mouthful of blood and crumpled to the ground.

"He just used a rocket launcher!!" The young man in glasses immediately had a change in expression, as he shouted out in shock and dove for cover.

Losing the protection of the barrier, the remaining 4 Enhancers were immediately hit with the bullets as they tried to escape behind cover as well. Since they were wearing high-level Mutant

Beasts hide, as long as they did not reveal their heads, it would be hard to take them out.

Yue Zhong's eyes narrowed, as he stared at one of the Agility-based Enhancers and activated his [Art of Fear], as an oppressive spiritual blast that assaulted the mind of the targeted Enhancer. His eyes flashed with fear, as he was overcome by the horrendous images, and he fainted immediately.

"He's difficult to handle!! We have to escape!!!" The young man in glasses said in a low voice. He had vastly underestimated this troop of soldiers as well as Yue Zhong. In their original plan, the 6 of them coupled with their 200 soldiers were enough to take down the camp, however, with the appearance of Yue Zhong, their plans had come to naught.

The Enhancer wielding the mace pointed to White Bones that was slaughtering the militants and said: "Jiang Ming!! Hurry and retreat! Our brothers will be killed by that freak soon!!"

Without anyone stopping it, White Bones could easily slaughter the 200 some militants. It had followed Yue Zhong from his very first battle, and possessed terrifying combat strength. Its bones were mostly impervious to guns and physical weapons, and normal people would find it impossible to even cause a wound.

Jiang Ming's face fell: "Shen Zhe! If we stay here, we would be annihilated!!"

"Let's scram!!" The other Agility-based Enhancer nodded and agreed. When the 1st Agility-based Enhancer had noiselessly slumped to the ground, his heart was filled with fear.

Without any hesitation, the remaining 4 Enhancers quickly turned and tried to escape towards the forest.

"Want to escape? Not that easy!" Yue Zhong laughed coldly when he saw the attempts of the 4 escaping Enhancers. Taking aim, he pulled out his Stinger, and swiftly fired 2 shots in the direction of



the forest.

In that instant, the slower Strength-based Enhancers found their heads blasted apart, as their headless bodies slumped to the ground.

Yue Zhong then eyed the remaining Agility-based Enhancer and casted his [Art of Fear], causing the powerful Spiritual attack to overload the mind of that same Enhancer, as he fainted to the ground helplessly.

Within a few breaths, Yue Zhong had taken care of 3 of the Enhancers, and he shot forwards with his speed 11 times that of a normal person, reaching the remaining Enhancer Jiang Ming like an flying arrow!

In 4 seconds, Yue Zhong managed to chase up to Jiang Ming and had pulled out his Stinger, aiming at the latter.

Right as Yue Zhong had pulled out his gun, Jiang Ming raised his hands and kneeled immediately, shouting: "Don't kill me!! I surrender!!!"

Yue Zhong gazed at him coldly while waiting for him to calm down.

Jiang Ming shuddered involuntarily on the floor, his back almost slick with his perspiration, he could feel the cold murderous gaze of Yue Zhong like a ferocious beast locked on him. The moment he made any strange moves, he would be dead.

Yue Zhong barked out an order coldly: "Move!"

Jiang Ming stood up docilely, as he walked out of the forest. When he walked past the corpses of his 2 Strength-based comrades, he shivered, as he had almost faced the same fate.

When they came out into the clearing, he saw that the militants he had brought had surrendered their weapons, their hands hugging their heads, and were being watched by the troops of Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong then directly asked Jiang Ming: "Who are you people?"

The soldiers on Yue Zhong's side also looked towards Jiang Ming, especially the soldiers from the Border Guards, they wanted to know the background of these defeated militants.

# Chapter 363: Bei Mingyang

---

Yue Zhong's eyes narrowed and he stared at Jiang Ming coldly: "If you dare lie, I'll kill you immediately!"

Jiang Ming's body shuddered as he started to reveal everything to Yue Zhong.

The bunch of militants were the survivors of Tianxin Province. Just 3 days ago, there was a man called Bei Mingyang who brought some people to conquer it. Bei Mingyang was also a capable person, unifying the surrounding powers and commanding over 20,000 people as well as 3,000 soldiers under him. Amongst the 3,000 soldiers, there was a company of Border Guards, their overall combat prowess was strong.

After he conquered Tianxin Province, a few survivors told Bei Mingyang about the situation and information regarding the nearby military camps. This was when the militants were dispatched over here to reclaim it. There were indeed a few government officials amongst those people that Bei Mingyang had under him, but they were just puppets.

Hearing that the current Tianxin Province wasn't governed by their previous employer, the border guard soldiers all heaved a sigh of relief.

"20,000 survivors and 3,000 soldiers?" When Yue Zhong heard Jiang Ming's words, he frowned and contemplated silently.

Yue Zhong suddenly asked: "Jiang Ming, if I want Bei Mingyang to come and submit to me, how confident are you of convincing him?"

Jiang Ming's eyes went wide, as he hesitated before replying with difficulty: "Leader Yue! These kind of words, I have no confidence at all."

Yue Zhong continued: "What kind of armored division does Bei

Mingyang have?"

Jiang Ming's heart went cold, then he thought for awhile and responded: "I've seen a motorcycle group! A few gun-mounted vehicles, 8 IFVs, 20 cars with machine guns, 4 Red Arrows, and 4 Howitzers. Bei Mingyang had brought some men to open up a military camp before, and these were his spoils."

Yue Zhong frowned more, as he thought to himself before finally saying: "Fine! Go back! Tell Bei Mingyang, I would like to speak to him!"

Jiang Ming had an incredulous look: "You're letting me go?"

Yue Zhong glanced at him and replied: "Or would you like to stay here indefinitely? I can always send someone else!"

Jiang Ming hurriedly interjected: "No!! No!! I'll leave now! I'll leave now!!"

After which, Jiang Ming then swiftly turned and ran towards the distance, while he threw the fate of his fellow Enhancers to the back of his mind.

When Jiang Ming ran, Zhang Zhi and the rest reorganized the camp, and they transported the equipment into the heart of Jingxi Province.

\*\*\*

In the lush office of the conference room in Tianxin Province.

A medium-built man, with energetic eyes, and an air of elegance between his brows looked at Jiang Ming. This man dressed in military wear was the current leader of Tianxin Province, Bei Mingyang.

"Yue Zhong wants to see me?" Bei Mingyang's eyes flashed with a mischievous light, as his index finger tapped the armrest it was on. He continued: "Jiang Ming! Do you know why he wants to see me?"

Jiang Ming hesitated a while, before hardening his skin and said:

"Boss Bei, Yue Zhong wants you to surrender to him!!"

Jiang Ming's words instantly caused an uproar within the conference room.

One of the men within the room who looked tanned and short yet extremely muscular cursed out loud: "Damn it!! That Yue Zhong must have have knocked his head? He wants us to surrender to him? He should surrender to us that dumb shit!!"

"Boss Bei!! Send the troops to eliminate him!! Take his Jingxi Province!!"

"Boss Bei!! That Yue Zhong dared to kill our men, he sure is gutsy. Let me take some men to wipe him out!!"

"....."

In the meeting hall, almost everyone was calling for Yue Zhong's blood. Only Jiang Ming remained silent, after facing Yue Zhong, he was extremely clear on Yue Zhong's strength, and he felt that even if Bei Mingyang sent everyone, it would be impossible to win against a prepared Yue Zhong.

Bei Mingyang's eyebrows arched, as his face turned gloomy: "Silence!!"

The meeting hall instantly went quiet. Bei Mingyang held authority within this Tianxin Province after all, and was the one who had conquered it with his troops.

Bei Mingyang just sat there and stared at the silent, middle-aged man with a knife-scar on his face and asked: "Shang Lun! What do you think?"

This man was the only man within the entire camp to wield power other than Bei Mingyang, and was his right-hand man. Within Tianxin Province, his words carried weight as well.

Shang Lun's heart turned cold, as he looked around at the passionate people with the hall, as he hesitated for awhile, before

saying softly: "I think there's nothing wrong with having a discussion with Yue Zhong."

While Shang Lun looked like a simpleton, he in fact, possessed high intelligence. Since Yue Zhong could conquer Jingxi Province, it meant that his power was not weak. He did not want to blindly call for his blood, only to be sent forth by Bei Mingyang, and in the end, expend his own force. In this post-apocalyptic world, only strength mattered, those without strength, would only suffer.

With those words, Bei Mingyang's brows arched even further, and his eyes flashed with unhappiness, but soon, it disappeared, and no one saw it.

A heavily-tattooed man with blond hair stood out and spoke out tauntingly: "Shang Lun! You must be frightened? If you're scared just say so!! What a useless piece of trash!"

Shang Lun responded with an equally challenging gait: "Gan Luowang! Since you're so good, why don't you take care of this problem!! You're just talking after all! If you have the balls, go bring some men to wipe Yue Zhong out! If you succeed, your father I will personally kowtow to you and admit my mistakes. If you don't dare, shut that smelly trap of yours and admit that in front of everybody now!"

Gan Luowang was the third strongest person that Bei Mingyang had groomed, and he was a powerful Agility-based Evolver, having reached a level of 37. Other than that, he had over 300 subordinates, and they were all thugs who dared to risk their lives.

Gan Luowang looked back with contempt and challenged: "Shang Lun! If your father I brought people to take down Yue Zhong, you'd kneel in front of your father I, is that right?"

Shang Lun responded with a cold stare: "That's right! If you don't dare to take your troops out to wipe Yue Zhong out! Then you have to admit to everyone present here you're a coward!!"

Gan Luowang immediately rose up to the challenge and jumped to his feet, shouting: "Good!! Your father I, will take my troops to go take Yue Zhong down now! Shang Lun, just wait to kneel in front of your father, I!!!"

Shang Lun laughed coldly: "Let's wait till you actually accomplished it!!"

"Just you wait!!" Gan Luowang threw a look at Shang Lun and immediately rushed out without waiting for Bei Mingyang to say a single word. He was afraid that Bei Mingyang would stop him, so he swiftly left, and disappeared from the meeting hall.

Bei Mingyang watched the scene with furrowed brows. Gan Luowang was a naturally awakened Evolver, and possessed immense combat ability. He was a genius, but he was too hasty and liked to do things his way, and this led Bei Mingyang to be frustrated at times.

Bei Mingyang then glanced at Shang Lun and said indifferently: "Shang Lun, Lao Hui!! Both of you go take your men to reinforce Gan Luowang!"

"Yes! Boss Bei!!" Shang Lun lightly sighed in his heart, as he replied in a low voice. He was satisfied that he had escaped being today's scapegoat. Bei Mingyang possessed the strongest hand in Tianxin Province, and as long as Shang Lun wasn't forced into a corner, he wasn't willing to disobey Bei Mingyang's orders.

"Yes! Boss Bei!!" The leader of the other smaller faction Lao Hui replied respectfully.

Gan Luowang had quickly arrived near Jingxi Province.

"So that is Jingxi Province? Nothing special about it!!" Gan Luo Wang eyed the entrance as he chuckled coldly.

Behing Gan Luowang stood 300 warriors decked in black suits and they held rifles in their hands, while they hung Tang Replica Swords by their hips. These 300 warriors were all Enhancers, and

while their levels were only around 6 or 7, there were a few who had reached above Level 10. Such a troop was personally led by Gan Luowang. They had killed over 2,000 zombies, and was termed as the Death God Team.

Gan Luowang took one more look at the entrance of Jingxi Province, before turning to his Death God Team and called out: "Brothers! See that? That is Jingxi Province!! There are huge amounts of resources, women and equipment! Once we kill our way in, everything will be ours!! As long as you follow me in, within 3 days, whatever you want to do, I'll allow it! You can play or kill what you wish!"

"Hurray for Leader!!"

"Kill our way in!! Take their resources and women!!"

"Kill! Kill! Kill!!"

"....."

Hearing Gan Luowang's boiling speech, the eyes of those thugs from the Death God Team started to turn bloodshot, as they roared out loudly, their morale reaching a peak.

Gan Luowang had always liked to use such tactics to raise the morale and fighting spirit of his troops. That was the reason why his troops were the most willing to fight and risk it all amongst Bei Mingyang's faction.

"Kill!!" Gan Luowang bellowed in fury, as he pulled out his own Dark Magic Blade, and charged towards Jingxi Province. He only knew how to use a blade, and wasn't proficient with guns.

With the leadership of Gan Luowang, the 300 warriors charged forwards with their battle cries.

"Enemy attack!!!"

The soldiers at the entrance of Jingxi Province discovered the 300 enemies and immediately raised the alarm, and the entire Jingxi



Province resounded with the warning bells.

At the entrance, there were 4 firing points, and they immediately started firing. A dense reply to the attack, a rain of bullets, sprayed towards the charging soldiers of the Death God Team!

# Chapter 364: Collapse

---

Amidst the rain of bullets, those soldiers from the so-called "Death God Team" were shot rapidly, and many fell onto the ground, bleeding from various wounds. In just a few breaths, there were tens of them lying on the ground.

Seeing their comrades falling to the ground, the remaining warriors of the Death God Team split up and dove for cover, as they raised their guns and started firing in the direction of Jingxi Province.

As the leader, Gan Luowang activated his level 2 [High Speed Movement] that was enhanced 3 times, and with the skill and his equipment, he reached a speed that was 16 times that of a normal human, exceeding even Yue Zhong! A normal person would have no means of locking onto such a terrifying existence.

A huge amount of bullets landed around Gan Luowang, but they did not manage to even scratch him.

In just 10 seconds, Gan Luowang had run in a zigzag manner and crossed the distance of 600m to charge into Jingxi Province. In that entire distance, he wasn't hit once by a bullet at all.

Gan Luowang had rushed past a fortification, and charged into the defence point, killing 4 of the soldiers inside easily like a spectre. The firing from that point ceased immediately.

After casually slaughtering 4 soldiers, Gan Luowang then swiftly ran out from the fortification, and in just a few blinks, appearing within another firing point. He waved his Dark Magic Blade again and killed those 4 soldiers.

Gan Luowang had already destroyed 2 firing points just like that, and he made his way towards another location, preparing to swing his blade at the door of the firing point.

All of a sudden, his face froze in horror, as he dove towards the

side hastily.

With a huge bang, the door exploded outwards, and countless metal shards flew out in all directions. There were a few booby traps behind that door!

Gan Luowang's reaction was truly amazing, but as the distance to the epicentre was too close, countless metal shards had landed on his body.

The majority of the shards were blocked by the Mutant Beast hide that he wore, while 2 small shards had shredded his face and 1 in particular had resulted in a hole in his ear.

Enhancers were not invincible after all, in a battle, with all sorts of means, they could be injured as well. Even if Gan Luowang was an Agility-based Evolver, and his abilities far surpassing normal humans, it would be hard to guarantee that he would be totally unscathed. If it wasn't for the beast hide, in that earlier explosion, Gan Luowang might have suffered greatly.

"Fuck!!! All you fuckers wanna die!!!" After receiving injuries, Gan Luowang turned even more savage, and charged into the defence point.

"High Level Enhancer? You sure are capable! However, don't look down on us normal people!" A soldier saw Gan Luowang charging in and laughed lightly, his eyes flashed with a hint of desolate determination, as he pressed down on a button.

Gan Luowang saw the actions of the soldier and a huge sense of crisis welled up in his heart, and he turned to retreat hastily.

With a huge hong!!

A terrifying explosion shook the entire fortification structure and swallowed it up, as dust rushed to the skies. The entire structure collapsed unto itself, and was destroyed immediately.

A small captain of the Death God Team charged out from his cover, and shouted: "The leader has destroyed their morale, it's up

to us now! Charge!!'

With the encouragement of the captain, all the warriors of the Death God Team charged out from their covers, and they made for the direction of the Jingxi Province.

Gan Luowang had become the sharp knife to fight against the defence points and experts, after which the Death God Team would follow suit and destroy the remaining the soldiers. This was the way the Death God Team had always fought, and with this method, they had conquered many smaller factions. Without the frontline defences, these factions would be powerless to stop the Death God Team.

Facing the assault of the Death God Team, the remaining defence point fired wildly at the Death God Team.

A huge number of them were immediately pierced by the bullets, as they fell to the ground.

However, the lone firing from this defence point was not enough to block the charge of so many soldiers, and many of these warriors still managed to overrun them.

After destroying the remaining defence point, the Death God Team continued onwards into Jingxi Province with a savage glint in their eyes. In their past battles, as long as they breached the first line of defence, they would start to enjoy success and could indulge in their desires and go wild.

As the lead of the reinforcements, Lao Hui took a look at the entry of the Death God Team from afar as he exclaimed brightly: "Gan Luowang really did it! He managed to breached Jingxi Province!! Brothers, let's charge forwards!!! Once we enter, the women, resources and equipment will be yours!! Kill!!"

"Kill!!"

"Kill!!"

"Kill!!"

"....."

The 200 soldiers that were led by Lao Hui heard his words, and their morale was also boosted. They took up their guns and blades, as they charged towards Jingxi Province in a frenzy. There were women, resources and equipment.

Bei Mingyang had only opened up a military camp, and obtained a battalion's worth of equipment. These equipment were naturally given to his elite soldiers first. The rest of the faction could only gain some leftover training rifles or handguns.

Shang Lun saw Lao Hui charging towards Jingxi Province and frowned, as he kept silent and did not give the order to follow suit.

Lao Hui had only thought of the rewards, and did not think to consult Shang Lun before leading his troops towards Jingxi Province. Such rewards belonged to whoever had the strength to obtain them first, wanting them to cough the items up would be difficult.

One Enhancer who was standing beside Shang Lun called out urgently: "Boss!! Let us charge forwards too!! If not, we won't even get a scrap afterwards!!"

"Yea!! Boss!! Let us charge forwards!!"

"....."

Shang Lun's subordinates were all warriors as well, and were currently extremely attracted to the rewards and spoils of war. This was an entire city they were talking about, and there were bound to be countless good stuff within. If they could gain even a little of it, they could live a decent life.

Shang Lun frowned and replied in a low voice: "Let's wait first!! Since Yue Zhong could conquer Jingxi Province, this is not the extent of his power. No one should think of making a rash move! Otherwise, I'll be merciless!!"

Under the berating of Shang Lun, the restless soldiers stopped in

their place.

Shang Lun went to a high vantage point on his own and held a binoculars, as he scoped out the happenings in Jingxi Province.

By this time, the Death God Team had breached the entrance, and without stopping, they were making their way towards the centre of the town.

Just when they managed to charge in for about 10m, from the surrounding buildings, a few defence positions were suddenly set up. Countless bullets covered the Death God Team, and the ruthless rain of metal caused the deaths of many more warriors.

The remaining Death God Team members were immediately scattered as they began to recover from their initial battlelust, while hiding behind cover, and started to return fire.

"Where's the leader?? Where's Leader Gan?"

"Where's the leader??"

"....."

When the Death God Team were stopped in their tracks by the relentless defence, they started to seek for their core and leader Gan Luowang. If he was here, the enemy's defence would have long been destroyed.

"Don't tell me, the leader has already been done in??"

In the midst of searching for Gan Luowang to no avail, one of the Death God Team blurted out this thought, which could possibly destroy their morale.

"Impossible!! The leader would not die!!!" One of the warriors screamed back and fired in a frenzy at the surrounding buildings. If Gan Luowang had truly died, only the huge explosion earlier could have killed him.

The warrior from the Death God Team had followed Gan Luowang through countless battles, and while their weapons could

not compare with Yue Zhong's troops, their morale and team spirit was undoubtedly higher.

At this time, Lao Hui had also brought his 200 soldiers over, as they saw the numerous corpses of the Death God Team, they started to hesitate. He could feel the cruelty of this battle.

Lao Hui had followed Bei Mingyang for quite a while, and in most battles, they only saw a few dozens of deaths at most. However, in his journey here, the death count had reached over a hundred. The losses of the Death God Team were really huge.

"Where in the world is Gan Luowang?" Lao Hui pulled a Death God Team soldier over and questioned. Gan Luowang was after all a genius and Evolver, Lao Hui was naturally not a match for him. If Gan Luowang was still around, Lao Hui would then have confidence to attack Jingxi Province.

"The leader is dead!!!" Right at this time, an agonized moan came from afar. The captain of the small troop had finally discovered Gan Luowang's flattened corpse under a huge rock, with a look of resentment and disbelief in his eyes.

"The leader is dead!!!"

"The leader is dead!!!"

"....."

The sound was like a plague that spread extremely quickly amongst the Death God Team. The originally high morale immediately collapse, and all the warriors started to retreat from their positions.

Gan Luowang was the beacon of strength among them, and was the undefeatable trump card. If he was still around, they would still possess the spirit to continue fighting. With his death, they had totally lost all will.

"What's going on?? Gan Luowang had actually died??" When Lao Hui heard this news, his heart trembled, as he looked at the rapidly

retreating Death God Team members, not knowing what to do.



# Chapter 365: Forced Surrender

---

"Fire the cannons!!" Zhang Zhi was currently in the command centre giving an order coolly.

With the flashes from 2 122m Howitzers, 2 rockets landed amongst the dead corpses of the Death God Team.

Following the huge sound and terrifying explosion, 30 dead Death God Team soldiers as well as the soldiers under Lao Hui were immediately blasted and sustained heavy injuries, many of them with missing limbs.

At the same time, a number of mortars had landed among the soldiers and exploded consecutively, causing 7 or 8 of the soldiers to be bombed into flying meaty bits.

Amidst the terrifying explosions, the soldiers' morale had dropped to almost zero, as the members of the Death God Team started to abandon their weapons and escape towards all directions. If Gan Luowang was still around, they could have withstood the attacks of the rockets, but since he was already dead, they had no morale or fighting spirit to put up a resistance.

After the detonation of the 2 rockets on Lao Hui's troops, they lost all sense of order as the warriors scrambled to get out of the area of impact. Even Lao Hui himself was rushing to escape.

Lao Hui was a Level 33 Enhancer, but even he could not withstand the impact and blast damage of a 122mm Howitzer round. Furthermore, the area of impact was more than 10m in diameter. He was not an Agility-based Evolver that could make use of [Danger Perception], and based on his abilities, even if he did manage to detect the danger, he had no means of dodging the area of impact.

Just 2 rounds of artillery could cause the soldiers of Lao Hui as well as the Death God Team to lose all bearings, this was the

fundamental difference between a proper military and a militia. It was the first time for Lao Hui and the rest who had been fighting against zombies all this while to be facing a human enemy with modern weaponry.

Right as the 2 troops were focused on escaping, an entire platoon wielding .03 rifles appeared from behind them and charged at them!!

"Kneel down and surrender! We won't kill those who surrender!!"

"Kneel down and surrender! We won't kill those who surrender!!"

"....."

The platoon of soldiers charged forwards, shouting as they fired shots.

Wu Yin, who was decked in military wear, brandished his Dark Magic Blade and slashed about when he charged into the midst of the retreating soldiers, each time his blade flashed, a soldier would be killed.

It was a scene of slaughter. The soldiers under Lao Hui and Death God Team had lost their spirits, and had no way of resisting the assault of the soldiers.

Many of the Death God Team members and Lao Hui's troops were killed, while others were smart enough to quickly throw their weapons and hugged their heads with their hands as they quickly squatted, shivering uncontrollably, awaiting treatment from the enemy.

On the plateau at a distance, Shang Lun saw how quickly his comrades were dealt with, and his heart went cold.

He celebrated silently in his heart as he thought: "So this must be Yue Zhong's power? I'm afraid it's only one small part of it. He should still have plenty of moves that he hasn't yet employed. Fortunately I didn't charge in as well!!"

Even Shang Lun's subordinates were thanking the heavens that they did not follow suit early. If they had charged in to attack Jingxi Province, they might have been part of the collapse.

Zhang Liyang eyed Shang Lun as he asked: "Boss! What do we do now? Do we save them?"

The 400 soldiers that followed Shang Lun were brothers that have fought beside him in countless battles. Of the 400, 100 had rifles, 50 had handguns, there were only 3 sniper rifles, 12 shotguns, 6 fog shotguns, and 79 submachine guns. They were a decent sized force and could face the platoon of warriors.

Shang Lun's eyes flashed as he contemplated, before sighing heavily and said in a resolute tone: "No!! We're retreating now!!"

"Yes! Boss!!" Shang Lun's subordinates replied in unison.

"Although you have made the right decision, it was too late!! Since you guys are here, you can stay!!" Right as Shang Lun and his troops were about to retreat, 2 men and a girl came up from behind them, they were Yue Zhong, White Bones and Ming Jiajia.

Yue Zhong walked forward with huge strides, his eyes fixed on Shang Lun.

Hearing Yue Zhong's voice, Shang Lun's subordinates all reacted, as they held up their guns and aimed at him.

Yue Zhong eyed those guns and spoke out coldly: "I dislike people pointing their weapons at me! In 4 seconds, if you guys don't put it down, I'll have you all buried here, not a single one of you will be able to leave alive!!"

"What arrogance!!" Zhang Liyang heard Yue Zhong's words, and his eyes flashed with fury, as he scolded back.

"Put down your weapons!!" Shang Lun eyed Yue Zhong, as he narrowed his eyes and waved his hands, before asking Yue Zhong: "Who're you?"

The 100+ guns were all lowered, as everyone present shifted their gaze to Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong responded indifferently: "I'm Yue Zhong! I'm here personally to advise you guys to surrender! You can do that, or choose to die here. There're only 2 options!"

"Yue Zhong! You're the leader of Jingxi Province Yue Zhong?" When Shang Lun heard that, his heart skipped a beat, and he couldn't help but exclaim. He had assumed that the person in front of them was a terrifying Enhancer, but he did not expect that it would be Yue Zhong himself.

The 400 warriors under Shang Lun had a huge change in expressions as well, their eyes flashed with a strange glint. The boss of Jingxi Province was right here in front of them, as long as they could capture him, Jingxi Province would practically fall into their laps.

Yue Zhong replied mildly: "That's right!"

Shang Lun looked at him fearfully, while suppressing the notion of capturing Yue Zhong and asked: "Yue Zhong! Even if you're truly powerful, on what grounds do you think you will be able to keep the 400 of us here?"

"Is this enough for you?"

Yue Zhong lightly clapped his hands, and behind him, countless Mutant Leopard Cats led by Lightning stepped out from the forest, eyeing the 400 soldiers with a ferocious gaze.

"Type 2 Mutant Leopard Cat!! You're actually able to command a Type 2 Mutant Beast???" Shang Lun took one look at Lightning, as a look of horror appeared on his face, as he muttered out dejectedly.

A Type 2 Mutant Beast could take a Level 40 Enhancer down easily. To deal with one, it required the cooperation of numerous experts. Otherwise, only modern weapons such as rocket

launchers, tanks and assault helicopters would be of use.

Just Lightning itself would be able to take care of Shang Lun and his soldiers within a matter of seconds. Needless to say the rest of the Mutant Leopard Cats that followed behind.

All 400 of the soldiers under Shang Lun were around Level 5 or 6, and was by no means able to compare with the Mutant Leopard Cats in terms of speed. Without any structures, running about would just mean death.

Seeing the 100 or so Mutant Leopard Cats, the expressions of the soldiers of Shang Lun turned ugly. If Yue Zhong really could control those Mutant Beasts, in just a single call, they would be totally wiped out. At most, they could kill a few Mutant Leopard Cats in retaliation.

"Surrender! Or death?!" Yue Zhong reached out to pat Lightning's head, while glancing at Shang Lun and pressured once more.

Shang Lun immediately quietened down. He could feel the gazes of his comrades behind him, and just a single command could result in their deaths.

Shang Lun hesitated, before saying: "Yue Zhong! If I surrender, what will happen to my brothers and I?"

Yue Zhong replied in a low voice: "If there are no major misbehaviour, you guys will be immediately drafted into my troops, and undergo military training. If there are problems and past offences to be ironed out, those troublemakers would be directly thrown into the Scum Battalion, and can only rely on their own power and actions to crawl out from there."

By absorbing these warriors, Yue Zhong would usually separate them, and make them undergo training and reform, before filling up his troops. The disadvantage was that the power of these troops would not be enough to bolster his fighting force. However, the advantage was that these people would find it hard to leave and

stand on their own afterwards.

Shang Lun looked at his hands, before looking at Yue Zhong and said slowly: "Yue Zhong! I'm willing to get my brothers to submit to you. Please do not harm their lives!"

Yue Zhong replied: "Not a problem!"

The soldiers following Shang Lun were all painstakingly trained up by him. While their levels were not high, most of them were above Level 5, and had better physique than most people and were in the best conditions to fight for him. Yue Zhong would naturally not kill them for no reason.

After obtaining Yue Zhong's promise, he ordered his subordinates: "Everyone put down your weapons!!"

Under his orders, the 400 soldiers all surrendered the weapons in their hands.

Zhang Liyang shouted out, while his hands still held his submachine gun: "Boss!!"

Shang Lun stared and berated: "Put it down!!"

Zhang Liyang gritted his teeth, before throwing his gun down as well.

After commanding his subordinates to surrender, Shang Lun then stared at Yue Zhong and said: "However!! Yue Zhong!! If you want me to submit to you willingly, please do your best to defeat me! If you can defeat me, I will follow you wholeheartedly!! I'm called Shang Lun, a Level 42 Enhancer. I'm skilled at close combat, and my skills have been enhanced thrice!"

Seeing Shang Lun being so agreeable earlier, Yue Zhong decided to honor his request: "Sure!! I'll do as you wish!!"

Shang Lun waved his hands, and his subordinates immediately stepped back, leaving a space for the 2 to battle.

Yue Zhong gazed at Shang Lun and said: "Please start!"

"Be careful!!" Shang Lun's eyes turned cold, as he suddenly stepped forward with a strange movement, getting extremely close to Yue Zhong. The steps he used were truly mysterious, and in that few seconds, his speed actually exceeded that of the Agility-based Evolver Gan Luowang.

Yue Zhong stared fixedly at Shang Lun as his eyes narrowed, and he activated his [Art of Fear]. In that instant, the oppressive Spiritual attack overwhelmed the mind of Shang Lun.

Shang Lun was instantly enveloped in that crushing pressure, and he was stopped in his tracks.

Yue Zhong then kicked out savagely, his foot landing on Shang Lun's abdomen, sending him flying back by 3m. At the same time, he pulled out his Stinger and aimed at Shang Lun's head before saying coldly: "You've lost!"

Shang Lun endured his pain, as he climbed out slowly, his eyes full of bitterness: "I've lost!"

# Chapter 366: Discussion of Plans

---

\*Jingxi Province - changed to Jingxi City (as pointed out by msomer3)

\*Tianxin Province - changed to Tianxin District

When the subordinates of Shang Lun witnessed this scene, their hearts turned cold. They had followed Shang Lun through a number of battles, and they were clear on how fearsome his combat abilities could be.

Within a radius of 10m, Shang Lun could absolutely employ his close-combat skills. In the entire faction of Bei Mingyang, no one had the confidence of besting Shang Lun within 10m. Even the naturally awakened Agility-based Evolver Gan Luowang had been defeated by Shang Lun before. Such a strong person was actually defeated within a second by Yue Zhong, the subordinates of Shang Lun could not help but be bitter.

Yue Zhong suddenly looked towards a dark corner and spoke coldly: "Come out!! How long do you plan on spectating?"

Everyone threw their gaze to the corner, yet they did not discover anything.

"Since you're unwilling to step out alive, you can die!" Yue Zhong's gaze turned cold and he waved his hand, as he aimed his Stinger at the corner.

With a peng, there was a spurt of blood from the corner, and the space seemed to distort, as a person appeared out of thin air, at the same time moaning in agony.

White Bones pointed to the person, and a sharp bone spear shot out from its finger, piercing the head of the assailant, causing him to die instantly. White Bones then retracted its finger and pulled the corpse along with it, tossing the dead person in front of Shang Lun.



Yue Zhong commented indifferently: "You should know this guy right! Shang Lun!"

Shang Lun looked at the head of the dead person which had been pierced through, as he fought to fight down the fear threatening to overcome his heart and said slowly: "Yes! He's called Zheng Zigang, and is one of the trusted aides under Bei Mingyang. He has the skill [Distort Perception]. He was originally someone who lacked presence, and coupled with the skill, as long as he didn't move, no one could detect him at all."

With such a top-tier skill, even someone as high-levelled as Shang Lun would not be able to detect the presence of Zheng Zigang if he got close to him. In all sense, he was an assassin, a master at sneaking and intel gathering.

Shang Lun did not think that such an expert would actually fall in Yue Zhong's hands.

In fact, Yue Zhong had not discovered Zheng Zigang. It was when he was staring, and involuntarily emitted a killing intent that Yue Zhong could discover his position, and instantly took care of him. If Zheng Zigang had controlled his aura, Yue Zhong would not be able to detect him.

"Leader!!" Zheng Minghe had brought a company of soldiers as they arrived, and saluted him.

"He truly is the leader! He's too fearsome!" Zheng Minghe looked at the 400 soldiers of Shang Lun surrounded by the Mutant Leopard Cats and the abandoned weapons, and shock filled his heart, a complicated gleam in his eyes.

Following the display and spread of power of Yue Zhong, the ex-Freemasons realised their influence was getting weaker. There were only Zheng Minghe and a few others from the previous upper echelons that were left. As for the Chinese survivors that Yue Zhong rescued from Vietnam, they practically worshipped Yue Zhong, and many of them had been conferred high ranks. This led

to a sense of urgency within Zheng Minghe's heart, if this continued, he would only become a normal soldier in the future, and would not belong to the upper echelons.

"Go back!" Yue Zhong patted Lightning's head, and it turned around, bringing its little brothers into the forest.

Jingxi City was surrounded by mountains, and there were forests, streams as well as mountains everywhere. Lightning and its brothers could easily find food in such locations. Mutant Beasts were unlike humans after all, even if there were no prey within the forests, all they had to do was to enter the villages and enjoy themselves, after all the zombies were the best nutrients for these Mutant Beasts.

Zheng Minghe escorted Shang Lun and the rest back towards Jingxi City.

"In this battle! Our army had 29 casualties: 24 dead, 5 injured. We had killed a total of 282 enemies, and captured a total of 637 of them. We've obtained 400 firearms, as well as 40,000 ammunition. 20 vehicles, 20 tonnes rations...."

In the meeting hall within Jingxi City, Ming Jiajia was currently in a female military uniform, and in her hands, a thick stack of documents as she was reporting the details of the recent battle.

There were numerous subordinates of Yue Zhong gathered within the meeting hall at the moment.

A bespectacled man of about 36 years old cursed out loud: "Damn it!! This bastard Bei Mingyang actually dared to attack us!! Leader, let me take a few of our brothers to eradicate him!!"

Chen He was one of the Chinese that Yue Zhong rescued from Vietnam. After he was rescued, he trained extremely hard, and was valiant when it came to battling, and amongst those present, he was already the Company Officer of the 1st Company of the 1st Battalion. He had reached Level 18.

Chen He was not an Evolver, and did not possess any powerful skills, and without the equipment of the system that Yue Zhong provided, he would not be able the speed of levelling of Ming Jiajia.

Another male with a shaved head and black eyepatch as he was blind in one eye, shouted out aggressively: "Yeah!! Leader!! Let's kill that bunch of assholes!! The 2nd Company is willing to be the vanguard!!!"

"The 2nd Company from the 1st Battalion is willing to lead the charge! Let's go thrash those bastards!! We shall capture the daughter of that Bei Mingyang and make her serve our leader!!"

"....."

In the meeting hall, almost all the officers were like wolves as they erupted in calls for battle, and their battlelust reached an extreme high.

Shu Tianya who was sitting at a side, heard the various shouts from the leaders and a complicated feeling arose in her heart: "If the Chinese Association had such fighting spirit, how would we have been forced into a corner by Wuyan Hong?"

The Chinese Association was also an organization, with various factions within. When they faced Wuyan Hong, some of the warriors would fight to the death, just like Zheng Qiang, while others would conserve their strengths for self-preservation sake.

Even Shu Wenyan had to maintain some forces to deal with possible characters with unkind intentions within his organization, and since his hands and legs were bound, it was hard for him to expand.

Wei Ningguo hesitated awhile, before he chipped in: "Leader! Should we train up a batch of tank operators before we go and fight Bei Mingyang? After we train up an elite squad, he would not be a match for us at all!"

Yue Zhong had obtained the equipment from the Border Guards, and the soldiers were getting acquainted with the usage of these equipment, and in a short span of time, those cannons and tanks could not be utilized. When Shang Lun and the rest came to raid, Yue Zhong could only deploy 2 of the Howitzers to fend them off.

If they could raise a batch of reliable mortar hands, Yue Zhong could deploy 15 Howitzers to launch an intense volley of attacks on his enemies. That was more than enough to crush any enemy entirely.

Zheng Minghe also quipped in after awhile: "Yes! Leader, we should restrain ourselves first! In only a month's time, we could easily wipe Bei Mingyang's troops out! We have confidence in dealing with their troops in a battle in the wild, but assaulting their stronghold would be difficult now."

Hearing the words of Wei Ningguo and Zheng Minghe, the heat of the atmosphere simmered a little. Assaulting and fighting were different tactics, and in a siege, even if the defensive side had lesser fighting spirit, with enough weapons, they could cause enough hurt to the attacking side.

All the gazes landed on Yue Zhong, awaiting his order. To attack or to wait, was entire dependant on his decision.

"The weather is getting colder! In another few days, winter would most likely fall upon us! We don't have time to waste! I command the 1st, 2nd and 3rd Companies of the 2nd Battalion, as well as the Scum, Women and Captives battalion to launch an assault on Tianxin District. This battle, we can only achieve victory!" Yue Zhong's flashed coldly, and then continued: "Wei Ningguo, I command you as well as the 4th Company of the 2nd Battalion to prepare the troops in defending Jingxi City."

"Yes!!"

"Yes!"

All the subordinates replied spiritedly.

Yue Zhong then turned his gaze towards Shu Tianya who was observing the proceedings: "Miss Shu Tianya, I would like to invite you to bring your people and attack Tianxin District with us. Is that ok?"

Shu Tianya smiled coyly at Yue Zhong: "It's no problem of course! However, only my troops will go. If you want me to lend a hand personally, you will need to pay the right price!"

Shu Tianya was an intelligent woman, when she heard Yue Zhong's order, she could tell that Yue Zhong wanted to conquer Tianxin District at all costs. Yue Zhong had sent even the Scum, Captives and Women Battalion to leave Jingxi City, which showed his worry that things might erupt if he was not around.

Shu Tianya was considered to be a secondary part of Yue Zhong's forces as well, and since Yue Zhong was about to fight an intense battle, he would not leave her in his stronghold.

Yue Zhong smiled gently and said: "No problem!"

After the meeting concluded, the entire Jingxi City went into a bustle in preparation for the huge battle to come. Numerous small teams started to gather, and made their way towards Tianxin District.

In an office in Tianxin District.

Bei Mingyang stared at the soldiers who escaped back from the earlier battle, his eyes filled with disbelief as he gaped: "What? You said Gan Luowang, Lao Hui and Shang Lun had been overcome? Are you sure??"

The soldier had a look of fear as he replied: "Yes!! Boss Bei!! Gan Luowang and Lao Hui had been killed! Shang Lun and his subordinates had already surrendered to Yue Zhong! I have escaped with great difficulty. Yue Zhong can control Mutant Beasts! There was even a Type 2 Mutant Beast within his control!!"

"Control a Type 2 Mutant Beast?! How is that possible??" Bei Mingyang's eyes flashed with disbelief. The might of a Type 2 Beast was incredible, wanting to kill it was almost impossible, needless to say controlling it. Bei Mingyang had never seen anybody who could control Mutant Beasts before!

# Chapter 367: Stunning Counterattack

---

The soldier's eyes flashed with terror, as he continued: "It's true!! I saw a Type 2 Mutant Beast and 100 of its little brothers surrounding Shang Lun and his troops with my own eyes!! It was due to that, that Shang Lun submitted! Furthermore, Shang Lun and Yue Zhong had a duel, but he was defeated in a single move!!"

Bei Mingyang's face turned ashen, and he said pointedly: "Enough!!"

In that meeting hall, as the various leaders heard the report of the soldier, their expressions turned extremely ugly. If they truly wanted to contend with a freak who could control a Type 2 Mutant Beasts as well as an army of elites, it made their hearts nervous.

"Let's talk to him! See what he wants to say."

"En! Let's make contact, and see what kind of person he is!"

"....."

The atmosphere of the meeting hall had changed, and no one dared speak of fighting Yue Zhong.

The main difference between the 2 sides was that Yue Zhong was truly powerful and commanded everyone under him through the display of his absolute power. Bei Mingyang made use of his tactics to gather a few factions together to form a stronghold of about 50,000 people. Within this faction, Bei Mingyang had the most strength, but it was still democratic and Bei Mingyang had to listen to the views of the rest. It could not compare to Yue Zhong where a single sentence of his could get things done.

Bei Mingyang furrowed his brows slightly as he spoke in a low voice: "Speaking with him is not an issue! However, we still have to fight a battle with him, and we must win. Only then will we have the qualifications to negotiate with him."

The leader of another small faction lamented: "Gan Luowang and

Shang Lun have already been defeated! Who else can we send to fight against him?"

Gan Luowang and Shang Lun were the strongest fighting forces amongst the factions, and they had actually been subdued entirely by Yue Zhong. The rest of their fighting forces could not compare to the 2, and thus the various leaders had no confidence of dealing with Yue Zhong.

Bei Mingyang replied: "This time, we have to send a joint force! We must win against him, and let him taste our strength!"

"A joint team! Good!! If we all join forces, we can deal with Yue Zhong!"

"Good! This time we must let Yue Zhong experience our strength!"

"....."

Upon hearing the term joint forces, all the leaders excitedly went into a buzz. The joint forces meant the cooperation of all the various elites, and even Bei Mingyang's forces of 3 battalions would be sent out.

Right as Bei Mingyang had proposed the idea of a joint forces, was the moment when Tianxin District suddenly came under attack.

With a hong!!

Right as the various leaders were calling out in excitement, a terrifying explosion rang out, and the entire meeting hall was shaken by the shockwave. Countless dust and pieces were shaken loose as a result.

"What's going on?" Bei Mingyang was shocked, and he had a bad premonition.

"Quickly escape!! It's not safe here anymore!!" One of the leaders shouted loudly, and bolted out from the window.



The bad feeling continued to well up inside Bei Mingyang, as his body flashed, and he leapt out the other window.

The rest of the leaders also went into a panic, and some jumped out the windows, some hid under the meeting table.

It was 3-storey jump, and not everyone could jump out from 3 storeys and be totally fine.

With a huge hong! Just when Bei Mingyang had just jumped out from the building, a rocket landed explosively on the wall, causing it to be blasted, and the entire structure collapsed, debris falling everywhere and dust rising to the skies. Those people still within the building were instantly killed.

Bei Mingyang saw the state of the building and immediately felt horror, if he was just slightly slower, he would have joined the rest of the corpses within.

"What's going on? Who dares attack us?" Bei Mingyang was racking his brain, and trying to determine which party was so vicious, and had actually used a rocket to blast them.

Sounds of gunfire and explosions rang out from afar, and even those leaders within the government area of the district could hear the wild firing.

"Boss Bei!! Boss Bei!! Yue Zhong had brought men and are attacking us right now!! They're making use of heavy artillery, tanks and even powerful Enhancers to suddenly raid us. They have already broken through 6 main defences!! Boss Bei, quick think of something!!" A soldier covered entirely in blood ran up to Bei Mingyang's side and reported agitatedly.

Bei Mingyang's expression turned to one of incredulous disbelief, and immediately fired back: "What?! 6 defence lines already?! How is that possible? Those 6 defence lines have 2 companies of soldiers keeping guard! How can they be wiped out so quickly? How is this possible? How can their forces be so strong! What about the alarm?

How come we didn't receive any warning, until we were attacked??"

Bei Mingyang wasn't a fool, and had set up countless sentries around Tianxin District, to prevent the ambush of enemies. However those sentries had long since been wiped out by Ming Jiajia and Zheng Minghe. Without any alerts from the sentries, Yue Zhong could bring his men and directly attack Tianxin District.

"Go notify the entire army, withstand the attack!! No one is to retreat even a single step! I'll bring reinforcements right now!!" Bei Mingyang was after all passionate warrior, as his eyes flashed with a cold light and he hollered at the soldier.

After which, Bei Mingyang pulled out a walkie-talkie and fiddled with the switch before he shouted: "Zhao Zhigang! Go gather the troops. Within 30 minutes, they have to be assembled!"

Zhao Zhigang was the Battalion Commander of Bei Mingyang's elite 1st Battalion. Every single one of them was equipped with border guards' equipment, and there was even a company of veterans. Their combat power was truly strong. They were the right and left arms of Bei Mingyang as well.

"Boss Bei!! 30 minutes is too short!! Today was supposed to be a holiday, if you want the entire battalion to assemble, it would take at least 3 hours!!" Zhao Zhigang's exasperated voice resounded from within the walkie-talkie.

Bei Mingyang bellowed out in rage: "I don't care! I'm giving you only 30 minutes, after which you had better bring the troops to the frontlines! Otherwise I'll execute you!!"

It was a moment of crisis now, and Bei Mingyang had no way of retraining his calm demeanor.

Zhao Zhigang gritted his teeth and replied in a low voice: "Understood! Boss Bei!!"

Zhao Zhigang had also surmised the critical situation from the sounds of fighting at the frontlines. Who knows, Tianxin District might really end up in Yue Zhong's hands if they were careless.

Bei Mingyang recollected himself, before shouting into the walkie-talkie again: "Bai Xiaosheng!!! Bai Xiaosheng!!!"

However, regardless of how much Bei Mingyang shouted, there was no reply from the walkie-talkie.

Bei Mingyang's face had turned steely as he cursed: "Damn bastard!! At this sort of critical juncture, he had actually disappeared!!"

Bai Xiaosheng was the commander of the expert battalion that Bei Mingyang had groomed, and he possessed decent strength. At the same time, he commanded 12 Level 30 Enhancers, 26 Level 20 Enhancers, and a 168 Level 10 Enhancers.

Bai Xiaosheng and his experts battalion was also part of Bei Mingyang's arms, and they were truly strong!

It was precisely because Bei Mingyang had the experts battalion under Bai Xiaosheng and Zhao Zhigang's elite battalion that he could control the entire faction at Tianxin District. However, Bai Xiaosheng was a free spirit, and he liked to play and fool around with women, and was often not found anywhere. Bei Mingyang could tolerate his disappearances often, but at this crucial time, he was still nowhere to be found, that led Bei Mingyang to be furious beyond belief.

At Tianxin District's frontlines, Yue Zhong had brought his most elite forces from the 1st Battalion 1st Company, as well as Wu Yin, White Bones, Ming Jiajia and Zheng Minghe as they slaughtered their way through Tianxin District like a sharp knife.

Ming Jiajia had summoned her 5 Shadow Wolves, which melded into the shadows and would appear suddenly, biting the opposing soldiers in their necks, leaving them with no way to react.

On top of that, those Shadow Wolves could sniff out the location of humans, and Ming Jiajia would point out the hiding locations to Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong was wielding his .03 rifle. He clearly split his attention, on one hand, he took out any soldier within his line of sight. On the other, he continued commanding his troops in the course of battle.

White Bones was the sharpest and most dangerous vanguard he possessed. It could easily charge into the midst of the enemy and dance about with its bone blades, slaughtering the soldiers as easily as killing chickens. Its front was dyed full of blood, and those poor soldiers who got in its way would either be sliced in half or beheaded. The cruelty of their deaths shook their comrades greatly.

On the other side, Wu Yin wielded his Dark Magic Blade and weaved in and out of the enemy, following Yue Zhong's instructions to route the enemy and attack them from behind.

Zheng Minghe was proficient with modern weaponry, and he used a grenade launcher, as he followed Yue Zhong's instructions in firing at different important buildings, causing destruction everywhere.

These 5 experts of Yue Zhong co-ordinated and caused widespread destruction amongst the 1st company of soldiers they fought.

The 1st Company that followed Yue Zhong closely behind were also the elite of the elite, each of them decked in Type 3 Mutant Snake hide, as they pushed forward. They were adept at using grenades and mortars as they also blasted the enemies in front of them into pieces.

In a battle on the streets, the hardest thing was determining your enemies' locations. In this aspect, Ming Jiajia and her Shadow Wolves were more of use compared to Yue Zhong in doing so. Due

to the ease at which the wolves could detect the enemy, Yue Zhong's soldiers could easily wipe them out. Without Ming Jiajia, the frontal assault would not have gone so smoothly.

Yue Zhong brought the 1st Company and continued their rapid advance in, breaking through 6 defence lines, and finally slaughtered the Border Guards of Bei Mingyang. He left the remaining few soldiers to escape in sobs towards the centre of the District, leaving their backs open to Yue Zhong. They were easily slaughtered.

With Yue Zhong leading the sneak attack on Tianxin District, they were practically unhindered as they sliced through Tianxin District like a hot knife through butter, and they made their way closer towards the weapons storage facility.

# Chapter 368: Break!

---

Yue Zhong had obtained various reports on the situation of Tianxin District from Shang Lun, and had ascertained the different key locations to launch his attack. They were almost unimpeded the entire way!

Zhao Zhigang had assembled 2 companies of elites as they rushed to the battlefield, and as trained, they launched a frenzied attack on Yue Zhong's troops.

A dense hail of bullets covered the front troops, causing a few of the soldiers to fall.

Facing that sudden assault, the vanguard soldiers of Yue Zhong's troops also ducked hastily for cover, as they returned fire.

Those soldiers who had fallen on the ground quickly got up, and rolled to the side as they ducked behind cover. Their Type 3 Mutant Snake hides had prevented the bullets from piercing them, as long as they didn't receive a head wound, they managed to survive.

However, 2 elite soldiers that had trained under Yue Zhong had suffered headshots and died instantly.

It was the first time that Yue Zhong's troops suffered casualties since their assault on Tianxin District.

"Hold your ground!! Stand for me and slaughter these bunch of bandits!!" Zhao Zhigang shouted in fury, as though he was a madman.

The firepower from Zhao Zhigang's troops came down hard and heavy on the troops of Yue Zhong. Explosions rang out continuously, without a single moment of rest.

Under that intense heavy fire, those soldiers who wore the Type 3 Mutant Snake hide found themselves being injured, and some even had their heads blasted away.

Yue Zhong's troops fired back with their own heavy artillery without mercy, as Zhao Zhigang's side also sustained injuries. However, these troops did not collapse like most other normal factions, as they were well-trained soldiers and held their ground, risking their all to fire at Yue Zhong's troops.

"These must be the elite soldiers of Bei Mingyang! They truly can put up a fight!!" Yue Zhong observed them, as his eyes flashed with a strange glint.

These troops of Zhao Zhigang were the most resilient soldiers that Yue Zhong's troops had encountered. They could be considered the core of the faction and amongst the soldiers under Yue Zhong, those who could contend with them were at most 2 companies.

These elite troops could be said to have undergone countless tough training and battles to achieve such a standard. Their aura and bearings were totally different as well.

"What a pity! Such a troop is going to fall at my hands today!" Yue Zhong's eyes flashed coldly, as he carried Ming Jiajia with the Level 5 Bronze Spiritual Bell and charged forwards with White Bones.

"There are 2 enemies at the 2nd window of the 3rd storey of the building on the right! There are 3 enemies lying in ambush at the next corner as well!" Ming Jiajia reported dutifully as she rode on Yue Zhong's back, her Shadow Wolf hidden in Yue Zhong's shadow and its acute sense of smell detected the positions of the enemies. She herself was like the transmitter that provided the information to Yue Zhong.

White Bones's eyes flashed, as a bone spike shot out explosively, piercing into the ceiling of the 3rd storey of the building. It then retracted the bone spike, while it leapt towards the window, and raised its left hand. 2 sharp bone spikes burst out instantaneously and penetrated the heads of the 2 elite soldiers.

Yue Zhong took a deep breath, as he activated his 11x normal speed, and in a few seconds, appearing behind the corner of the alleyway. He took up his .03 rifle and fired wildly, causing those 3 lying in ambush to be punctured full of holes.

After disposing of 5 of the enemies, Yue Zhong and White Bones continued their advance like a sharp knife towards Zhao Zhigang's troops.

"Strong Enhancers!! Damn it!! These freaks!!" Inside a building, Zhao Zhigang was using his binoculars to observe the situation. He watched on helplessly as Yue Zhong and White Bones slaughtered his troops, and his heart sank, while his lower lip split from all his biting.

Zhao Zhigang had also seen the prowess of a high level Enhancer from the likes of Bai Xiaosheng. Although they weren't invincible entities, they did possess all sorts of capabilities. With the right training, their combat power was definitely way above normal people. However, to actually kill their way through his troops without breaking a sweat, Yue Zhong and White Bones were terrifying existences that exceeded his imagination.

Yue Zhong was still carrying Ming Jiajia on his back, while moving swiftly, only slightly slower than he normally can reach. He continued to charge forwards, using his gun skills and grenades to hunt the elite soldiers. In a matter of 10 minutes, the total number of soldiers that had died at his hands had already exceeded a platoon!! If it wasn't for the positions of the soldiers being scattered, the number of deaths would definitely be higher.

If it was a normal company of soldiers, facing this death god-like Yue Zhong, they would have long since lost all sense of fighting spirit and ran after so many of their soldiers died. However, these 2 companies were the elites of the elites under Bei Mingyang, and have gone through several battles, their aura and bearings were vastly different from normal troops. Since they could not overcome Yue Zhong, then they would fight to the death! A large



number of bullets were continually fired at his position, and some of the bullets would actually land on him, but the protection of the Bronze Spiritual Bell caused the bullets to ricochet off.

A pale-faced sentry came to Zhao Zhigang's side and reported: "Commander!! The 1st platoon and 2nd platoon of the 1st Company had died!! What do we do? If it's just us, we have no way of blocking those monsters!!"

Yue Zhong, White Bones and Ming Jiajia had easily taken out 40-over people with just the 3 of them, and their own troops behind them weren't pushovers as well, killing a number on the enemy.

"Damn it!! Why is that bastard Bai Xiaosheng not here yet!!" Zhao Zhigang cursed out furiously.

If Bai Xiaosheng took his expert battalion over as reinforcements, Zhao Zhigang had more confidence to contend against Yue Zhong. However, with just the soldiers under him, it was simply not enough to withstand Yue Zhong's assault.

"Commander!! The 3rd platoon has fallen as well!! They are already exchanging blows with the 2nd Company!!" Just as Zhao Zhigang had cursed out loud, an intelligence officer walked in, his expression pale as he reported.

"WHAT?? The 1st Company has already fallen?! How can it happen so quickly!! HOW!!" Zhao Zhigang was truly pale now as he bellowed.

The 1st and 2nd Companies under Zhao Zhigang were warriors who could truly fight, having been forged through countless battles. He had confidence that the combat prowess of these 2 companies could match the american troops with full equipment. They had a strong sense of fighting spirit, and even if they could not possible overcome Yue Zhong's troops, they would at least be able to put up a decent fight to drag out the time.

In fact, if it wasn't for the charge from Yue Zhong, White Bones

and Ming Jiajia, the strength of Yue Zhong's troops would truly be unable to push through the elite forces of Zhao Zhigang, and the battle might be dragged out for 1 or 2 days.

With the appearance of Enhancers and Evolvers, the advantage was quickly shown during the intense battle. The abilities and skills they possessed went beyond the warfare tactics of before the apocalypse.

One of the intelligence personnel asked: "What do we do? Commander!! If we continue fighting, we will only be wiped out. Let's retreat!!"

The other intel officer stepped forward: "Yea! Commander! Let's leave!! Since we have already fought to this extent, we have done our part for Boss Bei already! As long as green hills remain, there'll never be a shortage of firewood. (While there's life there's hope.)"

Not everyone were valiant matyrs who did not mind dying for a cause, should the situation call for it, there were some who would think of retreating.

Zhao Zhigang eyed those intelligence officers, his face turned countless times, and finally spoke out with great difficulty: "Retreat!! Get the 2nd and 3rd Platoons from the 2nd Company to retreat from the battlefield immediately!"

"Yes! Sir!"

Those intelligence officers heaved a sigh of relief, and immediately issued the command for the soldiers to retreat.

Upon receiving the order, the soldiers from the 2nd and 3rd platoons of the 2nd Company immediately withdrew, making their way back like fallen troops. Seeing how Yue Zhong had easily demolished their defences and annihilated their comrades, their morale had sunk to an unprecedented low.

"Those who surrender will be spared!! Those who surrender will be spared!!" As Yue Zhong fought hard, he saw the soldiers from

the 2nd Company retreating, and immediately hollered out loud.

"Those who surrender will be spared!! Those who surrender will be spared!!". The soldiers behind Yue Zhong also followed suit with their exuberant shouts.

Amidst those shouts, the doomed 1st platoon also lost their will to fight, and immediately threw their weapons down, hugging their heads with their hands as they squatted.

"Those who surrender will be spared!! Those who surrender will be spared!!" Yue Zhong brought his troops towards the retreating soldiers of the 2nd Company, and he quickly caught up, as he shouted out loudly while beginning his slaughter amongst them.

While the soldiers were retreating, a number of them would fall under Yue Zhong and White Bones' hands, while the 4 Shadow Wolves controlled by Ming Jiajia also jumped out from the shadows as they bit down ferociously on the unsuspecting soldiers.

"I surrender! Spare me!!"

"I surrender! Spare me!!"

"Surrendered!!"

"....."

Under the pursuit of Yue Zhong and the other 2, the remaining soldiers from the 2nd Company immediately threw their weapons and hugged their heads, the deaths of their comrades looming over them.

The support troops of Yue Zhong quickly arrived, and were tasked to absorb the captives, while Yue Zhong himself continued making his way towards the armory.

With the defeat of Zhao Zhigang, there were no other powers that could stop the advance of Yue Zhong, and he quickly made his way to the front of the armory.

He discovered that instead of an army defending the armory,

there was a middle-aged man with a refined appearance.

That middle-aged man looked at Yue Zhong and his vanguard troops, and he quickly made his way towards Yue Zhong.

Seeing the man make his way over, the soldiers beside Yue Zhong raised their guns and took aim, preparing to take him out.

Yue Zhong waved his hands, and allowed the man to come close.

Bei Mingyang looked at Yue Zhong and said slowly: "This commander, I am the leader of Tianxin District, Bei Mingyang! I would like to meet with Yue Zhong!"

# Chapter 369: Cold Snow!

---

Yue Zhong looked at Bei Mingyang coldly and said: "I'm Yue Zhong! Whatever you have to say, spit it out! Don't think about dragging the time, otherwise I'll execute you on the spot!"

Bei Mingyang maintained his gaze as he spoke seriously: "Then I'll cut to the chase! Yue Zhong, the armory behind me is filled with explosives! As long as I don't make it back by 20 minutes, the explosives will go off. The resources and ammunition in there would be incinerated instantly. Other than the armory, I have sent men to the granary as well, as long as I don't leave here alive, after 20 minutes, the place will turn into a sea of blaze!"

When Yue Zhong heard this, he frowned. There were over 50,000 survivors in Tianxin District. If the granary was to be blown to bits, the 50,000 survivors would become a heavy burden. Even if Yue Zhong transferred the rations from Jingxi City to save Tianxin District, it would leave Jingxi City with barely 3 months' worth of supplies.

Wu Yin's eyes narrowed, as he threatened with fury: "Bastard! If you dare do that, I'll break you!"

"I'll cut you in pieces bastard!!!"

"....."

The various leaders under Yue Zhong shouted out in fury.

Facing those agitated threats, Bei Mingyang did not falter, instead looking quietly at Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong waved his hands, only then did the noise subside.

Yue Zhong looked at Bei Mingyang with an icy gaze as he said: "State your conditions! As long as it's not too preposterous, I'll promise you!"

Since Bei Mingyang had stepped out alone, and had not yet

burnt the armory or granary, it was obvious he didn't want to push things too far. He wanted to live as well.

Bei Mingyang eyed Yue Zhong and continued: "I'm willing to surrender to you, Leader Yue Zhong! However, I hope that you will promise to keep our families and personal property out of harm's way. Also, after we surrender, we hope to gain the same rights as your current citizens."

In this post-apocalypse, human lives were cheap. Bei Mingyang was worried that once they surrendered, they might be slaughtered like pigs and dogs. He had fought for his position in this new apocalyptic world and knew how dark and cruel humans can get, and was afraid that Yue Zhong would be like those terrorists who did whatever they wanted.

Yue Zhong replied: "Fine! I'll promise you that!"

Those conditions that Bei Mingyang had stated, Yue Zhong already had the intentions of doing. It was true that Yue Zhong was merciless to his enemies, but it was just that. He never allowed his troops to engage in pillaging or rape nor widespread massacring.

Hearing Yue Zhong's promise, Bei Mingyang heaved a sigh of relief, and he pulled out a walkie-talkie and said: "Everyone immediately surrender!"

Upon receiving Bei Mingyang's orders, the various defences laid down their arms. The huge doors of the armory opened up as well, allowing the soldiers under Yue Zhong to make their way in.

Within the armory, there were numerous IFVs, Red Arrows, machine-gun mounted vehicles and various other modern weaponry.

Amongst the soldiers under Bei Mingyang, only a handful of the veterans commanded by Zhao Zhigang had the knowledge to operate these weapons. However, they had not the time to use

these before they were routed and forced by Yue Zhong to surrender, in the end, they wound up not even displaying the prowess of these weapons.

Otherwise, this assault on Tianxin District would have seen more casualties on Yue Zhong's side.

When Bei Mingyang surrendered, the defence of Tianxin District weakened by about 80%. There were a few troops that still tried to prevent Yue Zhong from entering parts of the town. However, under the threat and power of Yue Zhong's troops, they were quickly defeated and killed.

Not long after, the entire defence of Tianxin District had crumbled, and the violence and various fights were put down. All troublemakers were executed on the spot, and under the pressure and vigilance of the troops, Tianxin District regained its peace.

With Tianxin District in Yue Zhong's control, the expert battalion also fell into Yue Zhong's lap.

The leader of the expert battalion Bai Xiaosheng had actually fooled around with a few beauties the night prior, as a result, he had been entirely spent, sleeping throughout the entire ordeal. When he awoke, he discovered that Tianxin District had already belonged to Yue Zhong.

Seeing that Bei Mingyang had surrendered, Bai Xiaosheng also dutifully swore allegiance to Yue Zhong.

After obtaining Tianxin District, Yue Zhong set in motion the retraining and organization of the troops. He created 4 infantry battalions as well as an expert battalion. Furthermore, with the 6 infantry battalions and support troops, the army under Yue Zhong had swelled to a size of more than 4,000 people.

However, out of these 4,000 people, the actual number who could fight well were only 3 infantry battalions and the expert battalion. The rest were still in training, and within a short span of

time, they would not be ready to engage in any battle nor provide any boost in fighting capabilities.

When the 4 infantry battalions and the expert battalion were assembled, Yue Zhong deployed them in shifts to clear out the zombies in the surrounding towns. On one hand, they managed to retrieve more resources, on the other, they were grinding to increase their combat abilities, raising the number of Enhancers as well as the levels.

As for the reserve troops, Yue Zhong sent them through reformative and strict military training. Although these reserve troops could not yet fight, with a few months of training, they would start to resemble a proper army.

In the governing side, with the experience he gained from establishing a government in Longhai City, Yue Zhong picked out a few officials familiar with the running of affairs with the help of Bei Mingyang, and established a new cabinet of officers.

Bei Mingyang was an extremely capable and talented man. He was a billionaire industrialist prior to the apocalypse, who made his way up one step at a time. He was knowledgeable, talented, had the charisma to lead, and was extremely determined. This was why he could have slowly grown a small team into a faction of more than 50,000 people. If there were any weak points to be pointed out, it would be that his personal combat ability was weak, and was merely a Level 11 Enhancer.

Although Bei Mingyang was extremely outstanding, Yue Zhong did not select him as the head of the cabinet, instead, promoting Wei Ningguo into that position. While Wei Ningguo was indeed capable, he lacked ambition.

If Yue Zhong allowed Bei Mingyang to become the head of the cabinet, the moment Yue Zhong was gone, he might come up with ways to revolt, and wrestle the power away from Yue Zhong! As for Wei Ningguo, while he was strong, even if Yue Zhong was not



around, he would not have any intention to betray him. In this world, the human heart is the hardest to fathom. Capable yet loyal men were extremely hard to find.

With such a capable and ambitious character like Bei Mingyang, Yue Zhong would only be able to leave the place without worry after he fully established an order from the ground up. In such an unstable period, Yue Zhong had no choice but to utilize Wei Ningguo who was loyal to him.

Yue Zhong's troops had cleared out the zombies in the towns that led to Yunlong County in the southwest direction for an entire week, and had no choice but to return to Tianxin District.

"It's starting to snow!!" In Tianxin District, within a villa, Yue Zhong was looking at the skies, watching the snowflakes falling from the sky. He stretched out his hand, as a particular snow flake landed on his palm and dissolved into a small drop of water.

Yue Zhong gazed at the drop of water, and heaved a long sigh.

"Master! Why are you sighing? Isn't the snow very beautiful? It actually is my first time seeing snow!" Beside Yue Zhong, the beautiful voice of Ming Jiajia sounded.

Yue Zhong turned to look at her, and saw that she was dressed in thick cotton clothing, wearing gloves, her face flushed red from the cold, and her entire being looking as though she was an extremely cute cotton doll.

Ming Jiajia was currently looking at the pure white snow, her face full of excitement. She had grown up in the south, and it was the first time she actually saw real snow.

Yue Zhong looked back at the pretty snowscape and said heavily: " We have been living in Guangxi and are used to the warm weather. Places that snow are actually rare. Tianxin District itself had not experienced snow in the past few decades. Even if it snowed, it wasn't that heavy. It is obvious that the current climate

has changed and become stranger. With the onset of such strange weather, to us humans, it's unclear if it will be a good or bad thing! However, in this coming winter, we will definitely face a number of deaths from the cold!"

The current weather outside had dropped to -4 ❖❖C, and this \*1 weather had already persisted for an entire week. Outside, there was snow everywhere, and roads were blocked.

When Yue Zhong had conquered Tianxin District and Jingxi City, he had obtained a large number of warm clothing for the cold. Even then, in just this week, they had already lost 20+ survivors who froze to death. \*2 Almost everyone was cooped up at home now, shivering uncontrollably.

If Yue Zhong brought the people now to the hills and hid within caves, a sudden snowstorm would be enough to rob the lives of many of them.

Under such harsh cold, the various troops under Yue Zhong had returned to either Jingxi City or Tianxin District and were conducting their own training within cover. The operations to hunt for resources and killing zombies came to a halt.

"Achoo!!" Ming Jiajia suddenly sneezed in a cute manner.

"Go back in!" Yue Zhong ruffled Ming Jiajia's hair and said fondly.

With regards to the problem of the weather, Yue Zhong had no means of changing anything. Although he wanted sorely to bring troops and deal with Wuyan Hong, he could only wait out the winter now. Otherwise, before he even reached the battlefield, he would lose his troops to the cold.

Yue Zhong brought Ming Jiajia towards the most luscious villa within Tianxin District.

"Welcome back Master!" Yue Zhong brought Ming Jiajia and had just entered the villa when he saw 2 rows of beautiful ladies in a

half bow, speaking in unison.

Yue Zhong looked at them with a slight amazement as he smiled and said: "Not bad!"

\*3

After conquering Tianxin District, Yue Zhong had kept himself busy by training the troops and establishing the new government, while training himself as well. There was no time to truly go home, and had always slept in the office. This was the first time in a long while that he had gone to a home to relax.

# Chapter 370: Beauty

---

When Yue Zhong had conquered Tianxin District, he had cleaned up the incumbent factions. He killed the leaders of the various factions that still stood against him, while the soldiers under them were thrown into the Scum Battalion as cannon fodder.

During the process, Yue Zhong had obtained a number of beautiful ladies, and these 12 maids were the final choices of a selection.

"Master, welcome home!" Right at this time, a top beauty appeared in front of Yue Zhong, dressed in a clean white dress, showing her long slender legs and fair skin. Her lips were lush and teeth perfect, while her long hair was straight and black. Her entire demeanor exuded a certain charm and she smiled as she greeted Yue Zhong.

With the appearance of this beauty, the other 12 ladies seemed to pale in comparison.

Yue Zhong eyed the beauty for awhile before asking directly: "Why do you look familiar?"

Hearing his words, the 12 maids revealed a strange expression on their faces.

Ming Jiajia eyed the beauty in white, her eyes filled with veneration and admiration: "Master!! She is Su Xueling! The main actress of countless films, she's known to be the successor to the queen of films Liu Zixuan. She's a well-known film and television star."

Ming Jiajia was also an ordinary girl before the apocalypse, and had her idols and dreams as well. The Su Xueling happened to be one of her biggest idols.

Su Xueling revealed a bright and sweet smile, as she spoke in her melodious voice: "Master! I'm Su Xueling."

Su Xueling had been a proud and slightly wilful celebrity prior to the apocalypse. If it was before the world changed, she wouldn't even have any interaction with a common person like Yue Zhong, but now she had no choice but to lower her head, and to express her subservience to gain his favour.

Su Xueling had experienced first hand the problems of the current world. Her looks had attracted a lot of dangerous attention, and if it were not for Bei Mingyang's protection, she could have become the high-quality toy for the leaders of other factions, to be played with and thrown around.

Bei Mingyang had constantly protected Su Xueling. Of course, it was mainly because of the friendship between her and his own daughter. On the other hand, she could be used as a bargaining chip with another strong person. Heroes naturally went with beauties, and with a beauty on hand to control any male experts, it was a move that Bei Mingyang often used.

However, before Bei Mingyang had even got to use her, Yue Zhong had defeated him, and the various resources owned by him fell to Yue Zhong. Su Xueling hence became one of Yue Zhong's spoils of war.

"Hi Big Brother! I'm Ning Ruozi!" Another girl with a head full of black hair and fair skin stepped out while greeting Yue Zhong. She had an exquisite look and was smiling brightly, looking as cute as an angel, and looked to be about only 11 or 12.

Yue Zhong had no woman beside him all along, and was seen bringing Ming Jiajia this loli everywhere he battled. His subordinates hence thought to offer Ning Ruozi this loli that was even more beautiful than Ming Jiajia to Yue Zhong. \*

"Little vixen!" Ming Jiajia took one glance at Ning Ruozi, and her face turned grim, as she muttered under her breath. As a girl, she could also feel the charm and cuteness of Ning Ruozi. Although she herself was beautiful, when compared to this angel-like person, she

was definitely not as eye-catching.

"I'm Ning Yuxin!" A tall woman with a short hairdo, voluptuous figure, fair skin and perfect face stepped out in front of Ning Ruozi, blocking her from Yue Zhong, as she stared apathetically at Yue Zhong.

Another bespectacled lady stepped forward. Her hair was tied up high, her face padded with makeup, and she had an alluring figure, yet her defined features exuded a sternness, and she looked to be 27-28, giving off a mature charm as she was decked in a set of housekeeping apparel. She spoke out: "How do you do, Master Yue Zhong? I'm Zheng Yaqin, and was assigned by Wei Ningguo Mayor Wei to be your housekeeper."

Su Xueling, Ning Ruozi, Ning Yuxin were selected by people at the behest of Wei Ningguo to serve Yue Zhong. As for Zheng Yaqin, she was specially selected to help look after the household for Yue Zhong.

"Hi everybody!" Yue Zhong smiled at these 4 beauties, before walking into his room.

In the room, there was a stove burning, and the outside cold could not affect the cosiness of the room. Only someone like Yue Zhong could get to enjoy the luxury of open heating. This was the benefit of being a leader. Yue Zhong fought valiantly and he would not decline such treatment hypocritically.

Yue Zhong began taking off his coats, and 2 of the maids came in, as they helped him out of it, before hanging it by the side.

Yue Zhong and Ming Jiajia then walked towards the dining area.

On the round dinner table, there were various plates of seafood, wild vegetables, desserts as well as Type 2 Mutant Beast meat that had been prepared by chefs. It all looked extremely sumptuous.

Ming Jiajia, Su Xueling, Ning Ruozi and Ning Yuxin all sat down, as they started to dig in.

Zheng Yaqin stood by Yue Zhong side like a straight rod.

At the sides of the table, the maids stood in 2 rows, and the atmosphere gave Yue Zhong an uncomfortable sense of being like a mafia boss in the pre-apocalypse days.

Yue Zhong looked at the mature yet cold Zheng Yaqin and said: "Yaqin, join us and eat!"

Zheng Yaqin maintained her stern and cold demeanor as she rejected: "Master! This goes against the contract! I'm your housekeeper, and have no right to eat with you!"

Yue Zhong chuckled, and did not pursue the matter.

Yue Zhong had a copy of the documents pertaining to Zheng Yaqin. She was a graduate from Cambridge and was proficient in Russian, Japanese, English, French and German, and had received the most elite of training as a housekeeper. Before the apocalypse had set in, she had just been selected by a billionaire, and was ready to become a senior stewardess with annual income of 400,000. She had received the strictest of trainings and abided by a professional set of conduct, hence Yue Zhong did not force her against her rules.

"Who should I enjoy?" Yue Zhong turned his head as his eyes travelled across the table, taking in the 4 beauties around him.

Ever since he was sent to Vietnam by that Nether Beast, he had been kept busy by warfare, governance, to exert control and total dominion, without a single moment of rest.

With the winter about to set in, and snow having blocked off most of the paths, military affairs had been put on hold. The new government had also been established. Both Jingxi City and Tianxin District are under his control. With time to spare, he could now appreciate the beauties in front of him.

Yue Zhong's gaze fell on Ming Jiajia, before he quickly turned his gaze to the other girls. Although his relationship with her was the

closest, she was truly too young.

Yue Zhong's gaze then fell to Ning Ruozhi for all of 3 seconds, before moving to and fro between Ning Yuxin and Su Xueling.

Between Su Xueling and Ning Yuxin, one was a huge star, the other, a beloved daughter of a magnate. Both had the extreme qualities of beauties, and few men could withstand their attractiveness.

"My charms are truly attractive!!" Su Xueling had been someone who mixed around before the apocalypse, and was sensitive to Yue Zhong's current passionate gaze, and could not help but feel proud of herself. However, she was reminded that if she was chosen, she had to sleep with Yue Zhong, and this led her to feel unsettled, and she felt complicated.

Ning Yuxin was also unsettled by Yue Zhong's gaze. Prior to the apocalypse, she was an extremely proud woman. With her perfect looks and grades, coupled with exercise and an excellent family background, she was the object of affection of countless suitors. She had always been on the search for the Prince Charming of her life, and to fall in love truly dramatically. She was extremely unwilling to be with Yue Zhong.

"Seems like my charms are non-existent!" Yue Zhong was perceptive as well, and could detect the slight shudder from the 2 beauties, it was obvious that they were not willing to be with him, and it caused him to lose interest.

Yue Zhong then said indifferently: "Su Xueling, Ning Yuxin, the both of you can move out tomorrow!"

With his words, it seemed like a bomb had went off in the hearts of Su Xueling and Ning Yuxin, causing them to turn pale.

"Wha.....why! Master.....did we....do something...wrong?" Su Xueling could not help but stammer, as her expression turned to one of tears, her eyes red as she looked pitifully at Yue Zhong.



Ning Yuxin also looked at Yue Zhong, her entire body having turned stiff.

Outside, it was extremely hard to get by, and both of them had seen the consequences of fighting for even a piece of bread. With their looks, if they were to land in a pervert's hands, they would be played till they were broken, before being eaten. Compared to the outside, there was food and drinks here, and they were taken care off, it was almost paradise. Who knew how many vied to be in this position that Su Xueling and Ning Yuxin had, and how many wished they could exchange places with them.

Yue Zhong continued apathetically: "I know you guys don't want to be with me! I don't like to force upon others. Relax, after you leave the villa, I will get Wei Ningguo to arrange other jobs for you."

Yue Zhong had the entire faction under his control, and was responsible for almost 60,000 survivors, there were no shortages of beauties! Even without Su Xueling or Ning Yuxin, he would definitely be able to find other beautiful girls to serve him.

Su Xueling could not help but reply hastily: "No!! No!! It's not like that!! It's not that I'm unwilling! I am willing! Master!! It was just that when you looked at me earlier, I became a little nervous."

# Chapter 371: Dong Ling

---

Ning Yuxin on the other hand, remained pale, as she stood there ashened, not saying anything. She was originally unwilling to serve Yue Zhong, and was sent here under Wei Ningguo's orders. Although she had learnt some Taekwondo in the past, in the face of guns and knives and experts, it was practically useless.

Yue Zhong glanced at Ning Yuxin and Su Xueling and understood their mindset, as he smiled at Su Xueling and said: "Then you can stay!"

Yue Zhong then looked at Ning Yuxin and said: "As for you, Ning Yuxin. Don't worry, after you leave the villa, I will get Wei Ningguo to assign you a job. As long as you work hard, you'll be able to forge a life for yourself with your own efforts."

Ning Yuxin bit her lips, and remained silent. Although she was unwilling to serve Yue Zhong, she knew that the outside world was much harsher, and the jobs outside were more menial. Without any actual skill set, she would find it hard to work to keep herself alive.

Right at this time, Ning Ruozi jumped down from her seat and pounced into Yue Zhong's arms as she revealed a pleading face, her big eyes looking at Yue Zhong: "Big Brother!! Big Brother!! Don't chase my sister away! Please don't chase her away! Ruozi will listen to Brother's words! Regardless of what you want me to do I will do. Please don't chase Sister away! In this world, other than Big Brother, I only have Sister as family! Ruozi will treat Big Brother well, just don't chase Sister away!"

"No!! I can't leave here! If I leave! Who will protect Ruozi?"

Ning Yuxin saw Ning Ruozi pleading Yue Zhong profusely in his arms, and her heart trembled, as she walked up and lowered her head and pride, as her eyes turned red. She pleaded with gritted teeth: "Master! I'm willing to serve you!! Please let me stay!!"

Yue Zhong eyed the cute and loveable Ning Ruozi, as he pinched her cheeks, and the sensation of her skin felt extremely good in his fingers. He then eyed Ning Yuxin and said indifferently: "Sure, you can stay!"

Ning Ruozi then smiled sweetly at Yue Zhong, before pouncing into his arms, and pointed at a cake and smiled coyly at Yue Zhong: "I want that!!"

"Ok!!" Yue Zhong then brought the dessert over.

Ning Ruozi opened her mouth, putting on an expression of 'feed me'.

Yue Zhong could not resist that adorable girl, and cut a piece of cake and fed her.

"Delicious!!" Ning Ruozi ate the cake and revealed an expression of bliss.

"So refreshing!" Yue Zhong was also blown away by her cute antics, and he fed her like a mother hen, cutting pieces and delivered them into her mouth. He watched her cute expressions, and felt the fatigue and stress from the constant battles and warfare wash away.

"Little vixen!!" Ming Jiajia watched Yue Zhong feed Ning Ruozi, and her eyes were filled with jealousy. She wanted to be spoiled like that by Yue Zhong as well.

"Lolicon!!"

"Seems like the leader likes lolis!"

"....."

The females present saw the scene, and their eyes flashed with a strange glint.

After dinner, Yue Zhong and the rest went to a sofa and sat down.

Yue Zhong pondered for awhile before asking Su Xueling:

"Xueling! Both you and Bei Mingyang came from Nanning. What's the situation there now? Do you know?"

Yue Zhong's home was in Nanning. It had almost been a year since the apocalypse first set in, and he did not know if his family members were still alive or not. He was a little afraid of knowing what had happened there, but at the same time, he was desperate for some information.

Su Xueling hesitated awhile before replying with a slightly difficult expression: "Bei Mingyang and I had escaped from Nanning and had not had any communications with anyone there since. Unfortunately we're not sure about the ongoing things there as well. I'm sorry Master!"

"It's ok!" Yue Zhong's eyes flashed with disappointment, and softly sighed. Jingxi City and Tianxin District had fallen into his hands, and regardless of any enemies now, he possessed some form of power. Yet, all he wanted to know was the current plight of his parents.

"I know!!" Right at this time, Ning Yuxin suddenly spoke out, as she gazed at Yue Zhong: "I know about the survivors at Nanning."

Yue Zhong's eyes brightened in anxiety: "Oh!! Say it quickly!!"

Ning Yuxin gathered her thoughts, before saying solemnly: "I heard that after the world changed, a large number of the survivors in Nanning escaped towards Guilin City. The government of Nanning and the nearby army in Guilin gathered and captured Guilin, and has established a rather large survivor base camp there."

"If it's like that, I have hope!!" Yue Zhong immediately stood up excitedly when he heard the news, and started to pace about. He had an expression of worry, as he muttered to himself: "I still have hope! No! It's already been a year!!"

Ming Jiajia looked at Yue Zhong who had become agitated, and a

look of shock appeared in her eyes. She had never seen Yue Zhong so lost before, even when facing Wuyan Hong, he had never shown fear or apprehension. Everytime he did something, he was swift and resolute.

Yue Zhong stopped pacing, as he called a maid over: "Is the hot water in the pool ready?"

The nearest pretty maid smiled gently and replied: "It's already prepared Master!"

Zheng Yaqin, as Head Maid, expected the maids to always present a smile to their master. If they could not do it, they would be punished, even dismissed from their position.

Yue Zhong nodded slightly, then walked towards the bathhouse.

In this villa, there was a huge luxurious bath of about 30 sqm built, and the moment Yue Zhong entered the pool, he saw 2 beauties kneeling by the pool in maid attire.

The 2 ladies smiled at Yue Zhong and asked: "Master, would you like us to serve and bathe you?"

Yue Zhong waved: "You are all dismissed! I would like to be alone today!"

The 2 pretty maids thus dismissed themselves.

Yue Zhong took one step into the hot water, and submerged himself in it, as his blood started to heat up.

"Maybe they're still alive! I want to go to them!! I must go to them!" The heat churned within Yue Zhong's body, as he contemplated and was anxious to find his parents. He had left home for more than a year already, and in this new apocalyptic world, a year's worth of time could be the difference between life and death, and he truly wanted to leave for Guilin City now, but was afraid that he might receive the news of their passing when he reached there. This sort of suspense was causing him turmoil, precisely because he held his parents in high regard.

Right at this time, a fair-skinned female with chestnut hair and a towel wrapped around her explosive figure strode into the pool, bringing with her a fragrant scent as she came to Yue Zhong's side.

Yue Zhong opened his eyes, as he saw the incoming girl, who was extremely beautiful, and his eyes flashed. He said a little gloomily: "Didn't I order you guys to be dismissed? Why are you disobedient?"

Under the stormy gaze of Yue Zhong, the body of the girl with chestnut hair trembled uncontrollably, as she pondered a while, before loosening the towel, as it dropped into the pool, revealing a youthful and vibrant body. She was also endowed with a pair of incredibly fair and full breasts.

The girl hugged Yue Zhong, as she spoke in a slightly shaky voice: "Master! I can feel your anxiety. Please use my body to release your tension!!"

When the girl entered Yue Zhong's embrace, he could smell a mix of body shower and her own fragrance, and he could feel her soft and delicate body with his own.

Something stirred in his loins, and coupled with the troubled mood that he was in, he immediately pushed the voluptuous girl to the side of the pool, and penetrated her in one swift motion.

"Oh!!" The girl let out a moan of agony, and at the place where the two of them joined together, blood could be seen dripping into the pool.

Yue Zhong seemed to turn into a beast, and was turned on by the atmosphere, as he thrusted furiously, grabbing onto the lamb-like girl, and pumped her with all his might.

The chestnut hair beauty kept hugging Yue Zhong, accepting his violence and restlessness with a soft embrace.

After they had finished, the girl collapsed in his arms, as though she was broken, and she gasped for breath.

Yue Zhong hugged the girl, his heart free of the tension he had felt earlier, as he asked her gently: "What's your name? Why did you do that?"

"I'm called Dong Ling! Wang Dajun killed my entire family. I had sworn then, whoever killed him, I would dedicate my entire life to him. Master, you had killed Wang Dajun, and I, Dong Ling, am willing to serve as your slave for my whole life." Dong Ling's hands were wrapped around Yue Zhong, as she gazed into his eyes with extreme tenderness, and began kissing him deeply on the lips.

"Wang Dajun?" Yue Zhong thought back to the report on the person. Wang Dajun was truly a person of evil deeds, and when Yue Zhong had assaulted Tianxin District, he had executed the various leaders who had retaliated, he didn't expect that his actions had actually gained him the gratitude and heart of a beauty. \*

Right at this time, the beautiful loli Ning Ruozhi also hopped into the pool wrapped in a towel as she grabbed onto Yue Zhong's arms and flirted: "Big Brother!! I want it too! You must kiss me too!"

On another side, Ming Jiajia was apparently not willing to step back, as she grabbed onto Yue Zhong's other hand, and looked at him silently and pitifully.\*\*

## Chapter 372: Ning Ruozi!

---

On the left was the bubbly Ning Ruozi, on the right was the silent yet capable Ming Jiajia with extraordinary skills, and in his embrace, was Dong Ling with her extremely hot figure. Yue Zhong was literally enveloped in bliss and the fragrance of the feminine scents. It was almost heaven for him.

"Be good!!" Yue Zhong ruffled both Ning Ruozi and Ming Jiajia on their little heads, and coaxed them.

Ning Ruozi broke into an angelic smile and said: "Hehe, I was praised by Big Brother!"

On the other side, Ming Jiajia was slightly upset that Yue Zhong still treated her like a kid, yet she continued to hug his hand tightly.

Right at this time, Su Xueling and Ning Yuxin also entered the pool with white bath towels wrapped around them.

"Ruozi! Come over here!" Ning Yuxin saw how close Ning Ruozi was sticking to Yue Zhong, and she turned sullen, pulling Ning Ruozi from Yue Zhong's side. She knew her younger sister was extremely adorable, and was worried that Yue Zhong would covet her.

Ning Ruozi put up some resistance against Ning Yuxin and struggled: "No!! Sister, I want to hear Big Brother and his stories!! Sister! Let go of me!!"

Ning Yuxin's face turned wooden, as she mustered her big-sister voice and said sternly: "Ruozi, be obedient! Otherwise I will get angry!"

Ning Ruozi scrunched up her face, and said in a long voice: "Yeeeeeeeeess~~!"

Su Xueling sat by the pool, and looked at Dong Ling in Yue Zhong's embrace, her eyes flashing with a complicated gaze. She



was a little jealous of Dong Ling gaining Yue Zhong's affection, yet at the same time, a small part of her heaved a sigh of relief.

Ming Jiajia who was still on Yue Zhong's right side suddenly asked: "Master, do you want to go to Guilin City?"

Ming Jiajia had followed Yue Zhong all the way from Vietnam to China, as they slaughtered their way through, and it was the first time she saw Yue Zhong so unsettled. Her strong perception allowed her to guess that there must be people important to Yue Zhong at Guilin City.

Yue Zhong was silent for a while, before replying slowly: "En! I must definitely make a trip there in the near future!"

If Yue Zhong was still at Long Hai City, there were over a million zombies blocking the way, coupled with the fact that there were various Mutant Beasts around, and he still did not know the way to Guilin City. Even if he had wanted to head back, it was next to impossible. However, with him being at Guangxi now, the location wasn't too far off. He was decided on heading back, and if he could, he would try to fly there.

Ming Jiajia hugged Yue Zhong's hand tightly, and she looked at Yue Zhong with those huge eyes and said: "I shall go with you!"

"En!" Yue Zhong tousled Ming Jiajia's hair again as he smiled.

Ming Jiajia had already undergone tough training, and her body constitution was considered above the elite forces of before the apocalypse. She could operate various weapons as well, and could summon the Shadow Wolves. Wherever Yue Zhong went, he liked to take Ming Jiajia along, because her skills complemented him and covered his weaknesses.

Yue Zhong's close-combat skills, survival abilities and destructive power were all tyrannical, however, in terms of scouting the enemy, he could not contend with Ming Jiajia and her Shadow Wolves.

When they had entered Tianxin District, without the help of Ming Jiajia, Yue Zhong had no way of quickly flushing out the soldiers that were hiding. That was to say, Ming Jiajia played the role of a biological radar, and could pinpoint the locations to Yue Zhong, allowing him to execute his abilities perfectly.

Ning Ruozi came back and hugged Yue Zhong, with her crystal clear eyes staring at him as she pouted: "Brother!! Brother!! Bring Ruozi along as well!! Ruozi wants to follow Big Brother!!"

Yue Zhong looked at the adorable Ning Ruozi, and immediately turned her down: "No way!! You don't have any special abilities. Bringing you would be too dangerous!"

Ning Ruozi looked at Yue Zhong with tearful eyes as she pleaded: "Big Brother!! Ruozi heard that Big Brother have methods to turn people into Evolvers. If Big Brother do that to Ruozi, won't it be safe for Ruozi to tag along?"

Hearing those words from Ning Ruozi, other than Ming Jiajia, the gazes from the other girls immediately fell on Yue Zhong.

The fact that Yue Zhong had the ability to help a person become an Evolver, almost everyone from Jingxi City and Tianxin District knew about it. Yue Zhong did not stop the news from spreading, because with this knowledge, his subordinates would work harder and be loyal, so they could stand a chance to become an Evolver with great power.

Yue Zhong ruffled Ning Ruozi's head and said mildly: "It's true, I do have a treasure that does that. However, it's too precious, and I can't give it to you now."

The juice from the Snake Birth Fruit was too valuable, every single vial could result in an Evolver. Yue Zhong would only bestow it upon those who were loyal and willing to die for him. Initially, he had no choice but to turn Ming Jiajia into an Evolver as the situation called for it due to the lack of trusted personnel.

Ning Ruozi crunched up her face, and pouted as she ran from Yue Zhong's side: "Ruozi's angry!! Big Brother is a bad person! Ruozi will ignore you!!"

Yue Zhong watched Ning Ruozi, as he chuckled and did not say much. He continued to soak himself for a while, before carrying Dong Ling and leaving.

Su Xueling also stood up not long after, and headed outside.

The moment Su Xueling left, Ning Yuxin's face turned wooden, as she lectured Ning Ruozi: "Ruozi! What's with you today? If you continue to be like that, what if he is overcome by lust?"

The cute smile on Ning Ruozi's face vanished, as she revealed a look of indifference and maturity that did not fit her age, using that child-like voice of hers to reply: "Sister! We're already in his hands, if he wants to do so, we can do nothing. Life here is pretty good! If it was outside, if we fell into some other perverts' hands, then it would truly be a fate worse than death."

Ning Ruozi thought back to a scene where she saw a few men crowding around a pot with kids inside, and she shuddered involuntarily, which had nothing to do with the cold. She gritted her teeth as a resolute look flashed across her face, saying: "If we want to live on in this apocalyptic world, then we need strength. I will definitely control Yue Zhong, and have him under my heel. That way, us sisters will get to live safely and securely."

Ning Yuxin retorted in anger: "What if he violates you? Men are biologically wired to be unable to control themselves!! You're playing with fire!!"

Ning Ruozi replied indifferently: "Then let him be! Ever since we came to this villa, I've already prepared myself. We weak women would be violated by others, even if it's not by him."

Ning Yuxin shuddered with rage, and slapped Ning Ruozi on her face furiously, as she felt indignant about her sister's nonchalant

attitude towards their plight.

The slap landed hard on Ning Ruozi's face, causing a red palm print to appear on it.

Ning Yuxin saw the imprint on her sister's face, and her heart ached, as she hugged her tightly, and cried out: "I'm sorry! I'm sorry! It's my fault!! It's my fault!!"

Ning Ruozi had tears in her eyes, as she hugged Ning Yuxin back and consoled her: "You were not wrong! I didn't know my limits. Rest assured sister, Ruozi will definitely protect you! You're after all the only family I've got left. Set your mind at ease sister, Ruozi is the cutest loli on earth,.Yue Zhong being a lolicon, would not be able to resist my charms."

Ning Yuxin hugged Ning Ruozi tightly: "No! Ruozi! It should be me protecting you! Don't worry, I won't let any harm come to you!"

"Let me protect you!! Whatever the cost, I, as your sister, will protect you!" Ning Yuxin hugged her only family tightly, as a resolute look flashed in her eyes.

Ning Ruozi kept silent, and the 2 beauties hugged quietly for awhile, as warm feelings surged between the 2.

"Oh right! Ruozi, just now you called Yue Zhong Big Brother, wasn't that too mushy!"

"Eh~! That's not true! Guys like that oh! Sister!"

Ning Yuxin was puzzled: "En? Is that true?"

"You have been too caught up with studying, that's why you haven't been in love, what a bummer!!"

Ning Yuxin grabbed Ning Ruozi's cheeks and squeezed: "Little brat, you're too mature!!"

Ning Ruozi let out a hamster-like squeak: "No Sister!! Ruozi's undefeatable face would be damaged!!"

"Where did you learn this type of nonsense?"

"Of course through manhwas~! Once we go back, I'll introduce you to 2 of the romance type! That way you can also understand men better! Hehe!!"

Without Yue Zhong around, Ning Ruozhi did not put on any pretense of her earlier cuteness, instead she was truly wearing a smile. She who had gone through so much, knew that being able to survive with your family in this world, was the greatest joy.

Early the next morning, Yue Zhong was still in slumber, when a cute female's voice resounded in his ear.

"Bro....ther! It's time....to wake up, Brother!! If you're still not up, I'm going to....take away the blanket!!"

The female voice that sounded in his ear was trembling and felt forced. Yue Zhong opened his eyes slowly, and saw Ning Yuxin dressed in white socks, white shirts and a white mini skirt, her face flushed red, as she stood there.

"Seems like....it seems like, if I don't...do this...it won't work!! Bro...ther, you pervert!" Ning Yuxin saw that Yue Zhong had opened his eyes, and forced down her sense of shame and fought against the urge to run, as she lowered her head to kiss him on the lips.\*

# Chapter 373: Move Out!

---

After a light kiss, Ning Yuxin was like a terrified little doe, her face flushed extremely red, as she looked at Yue Zhong whose eyes were wide open in shock, as she stammered out in embarrassment: "Like this....you should be satisfied!! Bro....ther! Time to get up!"

Yue Zhong stared at the once-cold Ning Yuxin who had just exhibited the characteristics of a 2D persona from manhwas, and did not look away. Her entire uncomfortable demeanor and the unease of her earlier actions, gave her an interesting sense of charm.

"If you still...don't get up...you're going....to...be late! Bro.....ther!" Ning Yuxin was feeling increasingly shy as she was stared at by Yue Zhong, stammering her words out with difficulty.

"Hahahaha!!!!" Ning Ruozi had just entered Yue Zhong's chambers, and saw her sister's embarrassed and awkward behaviour, and could not help but hug her belly and roared out in laughter!!

"This is bad!!!!" Ning Yuxin was laughed at by her sister, and feeling faint, she dashed out of the room, and escaped!

Ning Ruozi watched her sister run away, as she put on her angelic smile and jumped beside Yue Zhong, pecking him lightly on the cheeks, and said: "Good morning, Big Brother!"

Yue Zhong ruffled Ning Ruozi's head and replied: "Morning! Go out first! I'm going to change!"

Ning Ruozi's bright eyes sparkled, as she laughed sweetly: "I don't mind! You can change in front of me, it's ok~!"

Yue Zhong flicked her forehead: "It's not ok with me!"

"Che!" Ning Ruozi hugged her head, as she glared at Yue Zhong adorably, before bolting out the room as well.

"Brother! This time, if you're heading to Guilin City, please bring me along!" At the dining table, Ning Yuxin brought the matter up.

Ning Yuxin was an intelligent girl, and knew that there were no prior form of interaction between her and Yue Zhong. Only through constant interaction and the experience of situations together would their relationship improve. Now, she could only make use of her looks and coyness to earn his adoration, but not become an important person to him!

Ming Jiajia was the perfect example who had went through thick and thin with Yue Zhong, and had naturally become someone important to him.

Yue Zhong gazed at Ning Yuxin and asked slowly: "This time, the trip to Guilin City will be fraught with unknown dangers! In fact, there might be constant trouble along the way! I can't guarantee your safety! Are you certain you want to go with me?"

Ning Yuxin looked at Yue Zhong with a resolute gaze and replied: "Yes! I want to go to Guilin City with you! I know English, Vietnamese, Thai, Malay and Japanese. I'm also trained in Karate and Taekwondo, small-time thugs aren't my match. I'm capable of protecting myself!"

Ning Yuxin had been the daughter of a chairman of a multinational corporation, and their main clientele were Southeast Asian countries. Ning Yuxin had been groomed to take over the company, and hence, she had picked up 4 different languages, and learnt different forms of self-defence, and could be considered as an elite member of society.

Yue Zhong took a long glance at Ning Yuxin for a while, before saying: "Fine!! I'll bring you along!"

Ning Yuxin heaved a sigh of relief: "Thanks Brother!"

Ning Ruozhi also hugged Yue Zhong's arm as she tried to ask him coyly: "Big Brother!! I want to go too!! Bring me along, will you?"

Yue Zhong looked at Ning Ruozi and his expression turned wooden: "No! You can't go! No matter how much you try to beg! Continue this and I'll spank your bottom!"

Ning Ruozi was still a delicate girl after all, and could be frozen to death if not careful. Yue Zhong was naturally not willing to bring her out.

Unless it was Yaoyao, or Ming Jiajia, who were Evolvers, Yue Zhong would not allow the other younger girls to endanger themselves!

Ning Ruozi scrunched her face again, as she pouted and retorted: "Petty miser! I shall not care about you!"

Su Xueling seemed like she wanted to speak, but she hesitated, and in the end, keeping silent. She was good-looking, but had never taken on any form of self defence lessons, and if she followed along, she would just be a burden. When she thought about the journey that was sure to span over a few hundred li, she could not say anything.

In this world, a few hundred li were still considered long, and there were bound to be Mutant Beasts along the way, as well as hordes of zombies. If they were to encounter any behemoths, their vehicle troops might be even wiped out.

In an office of Long Hai City.

Chi Yang was currently facing the officials that were seated around and said: "There's news of Yue Zhong!! It came from Guangxi! Yue Zhong's still alive!!"

"Leader Yue's still alive! That's great!"

"As expected!! Leader Yue is still alive! I knew he couldn't be dead!"

"....."

The entire meeting hall erupted in joyous cheers, as the



dampened mood and low spirits from Yue Zhong's disappearance washed away. There were a few ambitious characters who also quelled the schemes in their hearts when they heard the news.

Lu Wen couldn't help but ask: "Where's Yue Zhong right now?"

Guo Yu who was sitting beside Lu Wen also turned her gaze towards Chi Yang waiting for his answer.

Chi Yang continued without missing a beat: "Yue Zhong is currently at Tianxin District near the borders of China and Vietnam. He had already conquered it, and established a camp of more than 60,000 survivors!"

"Holy shit!! He really is our Leader Yue!! Too awesome!!" Da Gouzi sighed in awe.

"Yea!! He's really the best!" Chen Yan had a look of excitement as he said.

"....."

The various officials in Long Hai City sighed.

In the city base, they had the ammunitions manufacturing line up and running, and while it could not produce the ammo for the heavy weapons like cannons and tanks, they had no shortage of ammunition for the majority of their weapons. With that, after Yue Zhong had disappeared, they could only regain 2 other major cities, and the total survivors they absorbed amounted to about 4,000 people. Compared to Yue Zhong's progress, it was indeed a little miserable.

In truth, it had to do with the leadership style as well. Yue Zhong liked to advance constantly and conquer. Chi Yang, on the other hand, took comfort in stability and wasn't aggressive.

While Chi Yang held the reins of Long Hai City, he wasn't the true leader, and thus, whenever he wanted things to be done, there were minor obstructions along the way, hence, slowing the rate of progress. However, he was extremely sturdy and although Yue

Zhong had been gone for some time, there were no major problems as a result of his leadership, and he didn't give the more ambitious characters any opportunity to pounce on.

Chi Yang eyed the people in front of him and commanded: "I shall announce, from now on, our next target will be regaining SY City! After the weather turns warmer, we shall immediately set for the Southwest direction, and clear a route between Yue Zhong and us! Everyone will have to work towards this single objective!"

"Yes!" The entire top brass were unison this time round, as they answered with vigor. It was a matter that had weighed heavily on them, and now, with him back, they were revitalized.

After the meeting was concluded, Chi Yang went to a window looking towards the southwest direction and gazed out silently. In the direction, there were his parents, as well as his unforgettable first love. However, he could only stay here and not look for them.

"Yue Zhong! I'm leaving them to you!" Chi Yan looked out at the harsh cold winds as he thought to himself silently.

The snowstorm in Tianxin District lasted an entire 2 weeks before coming to a stop, and warm sunlight finally broke through the clouds.

The moment the skies cleared, a vehicle fleet comprising of 6 jeeps, 4 resources trucks, an IFV, and 2 trucks full of nothing but fuel left Tianxin District, making their way towards the horizon.

On the journey this time, Yue Zhong brought Ming Jiajia, Zheng Minghe, Ning Yuxin, Luo Chifeng, Bai Xiaosheng and a few other experts. Wu Yin, Wei Ningguo and a few other capable generals of his were stationed at Tianxin District and Jingxi City to continue the fortifying of the bases and training of the troops.

Yue Zhong had brought only a handful of people with him, totaling 37. Even if these 37 died, it wouldn't impact Tianxin District or Jingxi City in any way.

Under the conditions where the weather was unpredictable, bringing a large number of troops was tantamount to suicide, as a snowstorm could easily wipe the entire troop out. A smaller team would find it easier to survive, furthermore, everyone that came with him was an expert, and their survival skills in the wild were naturally higher.

Bai Xiaosheng yawned out of boredom: "So boring!! Isn't there something exciting?"

Zheng Minghe glared at Bai Xiaosheng coldly: "Platoon Commander Bai! Keep quiet. We are recon soldiers! Loud noises will reveal our positions!"

Zheng Minghe did not view Bai Xiaosheng favourably. When Yue Zhong had launched the assault on Tianxin District, Bai Xiaosheng was Bei Mingyang's trump card and yet, he was useless. It was because he prioritized his lust over anything else, and when Yue Zhong had come knocking, Bai Xiaosheng was still lying in bed with his women and having a good sleep.

Bai Xiaosheng laughed conceitedly, as he patted Zheng Minghe's shoulder: "Old Zheng!! Don't worry!! Even if we reveal ourselves, it'll be ok! I will be responsible for killing those poor fools who find us! Just relax!"

Zheng Minghe's face darkened: "On the field, you'd better refer to me as Captain!!"

Bai Xiaosheng laughed nonchalantly: "Alright alright! Captain!! Captain, can you not be so rigid? Once we go back to Tianxin District, I'll introduce a few ladies to you ok! Let's engage in a 6p orgy! Hahaha!!"

Zheng Minghe's face was thoroughly black by now, and he did not continue talking, as he continued observing the front.

"Old Zheng! The women I know are all guaranteed high quality! I promise that they're the best of the best! Not a single one is below

70 points!" Bai Xiaosheng was like a piece of sticky candy that stuck on him and did not stop talking.

Just as Zheng Minghe was about to explode with anger, gunshots rang out from the distance!

"Shut up!" Zheng Minghe's expression changed, as he shot forwards on his own like an arrow towards the disturbance.

## Chapter 374: Heaven Sect!

---

Bai Xiaosheng's eyes narrowed as well, as he jumped out of the figure, and shot forwards like an arrow. In just a space of 10 breaths, he managed to overtake Zheng Minghe and charged onto the battlefield.

Zheng Minghe was shocked in his heart as he rushed to Bai Xiaosheng's side: "So fast! No wonder he was termed as Tianxin District's number 1 expert!"

They discovered that there were currently 2 factions of people engaged in slaughter at a distance in the snow-white field. One of which were people dressed in all sorts of tattered clothing, the other dressed entirely in black, their heads wearing some strange hats.

The 1st faction with the assorted clothings were carrying various guns, while those in black were mainly wielding machetes and other weapons.

Both were fighting furiously, and the black-dressed faction were being overwhelmed, as they retreated continuously, and a few of their women and kids were abandoned, before being taken by the militants in tattered clothes.

When those gun-wielding militants caught those women and kids, they would immediately laugh out cruelly, and tie them up, before continuing their assault on the other faction dressed in black.

Zheng Minghe gave an order to Bai Xiaosheng: "Stay here and observe! I'll go notify the leader!"

"There's no need! I alone will be more than enough for this bunch of thrash!" Bai Xiaosheng eyed the militants, the sides of his mouth curving in an arc, as he revealed a malevolent smile. He waved his hands, before a pair of green daggers appeared in his hands, and

with just a step, he seemed to transform into a spectre as he shot forwards.

"Asshole!!" Zheng Minghe could not help but curse when Bai Xiaosheng blatantly ignored his orders. He despised those soldiers who did not give a hoot about military command on the battlefield.

"But! He's really fast!" Zheng Minghe observed that within a few breaths of time, Bai Xiaosheng had actually already reached the midst of the group of fighting over 300m away, and his heart involuntarily trembled. Bai Xiaosheng's speed was truly fearsome.

Having suddenly appeared in the midst of the gun-wielding militants, he slashed his daggers about in a mad frenzy.

The militants found either their throats slashed, or a nick at their chest, causing their hearts to bleed, and they fell to the ground in disbelief.

30 seconds!

In just 30 seconds, from appearing within the group of militants, Bai Xiaosheng had totally wiped out 16 members of the 19-strong group, leaving 3 alive. The remaining 3 immediately quailed in fear, as they threw their weapons down, raising their hands, afraid that their lives would be taken from them at any moment.

Zheng Minghe took all this in, his eyes flashing with a strange glint, as he thought silently: "Formidable!!"

Seeing that display of speed from Bai Xiaosheng, Zheng Minghe knew he wasn't Bai Xiaosheng's match, and there has to be at least a hundred + elite soldiers to fire a cover of bullets, otherwise, ordinary soldiers would not be able to even catch up with his speed.

Bai Xiaosheng was an Agility-based Evolver, and he had reached Level 46, the moment he fully activated his speed, it would far surpass Yue Zhong's own. Based on this speed alone, he had been

termed as the number 1 expert in Tianxin District.

Zheng Minghe looked at Bai Xiaosheng, and a thought passed in his mind: "Seems like Leader was worried that Wu Yin and the rest might not be able to handle this guy, that's why he brought him along!"

Zheng Minghe was truly on the mark, Yue Zhong was not ok with leaving such an expert at Tianxin District or Jingxi City when things have not yet stabilized.

If Yue Zhong was not around, and Bei Mingyang instigated Bai Xiaosheng to start a revolt, should the moment be right, their chances of success would definitely not be small. Hence, in the operation this time round, Yue Zhong had specifically brought many of the experts that used to be under Bei Mingyang.

On one hand, it was to bring them away from the 2 bases, on the other, he wanted to see if he could subdue them totally and win over their loyalty.

These experts had surrendered to Yue Zhong due to the difference in strength, but had yet to follow him wholeheartedly.

Soon after, Yue Zhong arrived with the rest of the fleet.

When Yue Zhong came to the scene, he saw the ground littered with corpses, and he frowned as he barked: "Any survivors?"

"Leader! These are the ones left alive!" Bai Xiaosheng kicked the 3 captives as he brought them in front of Yue Zhong.

When Bai Xiaosheng stood straight, his eyes could not help but roam over to Ning Yuxin and Ming Jiajia dressed in military wear beside Yue Zhong, and he blurted out: "What a pair of beauties with such heroic auras!! Leader, why don't you give me the loli? I'm willing to exchange 10 beauties for her."

"Shut up!" Yue Zhong's eyes turned cold, as he reached out for Bai Xiaosheng's neck with lightning speed.

Bai Xiaosheng was an Agility-based Evolver after all, and he was fully equipped with Agility-enhancing items. The moment Yue Zhong moved, he also reacted, his body tensed and poised, as though he was ready to launch his own counterattack.

At this moment, Yue Zhong's eyes retracted, and he activated the [Art of Fear], and the horrifying spiritual and illusionary attack blasted Bai Xiaosheng's consciousness relentlessly.

In that instant, Bai Xiaosheng was sent through years of torment, through various means like back-breaking, dismembering, being lit on fire, his heart carved out, even beheading. It caused his mental faculties to collapse.

"Illusion!!" Although Bai Xiaosheng was frivolous, he was after all an expert that had gone through countless battles. Right before he lost his mind completely, he managed to regain a little clarity, and bit his lips viciously, causing it to bleed, and the pain shaking his head clear, pulling himself out of the illusion with great difficulty.

The moment he managed to extract himself out from the illusion, he discovered his neck was already held in the vice-like grip of Yue Zhong's right hand. While Bai Xiaosheng's body was slightly tougher than ordinary people, as long as Yue Zhong squeezed a little harder, Bai Xiaosheng's neck would be crushed.

Yue Zhong's eyes were like ice-cold daggers without a hint of warmth, as though he wanted to pierce Bai Xiaosheng's heart as he said: "I don't like that tone and the kind of jokes you're making! If there is a next time, Bai Xiaosheng, don't blame me for being harsh!"

Bai Xiaosheng felt like he was being stared at by a beast filled with killing intent, and he replied with difficulty: "Yes! I understand!"

Yue Zhong's Spirit was reaching 165 points, and with a Spirit of more than 16 times that of a normal person, activating the [Art of Fear] on Bai Xiaosheng whose Spirit was much weaker took only 1 -



2 seconds. In a battle between experts, this 1 or 2 seconds could easily determine the victor.

Yue Zhong then released his grip, as he let go of Bai Xiaosheng's neck, before patting him on the shoulder and said indifferently: "Great work nonetheless! Since you like women, as long as you have the capability, there are plenty of beauties in this world. However, I do not wish to see you impeding my plans because of your lust. If it's like that, I'd rather send you to hell myself."

Bai Xiaosheng's neck immediately broke out in cold sweat, as he replied in an extremely honest and docile manner: "I got it!"

As an Evolver, Bai Xiaosheng possessed unparalleled combat power. He was full of himself as well, and disdained normal humans. He even looked down on Bei Mingyang, that was why for the majority of the time, he was involved more with women than assisting Bei Mingyang.

Bei Mingyang needed Bai Xiaosheng's power, and hence could only tolerate his idiosyncrasies. However, he never expected that Bai Xiaosheng would be so unreliable at the moment of crisis, and caused Tianxin District to fall into someone else's hands.

At first, Bai Xiaosheng could not care less that Tianxin District had switched leaders. He believed that with his power, even if the master had changed, they would not be able to do without him, and hence, he had not the slightest ounce of respect for Yue Zhong. However, now in just a single exchange, he had discovered the true might of this new leader, and he knew that if he did not get his act together, this new leader would easily cut off his head to be treated like a soccer ball.

Zheng Minghe saw Yue Zhong settling the issue of Bai Xiaosheng in one move, and his heart was filled with shock and awe: "Leader truly is unfathomable! He's too strong!"

"Holy shit! Even Bai Xiaosheng could not last more than a move! Leader truly is too fearsome!"

"....."

Seeing the proud and obstinate Bai Xiaosheng yielding to Yue Zhong, those who had followed Yue Zhong out of Tianxin District were filled with shock. They knew Yue Zhong was strong, but to what extent, they weren't sure. Seeing the top expert of Tianxin District being defeated at Yue Zhong's hands, they had finally understood just a little of what Yue Zhong was truly capable of.

Yue Zhong then came to the 3 captives and interrogated: "Who are you people?"

"Pei!!" One of the captives looked at him with hatred, as he spat out.

With a peng, Yue Zhong fired a shot from the Stinger that he pulled out. The captive's brain was blasted apart like a watermelon, and the red and white matter splattered onto the floor, as the headless corpse slumped to the ground lifelessly.

Seeing how ruthless Yue Zhong was, Bai Xiaosheng shuddered, and celebrated that he had not pushed this death god too far, otherwise his own brains might have been already blasted.

"Who are you people?" Yue Zhong aimed at the 2nd captive, his eyes cold as he drawled.

"I'll speak!! I'll speak!! Don't kill me!! I'll tell you everything!!" The captive was frightened to the point that he wet his pants, as he cried out and begged, before answering Yue Zhong's question: "I'm Lu Ningshui, a disciple of the Heaven Sect!! This time, we are out here on orders from Zheng Qiu, also known as Altar Lord Zheng, to capture these seedlings to be sacrificed to the Sect Leader!!"

The other captive immediately burst out and cursed Lu Ningshui: "Lu Ningshui! You traitor! You dare to betray the Sect, you will not get away with it, I curse you to all 18 levels of Hell, never to be reincarnated!!"

Yue Zhong furrowed his brows, as he glanced at the other

stubborn captive, and handed a Tang Replica Sword to Lu Ningshui: "Chop his head off! You can live after that!"

"Go die!!" Lu Ningshui received the Tang Replica Sword, and struggled for awhile, before coming to a decision. Swinging the blade, he bellowed out as he sliced his comrade's head off. He then kneeled in front of Yue Zhong and proclaimed: "Lu Ningshui is willing to work for this Master, and plead that Master accepts this lowly one."

Yue Zhong eyed Lu Ningshui and immediately gave a command: "I'm Yue Zhong. From today onwards, you're part of my group. Tell me everything you know about the Heaven Sect!"

"Yes! Boss Yue Zhong!!" Lu Ningshui gritted his teeth, before revealing all that he knew to Yue Zhong, and was thorough with it.

Heaven Sect was founded by an expert called Linghu Xiangru. Lu Ningshui was unclear on his background, but knew that Linghu Xiangru possessed 3 strange abilities: a buddha light on his back, invulnerability as well as incantations.

With those 3 abilities, Linghu Xiangru had taken the teachings from Christianity, Buddhism and Taoism to found his own Heaven Sect, and proclaimed himself to be the Sect Leader. He called himself the Apostle of God and was sent here to walk amongst mortals and to save them. Those who believed in him would enter the Kingdom of God and have an immortal soul after death. As for his enemies, they would be banished to the 18 Levels of Hell, and would never reincarnate.

In such a world, this sort of religious influence had a huge attraction on those who had lost their faith. The moment the Heaven Sect was formed, it attracted many followers from all over the place, and it became an existence with over 8,000 followers. The scary thing was that, out of these 8,000 followers, 3,000 of them were true fanatics, and were willing to do anything for the Sect Leader, to the point of throwing their own lives for him.

In the post-apocalyptic world, the power of faith can be a fearsome strength indeed. Especially at the start of the apocalypse, there was the voice that claimed to be God, which proved the existence of God. This led to people with reasoning to lose their sense of rationality and joined the Heaven Sect.

Of the 19 people that came to capture the people from the other faction, 13 of them were fanatics. Lu Ningshui were one of the few that maintained his clarity. Although he knew that this Heaven Sect was unorthodox, for the sake of living, he continued to put on a farce of being a follower, and did their jobs for them.

Lu Ningshui's eyes flashed with dread as he continued: "Other than the Sect Leader Linghu Xiangru who has unfathomable strength, there are 8 Great Elders, 72 Law Protectors and 108 Altar Lords. Everyone of them are high levelled Enhancers, and have great strength as well!"

Yue Zhong asked: "What kind of weapons does the Heaven Sect have? Heavy weaponry?"

Lu Ningshui pondered for awhile, then replied: "There aren't many guns in the Heaven Sect, only about 200 to 300 old rifles. As for heavy weaponry, I have not seen any! There shouldn't be any!"

Yue Zhong nodded slightly, then turned towards another middle-aged man that was brought to him as he asked: "What about you people?"

"I'm Wu Shanshi! The head of the Nine Holes Camp. These people have been under my protection. Those bastards had attacked us with no forewarning and stole our rations, as well as kidnapping the women and kids! Those bastards!!" Wu Shanshi looked at Lu Ningshui, his eyes filled with hatred as he shouted out.

## Chapter 375: Grain Tree???

---

"You may go!!" After Yue Zhong heard what Wu Shanshi had to say, he pondered a while, before giving the signal to his subordinates aiming at the Nine Holes people, who then put their guns down. The women and children were also released to rejoin their families.

Bai Xiaosheng walked over in a relaxed manner and asked Yue Zhong while laughing: "Leader!! How about we go and decimate the Heaven Sect? Since they have over 8,000 members, there must be at least a dozen of beauties right? The most beautiful ones will naturally belong to Leader, as for the rest that don't suit your taste, I'll gladly take them off your hands!!"

Bai Xiaosheng was naturally strong, but had zero governing abilities, and only sought to fulfill his desires. This was how Bei Mingyang had easily recruited him into his ranks, and became his top fighter. Even now that the leaders have changed, a leopard can't change its spot and he still lusted after women.

Yue Zhong replied indifferently: "No! The Heaven Sect has 8,000 members after all! If we want to eradicate them, we would need to spend a huge amount of time! We don't have that kind of time to waste. Shang Lun, adjust our route!"

The Heaven Sect was also nothing in Yue Zhong's eyes. Without any heavy weapons, Yue Zhong estimated that 5 tanks and an fully equipped infantry battalion would be enough to wipe them out.

If it wasn't for the uncertain weather, as well as the difficult progress for the troops, Yue Zhong would have deployed some people to wipe out this unorthodox sect.

Shang Lun replied: "Yes! Leader!"

The soldiers from the fleet then disembarked and gathered the weapons and resources from the corpses of the Heaven Sect

members, and made preparations to leave.

When Wu Shanshi saw this, his face fell, and looked at Yue Zhong before he came before him and dropped to his knees. He started begging: "Sir!! I beg you, please save my tribesmen!! I'm kneeling and begging please!! Those animals took our people and will engage in blood sacrifice! We have lost over 30 over people to them, if you don't go and save them, they will definitely die at the hands of those bastards!"

Yue Zhong replied apathetically: "I'm very sorry! I don't have the time to spare! Since those animals have kidnapped your people, you guys should go save them yourselves!"

Yue Zhong only had the objective of rushing towards Guilin City on his mind now, and did not want to entangle with the Heaven Sect.

In this post-apocalyptic world, there were poor souls everywhere. If Yue Zhong were to help each and everyone of them seek justice, even till the day he died, he would not be able to solve every single problem. Furthermore, he had no relations with this Wu Shanshi, he wasn't willing to waste time for a stranger.

Wu Shanshi gritted his teeth, if someone of his calibre were to head to Heaven Sect, he would fall before saving anybody. Only the young man in front of him had the capability to rescue his tribesmen, but he was obviously not interested.

Wu Shanshi continued in a low voice: "Sir!! If you can bring your men to save my people, we're willing to do anything for you. We're willing to offer you a tribe treasure, the Grain Tree."

Yue Zhong's eyes narrowed, and asked directly: "Grain Tree? What's that?"

Wu Shanshi then revealed the biggest secret of the Nine Holes Camp: "Grain Tree, it is a huge tree that can produce grain! There are a few such trees in our Nine Holes Camp, each tree could

produce a few hundred jin of rice. The people of our tribe have been relying on these to survive till now."

In this post-apocalyptic world, rice was indefinitely more valuable than gold. Most of the seeds of the pre-apocalyptic world had no way of germinating currently, only a handful of mutated seeds had managed to grow.

Because of this, the agriculture industry crashed entirely, and there were no new ways of farming yet. If what Wu Shanshi said was true, then the dozens of Grain Trees at the Nine Holes Camp could become the cornerstone of the farming industry. If it were really the case, the dozens of trees would be more valuable than a few thousand tonnes of rations.

Yue Zhong's gaze was piercing, as he became a little excited and asked: "Is what you said for real? If it's true! I can deploy troops to save your people! However! If you're lying, you and your tribesmen will have to pay a painful price!"

If Yue Zhong managed to obtain that Grain Tree, then he could begin mass planting of such trees, and he would solve the problem of rations.

Wu Shanshi nodded profusely and swore: "It definitely is the truth! Should there be the slightest lie in my words, you can shoot me dead!!"

Yue Zhong eyed Wu Shanshi and the corners of his mouth lifted: "Fine! Go bring Lu Ningshui over!"

Mahogany Town was a small rural town, and within the town, other than a shopping mall, there no other tall buildings.

In a room within Mahogany Town, there was a man dressed in a few layers of clothes, while his face was flushed red from the cold, and he was carrying a huge axe on his back. He cursed out: "Making me work in this damned weather! Fucking troublesome!!"

Another young man who was dressed similarly and had decent

features replied: "Zhao Lin! Suffering is a blessing! Since we can slog for the Heaven Sect, when we get to the Kingdom of God, we get to enjoy 3 times the blessings! This was promised by the Altar Lord Zheng after all! You must cherish it!"

"Yes! Yes! I got it!!" Zhao Lin agreed on the surface, but innately, he was cursing: "This idiot! Still calls himself a university student! Must have damaged his brains through his studies, to be brainwashed so completely. What a fool!"

Zhao Lin then turned to another guy lying in bed, wrapped in blankets, as he asked: "Old Wang!! Didn't Li Sheng, Zhou Xu and the rest catch a bunch of pigs\*? Amongst the group of them, there're some good looking ones! Wanna go and play with them?" \* (referring to the captives)

Old Wang shook his head: "The good-looking chicks are to be offered to the Altar Lords, Law Protectors, Great Elders and the Sect Leader! If we were to fool around, we might get banished to Hell."

Zhao Lin urged: "I know! But other than those extremely pretty ones, the rest should be fine! Let's go find a few young ones to have fun with, even if the upper guys know, they won't say much."

Old Wang was tempted when he heard this, in such cold weather, hugging a young woman's body to warm oneself was a sort of bliss, and while he didn't dare touch those picked out by the top, the rest were in fact no problem.

The young man frowned, and barked out sternly: "What're you guys thinking of? Those are pigs, demons!! If you were to yoke with them, you will be tainted. In the end, you'll go to Hell!!"

Zhao Lin and Old Wang exchanged a glance, and both felt that the fanatic in front of them was beyond hope.

"Zhao Lin! Open the door!!" At this time, a voice resounded from the entrance of the town.



Zhao Lin looked out the window, and saw Lu Ningshui bringing a bunch of people to the entrance of the town.

"Hot damn! Such quality goods!!" Zhao Lin saw Ning Yuxin standing beside Lu Ningshui and was instantly captivated. He had only seen beautiful women like this twice!

Zhao Lin hurried to let the group in, and stared hungrily at Ning Yuxin while saying: "Old Lu! How did you get such top quality goods! You have struck it rich this time. If you offer her to the Sect Leader, he would probably be so happy and confer you the title of an Altar Lord!"

The fanatic Xu Heng came over, speaking in a righteous manner: "Zhao Lin, don't smear the Sect Leader! My Heaven Sect is upright and moral, and test one's faith and contributions! We don't operate on desires and lust!! If you continue to smear the Sect Leader, take care that I will go report this to Altar Lord Zheng!"

After lecturing Zhao Lin, he looked towards Lu Ningshui who had come back alone with Yue Zhong, Bai Xiaosheng, Shang Lun, Ming Jiajia and Ning Yuxin in tow, and could not help but ask a question out of suspicion. "Lu Ningshui! How come it's only you! Where's Zhang Yu and the rest? Who're these guys?"

Lu Ningshui's face turned stony and scolded back: "Xu Heng! Who do the hell do you think you are! On what grounds are you questioning this daddy! When I fought the war in the south and battled in the north, you were still not part of Heaven Sect yet! I'm a high-ranking disciple, while you're just a apprentice-level disciple! Your offence this time, do you want to be banished to Hell?"

Xu Heng bit his lip and lowered his head to apologize: "I'm sorry!"

Lu Ningshui coughed, before resuming a proud look: "I was separated from Zhang Yu and the rest. I caught these pigs when I was wandering! Bring me to Li Sheng and the rest!"

"Yes!" Xu Heng replied, and brought them towards the centre of the town.

Along the way, Ming Jiajia grabbed Yue Zhong's hands, revealing the locations of the various soldiers hidden within the town.

Yue Zhong had already obtained intelligence from Lu Ningshui, and this town was just a sentry outpost. It had over 300 disciples, and most of the members would use it as a base before heading out in all directions to attack, and bring the captives there. There were a few scattered tribes around this area, and the disciples would specially head out to catch these tribes.

Along the way, with Ming Jiajia's directions, Yue Zhong had already grasped the positions of the various sentries, the moment he lashed out, he was confident of taking them out.

With Xu Heng's guidance, Yue Zhong and the rest came to a French-styled villa.

In the great hall of the villa, there were 24 males lounging about, every single one of them with a ferocious air. They had various weapons by their sides, including loaded rifles, Tang Replica Swords and various other weapons strewn about. To an unobservant person, these men all appeared to be relaxed and lazy, The key point though, was that they were all right within arms reach.

## Chapter 376: Arrival Of The Grand Elder

---

The 24 men were currently either playing poker, or smoking cigarettes, or drinking. Everyone of them were relaxing in their own way. At a corner, 4 of them were pressed on top of 6 women, engaging in an orgy. The entire villa looked foul.

These 24 disciples were considered high-ranking disciples, everyone of them having fought many battles for Heaven Sect.

One of them, who sported an ugly beard, dishevelled hair, and golden teeth looked at Lu Ningshui, and chuckled leeringly: "Lu Ningshui, your luck's not bad! You actually gotten your hands on such amazing chicks! When you strike it big, don't forget us brothers!"

One of the males glanced at Ning Yuxin and Ming Jiajia, as a steely gleam flashed in his eyes: "Not bad!! An adult and a kid, both top-notch! This time, Sect Leader is bound to reward you!!"

Another disciple looked at Yue Zhong and the rest beside Lu Ningshui, and frowned before scolding: "Lu Ningshui! How can you not know the rules! Forget about the women! Why didn't you bring those 3 pigs to the holding pen, instead coming here?"

Yue Zhong looked around at the 24 high-ranking disciples, and ordered out coldly: "Leave 5 alive, kill the rest!"

Upon receiving Yue Zhong's orders, Shang Lun immediately grabbed the throat of the fanatic Xu Heng in a vice-grip, and crushed down viciously, destroying his throat.

Bai Xiaosheng's eyes flashed icily, and pulled out a Dark Magic Blade as he shot forwards into the crowd, waving his blade flashily, and 5 people were instantly beheaded. In just a second, he had taken care of 5 high-ranking disciples.

Ming Jiajia had also activated her ability at the first instant, and 5 Shadow Wolves leapt from the shadows of 5 other guys, biting

them on the neck and killing them instantly.

Shang Lun shot forwards like an arrow, breaking into the crowd. He was extremely knowledgeable about the human anatomy, and chopped down accurately and precisely at specific spots of the disciples, like the back of the brain or neck, causing them to faint instantly.

Bai Xiaosheng on the other hand, was a killing demon. He laughed maniacally, as he slaughtered the disciples in a frenzy. Those poor sods didn't even have the time to pick up any weapons before they were totally annihilated.

Barely 5 seconds had passed and within the huge hall of the villa, only Yue Zhong's team as well as the captives required by Yue Zhong remained. The 6 women who were being ravaged were left alive as well.

After wiping out all the disciples, Bai Xiaosheng looked at the 6 ladies and chuckled coldly: "Ladies! Don't scream! Otherwise, no matter how much I love women, I'd have no choice but to lop your heads off!"

Hearing the threats from Bai Xiaosheng, the 6 women all nodded in fright, as they covered their own mouths, not daring to make a sound.

"It's too scary!!" Ning Yuxin took a look at the hall that was now dyed red with blood and littered with body parts, as she turned pale, and almost vomited. Although she had witnessed her fair share of executions, none came close to the sheer brutality and scale of the scene before her. The bloody place caused her to be revolted.

Yue Zhong glanced at Ning Yuxin and muttered: "This is the reality of the world outside! The victors are kings and the losers are bandits! Since you have left the comfort of that place, you'd do well to accept the cruelty of the situation!"

Most ordinary girls were after all good at heart, and were generally weaker than men, and hence weren't suitable for battles on the forefront..

That was not to say that all women were like that, as within Yue Zhong's army, there were numerous female soldiers, and they were the survivors he rescued from the hands of the Vietnamese. Those female soldiers had undergone all sorts of torment and were filled with hatred. They were not any weaker than the men during training, and when they fought, they had a ferocity like that of wild tigers. They could be considered a powerful weapon of Yue Zhong.

Ning Yuxin's face was still pale as she took a look at Ming Jiajia who was calm and collected, as she said with resolution: "I know!! I will definitely brave this!!"

Lu Ningshui looked at the carnage that had just occurred in a matter of 5 seconds, and his heart turned cold: "Too overbearing..." Yue Zhong then ordered Bai Xiaosheng: "Bai Xiaosheng. Go kill the rest of the enemies within this villa!"

In the villa with its inconsistent interior, the varied terrain was extremely beneficial to Bai Xiaosheng with his insane speed. He could unleash it to a frightening degree, and slaughter his enemies easily.

Bai Xiaosheng charged further in as he shouted back: "Yes Leader! Remember to gift me with a few more beauties later on!!"

Yue Zhong stared at one of the captives that been awakened by dumping cold water: "Where are you keeping the survivors you've caught?"

The captive spat out obstinately: "Fuck your mother!"

Yue Zhong glanced at Lu Ningshui and coldly commanded: "Chop his head off!"

Lu Ningshui did not hesitate one bit as he swung his Tang Replica

Sword at the neck of his ex-comrade, directly decapitating him. Fresh blood spurt towards the skies, as the lifeless head rolled over to another disciple.

Seeing his comrade's head, the disciple immediately trembled, as he retreated, his eyes filled with intense fear.

The other 3 disciples also could not help but tremble.

Yue Zhong then chose another disciple and asked simply: "Where are you keeping the survivors you've caught?"

The disciple trembled as he retorted stubbornly: "You devil, you'll definitely go to hell...."

Yue Zhong could not be bothered to hear the rest as he waved his hands, and Lu Ningshui proceeded to cut off that disciple's head as well. Fresh blood splattered everywhere.

Yue Zhong moved on to the 3rd captive: "Where. Are. You. Keeping. The. Survivors?"

"I'll say!! I'll say it!! They're kept in the basement under this villa!!!" The captive immediately broke down as he cried out while revealing the location.

Yue Zhong threw a Tang Replica Sword to him as he coldly barked: "Consider yourself smart! Go kill the other 2! I'll let you leave!"

The captive looked at the Tang Replica Sword as he struggled internally for some time, before swinging it at his fellow disciple, and chopped his head off. This swing also signified his severing of his ties with the Heaven Sect.

The last disciple's eyes widened in shock, as he screamed: "Don't kill me!! I surrender!! I'll tell you anything!! I'll tell you anything!!"

"Great Elder Niu has arrived!! The disciples in Mahogany Town, come out to pay your respects!!"

" ....."

All of a sudden, there was a resounding voice that came from outside of the town.

Hearing that voice, Lu Ningshui's expression changed, as he started muttering while looking lost: "Great Elder Niu!! Shit! Why did he come here? Why now out of all times?"

The disciple that betrayed the Heaven Sect turned pale, as he also moaned: "No..no...no...Great Elder Niu has come! I'm dead this time!!"

The captive who was originally screaming to surrender immediately became excited: "Haha!! Bunch of traitors, you're still not releasing me?! Let me go now, and offer up those 2 women, I can still input some good words for you in front of Elder Niu! Otherwise, all of you will be buried here!!"

"You talk too much!" Ming Jiajia's face turned rigid, with a thought, a Shadow Wolf leapt out from behind the captive and bit him on his neck, crushing it in one bite.

Yue Zhong looked at Lu Ningshui and asked: "What's the background of this Elder Niu! Why're you so scared?"

Lu Ningshui replied palely: "His real name is called Niu Xinghe! His power in Heaven Sect amongst the 8 Great Elders ranks number 2. Under him, there are 6 Law Protectors and 13 Altar Lords. At the same time, he has a personal troop of 300 people. He's fierce and cruel, any enemy that is caught by him would usually be tormented endlessly. The rumours are that he has tortured over 400 people to death."

Yue Zhong frowned slightly: "300 personal guards! So excessive!"

300 personal troopers were not a small number. Furthermore, Yue Zhong did not know the true strength of their combat abilities. If they happened to be all experts, Yue Zhong would have to treat the issue seriously."

Lu Ningshui continued with a face of fright: "What do we do?"

Leader? Shall we just escape first??"

Lu Ningshui was extremely afraid of landing in Niu Xinghe's hands, at that time, traitors like him would definitely face a fate worse than death.

Yue Zhong replied solemnly: "What're you afraid of! There's me!"\*

Lu Ningshui immediately quietened down, however, the look in his eyes betrayed his fear and unrest!

At this time, Bai Xiaosheng brought out a 100 or so survivors out from the villa, as he spoke to Yue Zhong excitedly: "Leader!! I found them!! This time, there are a few good-looking ones. Gift a few to me, eh?"

Yue Zhong glanced over at the survivors, and counted about 60+ women, 40+ men. Amongst the ladies, there were indeed a few beautiful ones.

Amongst them, there was a young girl of about 16-17, with fair beautiful skin, an oval-shaped face with cherry lips. Her features were defined and her body proportions stunning. Her eyes seemed like they could tell stories, while she looked fearful like the rest of them and looked about anxiously.

This young tribe girl was definitely not below Ning Yuxin in terms of looks and her aura, and was also a rare beauty.\*\*

Yue Zhong ordered: "Get ready for battle! Shang Lun, give out weapons to the men! Let them prepare for the fight to come as well!"

Bai Xiaosheng's pupils shrunk, as he asked: "Are the enemies here?"

"Yes! Bai Xiaosheng, come with me and let's check out the enemy. Shang Lun, I'll leave things here to you and White Bones!" Yue Zhong replied mildly.



With a bright flash in mid air, White Bones stepped out from the nether space, and stood in the great hall.

# Chapter 377: Song Miaoyi

---

"Elder Niu's skills are unparalleled! He's undefeatable! Long live Great Elder Niu!!"

"Elder Niu's skills are unparalleled! He's undefeatable! Long live Great Elder Niu!!"

"....."

Following the loud chants, on the sides of the road that had not completely thawed from the snow, there were 2 rows of people kneeling while chanting.

A middle-aged man with a ferocious look and a burly build sat in an ancient Chinese sedan\*, and he was wrapped in thick clothes. Under his arms, there were 2 lithe young women.

Under the Chinese sedan, there were 4 extremely well-built and good looking women hoisting it. They were obviously Enhancers from their strength.

Surrounding the sedan, there were 300 men dressed in blue. After the apocalypse, there weren't any clothes factories. Niu Xinghe could only find a storehouse and took their uniforms as the military uniform for his troops.

These 300 men wearing the same clothes looked pretty intimidating, if it wasn't for the fact that they had the words [XX Aluminium] behind them.

The man seated amidst all this glory and fanfare was obviously one of the Great Elders of the Heaven Sect, Niu Xing He.

Bai Xiaosheng and Yue Zhong were currently hiding in a corner, and Bai Xiaosheng looked at the pompous manner which Niu Xinghe made his entrance, and could not help but muttered: "Wa! It seems like a clown had appeared!! Doesn't he feel the least bit embarrassed?"

"Shame? I think he's revelling in it! This is the so-called Sect!!" Yue Zhong looked at the ridiculous manner in which Niu Xinghe had appeared in, and could not help but think of the scenes where children had ditched classes in the past to watch the welcoming ceremonies of certain leaders, as the roads were cleared by the police.

Such a fanfare was obviously a poor attempt at trying to imitate the welcoming of leaders in the past.

Yue Zhong's pupils shrunk, as he threw all thoughts behind his mind, as he stared hard at Niu Xinghe seated upon the sedan. The moment he killed this clown, the entire troop would be without a leader, and it would be easier to take them out.

Ming Jiajia furrowed her eyebrows, as she brought her lips close to Yue Zhong's ears and whispered: "Someone's coming! Seems like the number of them is not small!"

Yue Zhong's heart skipped a beat, and decided to stay his hand.

Just as Niu Xinghe's entourage passed by a small alley, all of a sudden, rifles pointed out from the various houses along the alley as they fired wildly at the troops.

Under that dense barrage of bullets, 30-over members of Niu Xinghe's personal guards fell to the ground.

"Assassin!! There's an assassin!!" One of the Law Protectors hollered out, as he raised his own gun and fired back at one of the houses.

Following the sounds of 2 gunshots, the firing from within the house ceased almost instantly. The Law Protector had the [Firearms Control] ability, and had enhanced it to Level 3, within a distance of 300m, he had the utmost confidence of firing a headshot at even an S2.

After hearing the gunshot, those Heaven Sect members who were kneeling by the roadside immediately stood up and charged

towards the sounds of gunfire.

Niu Xinghe remained seated in his sedan, looking towards the direction of the attempt on his life. In front of him, there was a Law Protector, and he had activated an [Air Barrier], stopping every single bullet aimed at Niu Xinghe!

"Niu Xinghe! Scum of humanity! Today I shall rain judgement upon you on behalf of the heavens, and take your life! Answer to the innocent you have murdered!!" At this time, following a sharp cry, a beautiful lady appeared. She had her hair in a single ponytail, her hands wearing silver bangles, and she was dressed in a gorgeous pleated skirt. She was holding a black spear as she charged at Niu Xinghe.

Niu Xinghe had a grim look as he casually picked up a 2m-long huge axe, and laughed savagely, as he jumped down from the sedan: "It really is you! Song Miaoyi!! There are paths of life to choose from yet you insist on the road of death! You've killed so many of my brothers!! I'll capture you alive today, and get every single one of my men to beat you up!! We will then raise you as a bitch!! So much so that you will not lead your life as a human, but as a dog!! You'll become a bitch that allows a thousand to ride, and ten thousand to sleep with!!"

Song Miaoyi floated out from the smoke like a fairy, as she struck out with her spear without losing a beat.

The spear strike did not seem fast, but in fact, it was lightning quick, and had some profoundness to it. Just when the Law Protector wanted to activate his [Air Barrier] skill to defend against the strike, it had already penetrated his heart.

Song Miaoyi swung upwards, and the corpse of the Heaven Sect Law Protector flew, crashing into a wall.

"Kill her!!"

"Kill her!! The heavens are with us, we're undefeatable!!"

"The heavens are with us, we're undefeatable!!"

"....."

The personal guards of Niu Xinghe hollered out, as they brandished their blades, charging towards Song Miaoyi in a frenzy. Every single one of them was an Enhancer, and while the majority were only about Level 5 or 6, under the brainwashing of the Heaven Sect, they believed themselves to be invincible, and were truly fearless.

From the various windows, the insurgents fired their rifles, killing the personal guards of Niu Xinghe.

However, the 13 Altar Lords under Niu Xinghe brought their men and routed to the back of the assassins, firing non-stop at them.

The 13 Altar Lords were Enhancers above Level 20 and Level 30, at the same time, they had the advantage of numbers. As they progressed steadily, they managed to get back the houses one by one, and the flow of the battle was slowly turning against the assassins.

Song Miaoyi danced about with her peerless and exquisite spear skills, single-handedly decimating numerous members of Niu Xinghe's personal guards.

Many of the personal guards were being slaughtered by Song Miaoyi, but these warriors were not afraid of death, and their eyes had a fervor to them as they charged at her, every strike of theirs with the intent to exchange their own lives for hers.

There were more than 200 people surrounding her from all sides in a craze, and she was forced to expend all her power, constantly wearing down her Stamina. She displayed her spear skills without stop, trying her best to kill as many of the soldiers as possible.

"The heavens are with us, we're undefeatable!!" One of the personal guards' eyes flashed with an intense fervor, as he charged towards Song Miaoyi. However, just as his chant ended, he found

his heart pierced.

"The heavens are with us, we're undefeatable!!" Before that soldier even fell to the ground, the next personal guard came from behind, charging at Song Miaoyi with the same look in his eyes.

"This Heaven Sect disciples are too scary!!" Song Miaoyi's spear moves were indeed amazing, and there were 47 Heaven Sect disciples who had fallen under her spear, but she had been forced to exert over half her Stamina. The disciples on the other hand did not seem to lose their aggression, and this caused her heart to palpitate in fear.

Song Miaoyi had peerless spear skills, and she had intended to use her skills to take care of Niu Xinghe quickly, before taking her tribesmen to hunt the disciples who would be without a leader. However, she didn't expect that she would be harassed and surrounded to this extent, while Niu Xinghe himself was sitting quietly and enjoying the show, not displaying the intent to fight personally.

Yue Zhong observed all these, and ordered: "Bai Xiaosheng! Route behind them! Take care of those attacking the assassins from behind. Ensure your safety above all else."

"Yes! Leader!" Bai Xiaosheng flashed forwards, and in that small alley, he disappeared like a spectre. Borrowing the varied elements of a street battle, an Agility-based Evolver like him would be able to exhibit a truly fearsome combat strength.

In a matter of a few seconds, Bai Xiaosheng had already routed behind the Heaven Sect.

Behind the disciples of the Heaven Sect, there was a sudden flash of green light, and 7 disciples standing together found their hearts pierced within a second.

Their eyes shone with a fading light of disbelief, as their bodies lost strength rapidly and fell the ground. Before even hitting the

ground, the last scene they saw was their fellow disciples being stabbed in their hearts noiselessly by a shadow.

Bai Xiaosheng was indeed a perverted man, but after being subdued by Yue Zhong, he truly fought hard. His combat abilities were shocking, and as long as he exerted his maximum speed, he was like a ghost, killing 21 disciples of the Heaven Sect in a matter of about 5 seconds.

He was like a terrifying hunter, noiselessly stalking and hunting his prey, and the 13 Altar Lords in front were focusing their attention on the battlefield, not noticing that he had already decimated a number of their disciples.

An Altar Lord bringing up the rear brought 6 other soldiers and guarded the rear.

Out of the blue, a spear suddenly pierced the heart of the Altar Lord, and his eyes flashed with shock, before losing their light.

A spectre-like figure flashed past, and before the soldiers beside the Altar Lord had the chance to react, they were killed in a similar fashion.

The fact that an Agility-based Evolver assassin had appeared, was devastating. The Altar Lord was a Level 32 Enhancer and he had not the chance to display any of his strength before he was picked off just like that.

"Wu Yang!! Bring your men over!!" Right at this time, the walkie-talkie resounded beside the Altar Lord.

Bai Xiaosheng eyed the walkie-talkie, as he muttered: "Seems like we can't keep this under wraps for long! I've already killed over 68 people, let's kill a few more before they notice something amiss!"

Bai Xiaosheng eyed a target at a distance and rushed over.

A clean-shaven man, with a knife-scar running down his lips said solemnly: "Seems like Wu Yang had been killed!! There's an enemy behind us! It must be some top expert, and Wu Yang definitely

must have been assassinated."

The well built man with the scar was the leader of the 13 Altar Lords under Niu Xinghe, and his name was Zhen Yeyang. He was a Level 38 Enhancer, and his strength was truly overbearing. It was not below even some of the Law Protectors. However, there are many things that are not obtained just through power alone.

Zhen Yeyang ordered out: "Notify Song Mingtao, Wu Wen and the rest to be careful of their back, and get their troops to be on guard! We will continue our assault on these few buildings here! The enemy should be a few in number, as long as we take care of those inside these buildings, we can focus our power to take the rest of them out!"

"Yes!" One of the soldiers replied.

Very quickly, 5 Altar Lords mobilized about 42 disciples as they concentrated themselves in a circle, and began defending themselves. With the abilities of those 5 Altar Lords, as well as the defence of those 42 Heaven Sect disciples, they were like a porcupine, causing Bai Xiaosheng to be helpless.

Bai Xiaosheng had confidence that against a single Altar Lord, he would be able to take him out in a single strike. However, with 5 of them staying together, coupled with their strange abilities, adding on to the fact that they were protected by 42 crazed disciples, it truly caused him to have a headache.

Unless Bai Xiaosheng was willing to take the risk and fight it out with that entire troop by throwing his life away, he would be hard pressed to defeat all 47 of them.

"No! If I don't leave now! I'll truly be forced to stay!" Song Miaoyi had killed the 72nd soldier of the personal guards, and her breathing had already become erratic, her back drenched with perspiration, and the blood on her body was coagulating. She found her black spear becoming heavier and heavier, and could not brandish it as effectively as at the start of the battle.



Song Miaoyi continued to execute a few more moves, and killed another 3 more personal guards, before she tensed her feet, and leapt towards the skies, jumping towards a bungalow.

One of the Altar Lords with a crooked mouth standing beside Niu Xinghe chuckled coldly: "You want to leave? It's too late!"

When Song Miaoyi was in midair, she suddenly discovered a number of translucent lines blocking her way, and her expression changed, as she struck out wildly with her spear, intending to break the obstruction apart.

"Surround her!" The Altar Lord laughed out coldly, and closed his fist, and the translucent fishing lines started wrapping around Song Miaoyi at an astonishing speed.

Song Miaoyi lashed out with her spear moves crazily, but she was in mid air, and could not exhibit her full force, and she only broke through 20 of the lines, before being bounded by the rest. She was instantly tied up and pulled down roughly from the skies, as she rolled to Niu Xinghe's feet.

Niu Xinghe looked at Song Miaoyi with an expression of glee as he barked out: "Bitch!! Now you know the gap between us! I haven't even made a move, and you have already lost bitch! Just based on your power, and you want to go against the Heaven Sect, you sure don't know your limits!!"

Song Miaoyi gritted her teeth and cursed out: "Niu Xinghe, what are you! You're just a beast!! Your Heaven Sect is full of sickos and perverts! If you have the guts, kill me now!! As long as I'm still breathing, I will definitely not let any of you bastards go free!!"

Niu Xinghe looked at her, as his eyes flashed with a cruel and vicious light and he roared with laughter: "Hahahaha! I won't kill you!! After I'm done playing with you, I will tear off your clothes, and throw you into town, and let every single man come and ravage you! After that, I'll rear you like a dog!!!! I want to see if you're the beast, or I'm the beast!!\*1 Haha!!"

## Chapter 378: Rescue

---

The breathing of the more than 100 disciples of Heaven Sect started to become ragged, as they stared at Song Miaoyi tied up with beast-like gazes, their eyes glinting with a dangerous gaze. They had not toyed with such a beauty before!

Niu Xinghe was sadistic by nature, however, he treated his subordinates extremely well. For the women that he had toyed with, other than a select few, the rest would be passed to his subordinates to have their turn, and it was a way of winning their support as well.

Hearing the words from Niu Xinghe, and feeling the lustful gaze from every single Heaven Sect disciple around her, a tinge of fear finally surfaced in her heart. She was not fearful of death, but she was definitely dreading the fate that was worse than death. She could feel the countless hungry looks on her, stripping her naked in their minds, and it made her skin crawl.

Song Miaoyi's eyes flashed with an obstinate look as she stared at Niu Xinghe: "Even till the day I die! I would never submit to you!!"

Niu Xinghe revealed a sardonic smile as he threatened: "Bitch! If you're looking for death, I'll kill your entire tribe! I've caught a total of 76 people from your tribe! If you die, I will bring every single one of them in front of your corpse and chop their heads off, and inform them that their deaths were because of you!! Hehe!! If you die, your uncles and your brother will go to hell together with you! Only by becoming our bitch, can they stay alive!!"

Hearing those threatening words, Song Miaoyi's eyes finally betrayed a look of fear, amidst the 76 captives, there was her brother, and she could not bring herself to be stubborn anymore, and her resolve was starting to crumble down.

Niu Xinghe waved his hands, and immediately, the clothes on his upper body were torn off, as he revealed a cruel grin and walked

slowly towards Song Miaoyi: "Hahaha!! I shall have a turn with you!! Time to experience how a spear witch tastes like!! Haha!!"

"Elder!! Don't kill her accidentally! Let us have our fun first before she dies."

"Yea! Elder!! Don't destroy her! Everyone wants to toy with this spear witch!"

"....."

The various Law Protectors called out, their gazes fixed on Song Miaoyi's body, as though they couldn't wait to gobble her up.

"Don't get any closer!! Don't come closer!!!" Seeing Niu Xinghe approaching her, Song Miaoyi finally started to show some fear, and she started to struggle, trying to twist her way backwards. However, regardless of how much she tried, it didn't change a thing. Her futile attempts only served to push Niu Xinghe's sadistic urges up a notch.

"Haha!!" Niu Xinghe watched the voluptuous and beautiful Song Miaoyi struggling helplessly in front of him and felt extremely excited. He had never messed around before with a peerless beauty such as her. The ethereal beauty coupled with her strength of personality and stubborn character, to him, made her the perfect specimen to subdue and conquer.

Seeing Niu Xinghe approaching closer, a desolate look appeared in Song Miaoyi's eyes, as she could not help but wail in her heart: "Will someone save me!!!"

Just as Niu Xinghe was about to make a grab for her, he had a sudden change of expression, and retreated hastily, leaping back a few metres.

At that moment, a gunshot rang out shrilly, and a disciple standing beside Niu Xinghe's earlier position had his body blasted by a Stinger shot, leaving his mangled body to fall lifelessly to the ground.

At the same time when the shot was fired, 4 Shadow Wolves pounced out from behind 4 of the Law Protectors, opening their jaws wide and snapping down on their necks viciously.

Of the 4, 2 had not enough time to react and were instantly killed by that sudden strike. The other 2 had more experience and caution.

One of them had pulled out 6 daggers the instant he felt the Shadow Wolf, and shredded it to pieces.

The other grabbed the Shadow Wolf and pulled with all his might, tearing the body in two, as the wolf turned into wisps of smoke and disappeared.

As that gunshot did not kill Niu Xinghe, Yue Zhong pulled out the PF98, and aimed coldly. He then started firing into the crowd of the disciples!

"The heavens protect us....." Before a disciple finished his chant, the 12.7mm bullet exploded in his face, causing his brains to be blasted apart.

"The heavens protect us, we're undefeatable!!" Another disciple roared out as he charged at Yue Zhong, before the heavy ammunition hit his waist, tearing his body in two, while blood and his innards splattered on the ground. He did not die immediately, instead shrieking in agony as he rolled on the ground.

The power of the bullet was terrifying, whoever was hit by the bullet, would be blasted into smithereens. When faced with the might of the heavy ammunition, they were like pigs and dogs awaiting slaughter, as their limbs were blasted apart, they became part of the heavy casualties.

When witnessing that scene of carnage, and their comrades that died a horrible death, many of the disciples finally lost their nerve. With the exception of 30-something fanatics, the rest quivered and ducked for cover.

Yue Zhong pulled out a walkie-talkie and ordered: "Storm the front! Annihilate all enemies that obstruct us!"

Zheng Minghe was currently poised to strike outside the town, and he relayed the order: "The leader has given the command! Attack! Annihilate anyone who obstructs us!"

With an IFV leading, the vehicle fleet carrying the fully equipped experts charged into Mahogany Town.

Within the town, as the Law Protector was disrupted from his ability, Song Miaoyi shook free from the loosened lines, and nimbly got to her feet. She grabbed the spear on the ground, taking a look at Yue Zhong, before immediately chasing after the 2 Law Protectors.

Song Miaoyi was intelligent, and knew clearly that if Yue Zhong had fired at her, she would be dead. However, his target was the disciple of the Heaven Sect, obviously there were mutual benefits in the alliance.

"Smart woman!" Yue Zhong took a look at Song Miaoyi, and praised silently.

"Who're you?" Right at this time, Niu Xinghe's infuriated and violent voice sounded from beside Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong turned his head, and saw the twisted expression of Niu Xinghe and easily met his ferocious gaze.

The congregation of Heaven Sect's disciples had allowed a single round from Yue Zhong to heavily injure many of them and killed the rest, to the point where Niu Xinghe's personal guards were almost wiped out. This caused Niu Xinghe to be extremely furious.

"Kneel! Or die!" Yue Zhong stared coldly at Niu Xinghe, as his pupils shrunk, and he activated his [Art of Fear].

In an instant, a huge Spiritual Blast encompassing Yue Zhong's tyrannical Spirit launched towards Niu Xinghe.

However, under that immense pressure, Niu Xinghe only frowned slightly, as he revealed a sardonic smile: "An Enhancer that specializes in Spirit-based attacks? Today, I'll mince you up, and fuck your women in front of your dying corpses!!"

Niu Xinghe chuckled grimly, as he pressed down his feet, then shot towards Yue Zhong explosively.

Yue Zhong's eyes narrowed as he activated his Shadow Steps, pushing his speed to the limit, and raising his Stinger to aim at Niu Xinghe.

Niu Xinghe suddenly employed a weird foot technique, as his body started to sway and approach Yue Zhong.

"Is he a close-combat Enhancer? But if it's like that, how did he manage to defend against my [Art of Fear]?" Facing that mysterious footwork, Yue Zhong had no way of aiming at Niu Xinghe, and could only fire off 6 shots instantly.

"Haha! Die!! Scum!" Niu Xinghe's body flashed, and he dodged all 6 bullets in a strange fashion, appearing to Yue Zhong's right. He was grinning maniacally, as he swung the huge 2m axe at Yue Zhong.

With a wave of his hands. Yue Zhong pulled out his Crocodile Tooth Saw Blade and parried the attack.

The axe swung downwards with immense force and met Yue Zhong's weapon, and a shockwave spread outwards from the clash.

"What a strong fellow!!" Both parties had equal strength, and Yue Zhong was forced back a few steps from the collision. His right hand was numb from the impact, and if it wasn't for his high Endurance, that blow from Niu Xinghe could possibly have shatter his right shoulder.

"Hahaha! Die! Die! Die!!" Niu Xinghe roared in mad laughter, and launched a flurry of swings on Yue Zhong after taking a leap to get close.

Yue Zhong used his [Shadow Steps] again, barely managing to cope, as he was forced back constantly by Niu Xinghe. Both his shoulders were numb from the constant blocking, and his defence could crumble at any moment. Against the furious assault from Niu Xinghe, Yue Zhong had no time to catch a breath, and he couldn't even swing his blade.

Niu Xinghe maintained his attacks, as he tried to sway Yue Zhong with taunting words: "Offer your women to me! Become my dog! I will let you live!! Otherwise, I'll have your head today!!"

Yue Zhong could maintain his defence for such a long time, and it was outside of Niu Xinghe's expectations as well. He had always been able to slaughter his enemies within 20 seconds of engagement, however, this guy in front of him had already held on for more than a minute, which caused Niu Xinghe's heart to slowly turn cold.

# Chapter 379: Burning Niu Xinghe Alive!

---

"The person to die today will be you!" Yue Zhong's eyes flashed coldly, as he activated his [Gravity Manipulation].

In that instant, the gravity on Niu Xinghe seemed to double, and caused his movements to falter.

Yue Zhong evaded the axe swing, as he twisted his body, and slashed his blade at Niu Xinghe.

Niu Xinghe's face fell, as he leapt back, but he still received a strike at his waist.

When Yue Zhong's strike landed, he felt as if he had just struck a huge thick armor that absorbed the impact, and he had no way of penetrating it. He observed carefully, and discovered that the torn cloth at Niu Xinghe's waist revealed a mild yellow scaly armor.

Yue Zhong's pupils narrowed as he slowly said: "Type 3 Mutant Beast Hide!"

Only a Type 3 Mutant Beast armor could withstand the blow from the Level 4 Treasure Crocodile Tooth Saw Blade without being damaged in the slightest.

Niu Xinghe laughed sardonically as he employed his strange footwork, rushing towards Yue Zhong in a fierce manner: "That's right!! I'm covered entirely with a Type 3 Mutant Beast hide, and I'm invincible! Today, regardless of how you struggle, you will die at my hands!!"

Niu Xinghe was almost undefeatable in close combat, adding on the protection of his Type 3 Mutant Beast hide, his only weakness was his exposed head. This was the reason why he dared to be tyrannical. With the protection of the Type 3 Mutant Beast hide, he was truly invincible, and was naturally brutal in his attacks.

"Seems like the Heaven Sect has some decent resources! However, you'll be the one to die today!" Yue Zhong's eyes flashed



fiercely, and he activated his [Gravity Manipulation], distorting the gravity field around him, causing Niu Xinghe's body to sink, and his movements became distorted as well.

"Pei! Just with the [Gravity Manipulation] ability? I have killed dozens of Gravity users who were stronger than you by 6 or 7 times, you shall die!" Niu Xinghe adjusted his movements in a split second, as the brutal look on his face intensified. He then swung his axe with a fearsome momentum towards Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed coldly, as he activated his Devil Flame, and reached out for Niu Xinghe. A terrifying fireball started forming in his right hand, as it exploded forth and enveloped Niu Xinghe.

"Ah!!! It hurts!!! It hurts!!! Ah!!!!" Niu Xinghe started screaming shrilly in agony when he was enveloped by that Devil Flame fireball, as his entire body started to burn up.

In just a second, Niu Xinghe's head was incinerated into ash, while his entire body started to disintegrate under the burning of the Devil Flame, leaving behind the God and Devil system equipment and Type 3 Mutant Beast hide, as they fell to the floor.

Yue Zhong walked over, as he took a look at the system equipment that Niu Xinghe had.

Yue Zhong already had most of the equipment on Niu Xinghe's body, with the exception of one special item.

"Level 4 Treasure: Necklace of Clarity! +8 Spirit upon equipping. With this item, in any 24-hour period, user will be able to defend against a Type 3 Spirit attack once, Type 2 Spirit attack 4 times, and normal spiritual attacks 16 times."

It was precisely this Level 4 treasure Necklace of Clarity that had blocked Yue Zhong's [Art of Fear] attack.

Yue Zhong pondered a moment, before he switched out the Level 3 Necklace of Hurricane on his neck, and equipped this Level 4

Treasure. Although his Spirit was already extremely strong, with this equipment, he would be invulnerable to basically any Spiritual attacks, and could maintain his clarity.

After he kept the rest of the equipment, he looked towards the distance, and saw Song Miaoyi entangling with the 2 Law Protectors from the Heaven Sect.

Song Miaoyi's spear techniques were truly incredible, as she pounced about like a leopard, enveloping the 2 Law Protectors within the radius of her spear skills.

The Law Protector that was able to manipulate the 6 daggers found his skill being torn apart by the spear shadows, as his own body was pierced a few times, before being sent flying back about 2-3 metres.

The other Law Protector was proficient in the art of fighting, but found himself being pierced continuously by Song Miaoyi's spear, and was forced back constantly.

However, both of them were wearing Type 3 Mutant Beast hides, and could defend against the sharp strikes of Song Miaoyi. This enabled them to save on their strength as they dragged the battle out. Without the Type 3 Mutant Beast hides, they would have long been punched full of holes.

Yue Zhong looked towards the rest of the battlefield, and saw that his own troops had already charged into the town, and were hunting the rest of the disciples from the Heaven Sect.

"This is the time to show our loyalty to Heaven Sect! Let us offer our fresh blood for the glory of the Heaven Sect! As long as we're loyal, we will return to the kingdom of God after we die!! Everybody, charge with me!!" A fanatic roared out loudly as he charged towards Yue Zhong's troops with a crazy glint in his eyes.

"The heavens are with us, we're undefeatable!!"

"....."

20 other fanatics followed the lead of the first guy as they shouted out with fervor and charged towards Yue Zhong's troops.

"Kill!" Zheng Minghe saw the 20-over zealots rushing over with blades in their hands, and he coldly gave the command.

The machine gun on the vehicle turned around, and spew out an intense volley of gunfire, and a dense barrage of bullets rained on the zealots, and they fell to the ground in their own blood. They did not die immediately, instead, they rolled around as they moaned in pain.

Zheng Minghe led the rest of the soldiers forwards, as they finished off the job by firing a single bullet in each disciple that was still alive, sending them on their way.

Watching this terrifying scene, the majority of the remaining disciples had ashen faces, as they tried to escape. Not everybody was a fanatic, and many had joined just to survive in this cruel world.

"Don't kill me!! I surrender!!"

"I surrender!!"

"....."

More of the disciples began throwing their weapons down, as they knelt on the ground, trembling in fear while looking at the IFVs and machine gun-mounted vehicles. To ordinary people, such armored vehicles were invincible existences, and they had no way of retaliating.

Zheng Minghe brought his men and continued further in without so much of a resistance, only tying up the captives. Those fanatics who charged out would be executed instantly, and the troops managed to arrive at the heart of the battle in the centre of town casually.

"Damn it! Sun Shan! Let's scram!!" The Law Protector controlling his 6 daggers saw the arriving IFV and troops, and his expression

turned sour, before shouting to his comrade.

The Law Protector called Sun Shan had just been pierced by Song Miaoyi, as he turned to look at the distance.

"You will remain here!" Following the sound of Yue Zhong's voice, a terrifying Spirit attack penetrated Sun Shan's mind, and he was instantly engulfed in various illusions and hallucinations of torment.

"Ah!!!" Sun Shan screamed out miserably, before falling lifelessly to the ground.

"Kneel!" Yue Zhong came out and with a threatening aura, he gazed at the Law Protector with control over his 6 daggers and ordered.

The Law Protector took one look at Yue Zhong, as his face changed: "It's you!! Elder Niu has already been killed by you?!"

Yue Zhong stared indifferently at the Law Protector: "Are you surrendering! Or will you join him in Hell?"

"NO! You can't surrender! You'll die at my hands!!" Song Miaoyi's eyes flashed with fire, as she gritted her teeth and struck forwards with her spear, aiming at his face. She knew the only weak point was the head.

The Law Protector was a battle-hardened veteran after all, and with just a thought, 3 daggers shot forwards to block the spear strike, causing it to be deflected away.

The Law Protector immediately shouted out: "I surrender!! I surrender!! This leader! I surrender! Spare my life!!!"

Even the upper echelons of the Heaven Sect knew what the Sect was exactly about, and other than a rare few, many were not actually loyal to a fault. Only the ignorant lower levels thought that the Heaven Sect was incredible.

"Stay your hand!" When the Law Protector surrendered, Yue

Zhong stepped forward, bringing his Crocodile Saw Tooth Blade to parry Song Miaoyi's spear.

Song Miaoyi took a few steps back, as her beautiful eyes shone with a burning fury and she stared at Yue Zhong: "He's my enemy! If you help him, are you going to be an enemy too?!"

Yue Zhong gazed back indifferently: "Is this how you treat your benefactor?"

Song Miaoyi maintained her gaze for awhile, before she collected herself, as she stood straight and said: "Many thanks for saving me earlier! I'm Song Miaoyi! What's your name?"

Yue Zhong replied: "I'm Yue Zhong!"

Song Miaoyi looked at the man in front of her and assessed him quietly, and she could feel his strength. She said sincerely: "Yue Zhong! You saved me, and I'm very appreciative of that! From today onwards, you're a friend to us from the Cang Tong Tribe. Whenever you have problems, feel free to look for me, our entire tribe will definitely aid you. However, this beast! He had brought men to capture over dozens of our tribesmen as well as from the surrounding areas! I cannot let him go! Give him to me, and this favour will be remembered for always!"

Hearing Song Miaoyi's words, Yue Zhong contemplated silently.

The Law Protector suddenly smiled grimly, as he barked at Yue Zhong: "Don't move!! Or I'll be merciless!!"

2 of the blades that Song Miaoyi had knocked away had suddenly appeared at Yue Zhong's heart and vertebra.

"Let me leave here! Otherwise, I'll kill you!!" The Law Protector chuckled evilly.

"Trash! Just die!" Yue Zhong suddenly turned, the Stinger already in his hands as he directly fired at the head of the Law Protector.

Following the loud gunshot, the brains of the Law Protector were blasted apart, as his lifeless corpse slumped to the ground, and the daggers fell along with him.

# Chapter 380: Pressure

---

Right at this time, Zheng Minghe brought his men as they came to Yue Zhong and saluted: "Leader!!"

"Follow me!" Yue Zhong looked at Song Miaoyi and spoke indifferently, before bringing Zheng Minghe and Ming Jiajia towards Bai Xiaosheng's side of the battle.

Song Miaoyi heard the commanding tone from Yue Zhong, and hint of displeasure shone in her eyes. However, she looked at Yue Zhong and his troops, and stamped her foot, before tagging behind Yue Zhong.

Following the trail of corpses, Yue Zhong soon brought his team along until they saw Bai Xiaosheng engaged in battle against 5 Law Protectors. Both sides were facing off, but neither had the upper hand.

The Law Protectors from the Heaven Sect could not catch Bai Xiaosheng, not a single one of them could match up to his speed. However, at the same time, if Bai Xiaosheng truly went after any one of them, he would have to face the joint assault from all 5, which would be risky, and hence both sides were just eyeing each other right now.

Bai Xiaosheng spoke out with a little embarrassment: "Leader! You're here! I'm sorry! These bunch of guys are too troublesome, I haven't managed to take care of them!"

Yue Zhong glanced at Bai Xiaosheng, before he stepped forward and commanded coldly: "Those opposite, listen up! Surrender immediately! I'll only give you 10 seconds to consider! Those who refuse will die!"

One of the Altar Lords shouted: "You bunch of devil-worshipping heretics, you dare to go against Heaven Sect! You'll definitely face a terrible fate, and after your death, you'd be sentenced to the

deepest depths of hell with no chance of reincarnation!! Surrender to us now and we'll baptize you, and cleanse you of your sins, and help you back into God's grace!! As long as you accumulate merit for the Sect, you can ascend to Heaven, and enjoy yourself!!"

"Kill the heretics! Kill the devils!!"

"Kill the heretics! Kill the devils!!"

The disciples began to chant upon hearing the Altar Lord's words. With their blind faith, their morale was also rising!

"Kill them!" Yue Zhong eyed the zealots and gave the order to Zheng Minghe.

"Open fire!" Zheng Minghe relayed the order.

The remaining soldiers had already prepped their artillery and set their aim. Upon receiving Zheng Minghe's orders, they started firing, as huge explosive rounds landed on the positions of those zealots who were hiding behind cover.

Hong! Hong!

Following the rapid loud explosions, disciples of the Heaven sect found their bodies blasted to pieces. The Altar Lord who had gave the rallying call about killing heretics were also caught within the blast radius, and was instantly pulverized.

Under the blanket of artillery fire, to the extent of 2 consecutive rounds, the disciples who had no experience in modern warfare collapsed, as they lost all will to fight, and tried to escape towards the back after retreating from their cover.

At this time, the IFV and the machine-gun mounted vehicles started firing wildly at those escaping disciples, and the bullets tore into the disciples, turning them into sieves full of holes, as they fell to the ground.

Within 10 minutes, the disciples surrounding the 5 Altar Lords to protect them had been annihilated, and 3 of the 5 Altar Lords had



been blasted to death.

The 2 remaining Altar Lords were Agility-based Enhancers, and they took the opportunity to rush out from their hiding place, as they retreated towards the back. They knew that staying here would spell death, and they disregarded everything as they made a mad dash to run from it all.

Yue Zhong pulled out his Stinger, as he opened fire at the 2 escaping Altar Lords. Their heads were immediately blasted to oblivion and their headless corpses fell to the ground.

"Continue the advance!" Yue Zhong ordered indifferently.

Under his orders, even though they had little men, they were all elites, and they made their way forwards in an orderly fashion, exhibiting the disciplined and strong bearing of soldiers.

Song Miaoyi observed this small troop of Yue Zhong and was thoroughly shocked: "So strong!! This troop is really strong!!"

Song Miaoyi was confident of handling any one soldier from within this troop. However, if the entire troop was to launch an assault on her, she would not even be able to withstand a single minutes assault before she would be killed.

Yue Zhong and his troops quickly arrived at the location that the remaining personnel under Zhen Yeyang were using as a hide out.

Zheng Minghe hollered at the people hiding within the building: "Those inside listen up! Surrender now! Otherwise, we'll not treat you nicely!"

Inside the building, Zhen Yeyang had a grim look as he grabbed a tribesman and pushed him to the window, while placing a blade on this abductees neck: "The whole lot of you better retreat! Otherwise I'll kill the hostages! There are 31 hostages here with us. If you don't retreat! I'll kill the whole lot of them!!"

The disciples of the Heaven Sect seemed to have been overcome with a madness, as they pushed the hostages to the windows, and

placed their weapons at their necks. Anytime Zhen Yeyang gave the order, they would immediately slaughter the hostages to join them in death!

"6th Uncle!! 8th Uncle! 17th Uncle!" Seeing those tribesman, Song Miaoyi's eyes flashed with fear, and could not help but call out. Those were the elders that had watched her grow up before the apocalypse, and after the apocalypse had set in, everyone had banded together to survive up till now. These elders were like her own family, and she could not bear to see them die in front of her.

Yue Zhong eyed the huge building, as he ordered coolly: "Get ready to attack! Storm the front! Snipers get ready to switch to grenade launchers!"

Song Miaoyi's face fell, as she ran to Yue Zhong and spoke shrilly: "No!! You can't do that! Those hostages will definitely die if you do that! Those are human lives!!"

Yue Zhong's heart was hardened, as he returned her look with an ice-cold stare: "I'm sorry! Miss Song Miaoyi! I can understand your feelings, but I need to eradicate the remnant forces of this Heaven Sect! As for those hostages, they have nothing to do with me, I can't waste time here because of them! Please make way!"

Song Miaoyi grabbed her black spear tightly as her face turned pale, and she stubbornly glared: "No! I won't allow this!!"

With a single swishing motion, 20 soldiers raised their guns and aimed at Song Miaoyi, the moment she made a random move, they would punch her full of holes! Although she was a beauty, in their hearts, following orders was the most important thing. A single beauty would not be enough to sway the hearts of these elite soldiers.

Even the frivolous Bai Xiaosheng was holding a gun to Song Miaoyi's head, although his eye flashed with a hint of pity. If she truly died, he would feel a tinge of regret. However, if he went against Yue Zhong's wishes, then the person to die would be him.

Under the pressure of having multiple weapons aimed at her, Song Miaoyi did not relent as she stubbornly glared at Yue Zhong, like an epiphyllum that would wilt at any time.

Yue Zhong frowned, as he waved his hands, and the 20 over soldiers lowered their guns.

Song Miaoyi knelt down as she pleaded: "Please! Please save my tribesmen!! As long as you do so, whatever you ask of me! I'll be willing to do so!!"

For her tribesmen, Song Miaoyi was willing to put down her pride to kneel in front of Yue Zhong. This was because her tribesmen were extremely important kin to her, and she did not want them to perish at such a place.

Yue Zhong looked at the kneeling Song Miaoyi as he frowned. He pondered a while, looking at the building in the meantime, before he slowly replied: "Bai Xiaosheng stay! The rest, retreat!"

Hearing Yue Zhong's order, all the soldiers retreated.

"Song Miaoyi, remember what you said today! Follow me!" Yue Zhong looked at Song Miaoyi as he indifferently reminded her, before entering a small alley with Ming Jiajia.

Song Miaoyi followed closely behind.

Bai Xiaosheng immediately sighed, as he played with his dagger and followed behind Yue Zhong, disappearing into the alley: "What a pity! Another beauty had been conquered by leader!!"

"How is it? Have you contacted headquarters?" Zhen Yeyang saw the soldiers retreating, as he heaved a sigh of relief, before asking a subordinate beside him.

The disciple swiftly replied: "I've already notified headquarters!! They have arranged for 2 Elders to bring reinforcements! However, they said we will have to fend them off for 2 hours. Reinforcements would arrive by then."

Zhen Yeyang took a few deep breaths, as the stone weighing on his heart was lifted: "2 hours? As long as we can hold out for 2 hours, it's our victory!! Those heretics would definitely be dealt with by the Great Elders!!"

At this time, with a single 'bang', the door to the room Zhen Yeyang and the captives were in was kicked wide open.

Yue Zhong strode into the office, taking in the details of the room in a single look, before firing the .03 rifle in his hands 10 times consecutively within a second, and directly killing all the Heaven Sect's disciples.

Beside Yue Zhong, Ming Jiajia had already summoned out her 5 Shadow Wolves, appearing behind 5 of the disciples, and biting their necks.

As the attention of everybody in the room was focused on Yue Zhong and Ming Jiajia, Bai Xiaosheng came swinging into the room from the room upstairs, landing within the group of disciples. The blade in his hand flashed, and a total of 7 disciples found their hearts pierced.

In just mere seconds, 22 disciples had died at the hands of Yue Zhong's group of 3, causing chaos to erupt.

Song Miaoyi also made use of the opportunity to rush into the office, her spear flashing as she leapt about like a leopard, killing 3 disciples with her profound spear skills.

The Heaven Sect's disciples in the office had been wiped out save for a few, everyone of the remaining members lost their gall, as they abandoned battle tried to escape.

One of the Altar Lords saw that things weren't going well, and he tried to escape from the window. Just as he made his move, Bai Xiaosheng chuckled grimly, and shot forwards like an arrow, stabbing into the back of the Altar Lord, killing him.

Bai Xiaosheng might be tied down when facing against a group of

strong enemies, but facing single enemies, very few were considered his opponents. He was like a shadow that flitted about, as he slaughtered his enemies easily, and few could withstand an attack from him.

"I surrender!!" Zhen Yeyang's mind spun, as he threw the Tang Replica Sword to a side, and raised his hands to shout out.

"I surrender!!"

"....."

When the head surrenders, the rest of the disciples had no intention to resist longer, as they abandoned their weapons and shouted out as they trembled.

Bai Xiaosheng then walked up to these disciples, and started to tie them up.

"6th Uncle! 8th Uncle!" Song Miaoyi ran to the hostages, as she helped them out of their ropes, and called out emotionally. This time, she had dragged many of her close kin in the attempt to assassinate Niu Xinghe, and it caused her endless worry. If it wasn't for the sudden appearance of Yue Zhong, she would not have known what to do.

2 of the men with wrinkles on their foreheads and tanned skins looked at Song Miaoyi, their eyes pleased: "Lass! It's good that you're fine!!"

Yue Zhong confirmed news with Zhen Yeyang: "After an hour, the reinforcements from the Heaven Sect will be here. Are you certain about this?"

Zhen Yeyang had a solemn expression as he replied: "It's true! If I were lying, you can execute me!"

The information about the reinforcements coming, everyone within the room knew about it. Zhen Yeyang wanted to use this piece of information to gain Yue Zhong's trust. He had not much faith in the Heaven Sect in the beginning, and joining them was for

the sake of a better life. When he landed in Yue Zhong's hands, he had immediately switched to a different tune, and worked towards gaining Yue Zhong's trust.

"An hour?" Yue Zhong pondered, his eyes flashing with a hint of decisiveness.

On a small frozen road, 800 Heaven Sect disciples were currently marching forward.

Within the human crowd, there was a Rolls-Royce moving forwards quietly.

A fat middle-aged man was asking his skinny companion at his side: "Old Luo! Heard that Old Niu had fallen at the hands of some heretics! What do you make of this?"

The fat middle-aged man was called Chen Shenggang, and was the 7th Elder in the Heaven Sect. The skinny man was called Luo Kui, and he was the 5th Elder, both of them were considered to be experts within Heaven Sect.

Luo Kui replied coldly: "What else to think? Old Niu had always been too violent and brutal! He had so many enemies, it's not a surprise that he's dead. However, to be able to kill Old Niu, the enemy must be pretty formidable himself.

Luo Kui laughed icily: "For the sake of a few hostages, they actually stopped their assault. Regardless of their abilities, it seems like they have weaknesses as well."

# Chapter 381: Chen Shenggang

---

Chen Shenggang had a look of apprehension: "However, Old Niu is truly dead! Are our forces going to be enough?"

Chen Shenggang was a burly look man with plenty of both, fat and muscle on his body, and he truly looked fierce. However, one cannot be judged based on appearance, and he happened to be a coward actually. He could become a strong Enhancer purely by luck, as he had gained an incredible Level 3 skill at the onset of the apocalypse, hence he could survive for so long.

Luo Kui glanced at Chen Shenggang, his eyes flashed with a hint of contempt: "We have 800 people here, and 500 guys over at Mahogany Town. Didn't Zhen Yeyang give his report earlier? There are only about 100 enemies, and even if they have experts, we just have to send our men and it would be enough to squash them."

Chen Shenggang continued in deep thought before his frown slowly eased, as his face revealed a smile: "That's true! We have 800 disciples here. Of them, there are 200 zealots. With them, we have no need to fear any enemy!"

Inside a forest, Yue Zhong watched the 800-strong army walk into his ambush without a single wariness, as he gave the order: "Attack!!"

Under Yue Zhong's command, an IFV led the fleet of machine gun-mounted vehicles as they charged out from the forest, and started to launch an assault on the right side of the Heaven Sect's reinforcements.

All the armored vehicles were unleashing their bullets with a frenzy, causing a large number of the disciples around to be punched full of holes, fresh blood splattering the entire area. Many of them fell down dead, their bodies full of wounds.

"The Heaven Sect is undefeatable!! Kill the enemy, become a saint!!"

Facing such a sudden raid, the 200 white-robed disciples began to get worked up with a madness in their eyes, as they charged at the vehicles without a care for their own lives. They were the zealots previously mentioned, and thoroughly had faith that as long as they fought and died for Heaven Sect, they would be able to enter God's kingdom. Therefore, every single one of them was fearless, and were extremely ruthless in their attacks.

These fanatics formed the main part of the Heaven Sect's attack force, as their passionate and staunch faith allowed them to charge into battle without a hint of fear nor regret, even if they knew they had to die, it was with willingness. Many of them even saw death as a blessing.

However, regardless of how strong one's faith was, a normal person's body would not be able to repel bullets, much less be impervious to it. The IFV and machine gun-mounted vehicles sprayed their guns at the 200 disciples, and they were felled as easily as wheat being sowed. Fresh blood dyed the entire ground, and there were moans of agony uttered everywhere.

These fanatics might be a threat to close combat Enhancers, but in front of modern warfare weaponry, their blood and fervor would only serve to send them faster to their deaths.

Luo Kui had sensed danger at the first moment, and had opened up his palms, activating a Psychic Barrier, as a transparent barrier appeared in front of him, deflecting the majority of the bullets coming his way. He was a Level 46 Enhancer with the [Telekinesis] Ability, and could defend against the damage from those 12.7mm bullets that could pierce even armored vehicles.

Countless bullets were deflected off Luo Kui's barrier, and that sort of imagery pushed the morale of the disciples up quickly. Many of them gathered close to Luo Kui, as they hollered with



conviction: "The heavens are with us, we're undefeatable!!"

As the IFV adjusted its gun and line of fire, the ZPT90 that has been kept aside was aimed at Luo Kui, and unleashed hell and carnage.

The bullets from the heavy machine gun landed explosively on the Psychic Barrier, and were actually blocked. However, the barrier only managed to withstand about 3 seconds of continuously being impacted by bullets.

After 3 seconds, the barrier disintegrated into pieces, and Luo Kui spat out a mouthful of fresh blood, while the heavy rounds landed on his body, sending him exploding backwards for a few metres. He fell to the ground, his body crumpled, and his orifices bleeding profusely, before he died.

Luo Kui had worn a Type 3 Mutant Beast hide to protect himself, and while the rounds were insufficient to penetrate the hide, the fearsome impact could not be negated, unless his resistance was as tough as Yue Zhong who had pumped so much in Endurance.

With Luo Kui's death, the Psychic Barrier disappeared, and the Heaven Sect's disciple were like unwilling pigs waiting for slaughter, as they started to escape frantically in various directions.

Yue Zhong glanced at those disciples that have lost their composure and ordered Zhen Yeyang: "Zhen Yeyang! It's your turn! Kill those who won't surrender!"

"Yes! Leader!" Zhen Yeyang had an extremely complicated gaze in his eyes as he responded.

"Brothers! Let us charge!! Time to earn some merits!!! Let the leader witness our sincerity!!!" Zhen Yeyang shouted to his fellow disciples that had been captured earlier.

"Kill!! Kill! Kill!" Those Heaven Sect disciples who had already surrendered to Yue Zhong took up their weapons, as they followed

Zhen Yeyang's lead and charged towards the dispersed Heaven Sect members with bloodshot eyes.

If Yue Zhong had gotten those ex-disciples to charge first, and treated them like cannon fodder, the majority of them would definitely have defected again.

However, now that with Yue Zhong slaughtering the 800 of the Heaven Sect's disciples, these ex-disciples were not fervent supporters in the first place, and due to their thirst to prove their loyalty, they charged forwards like ferocious tigers and wolves, killing their past comrades without a shred of remorse.

On the other side, Song Miaoyi had brought her tribesmen as they charged at the scattered Heaven Sect disciples, killing them with a passionate fury.

The Heaven Sect had been terrorizing the surrounding areas in recent times, and had treated these tribesmen as slaves, or blood sacrifices. This had cause enmity to be sown, and Song Miaoyi would naturally not be merciful when dealing with them.

"I surrender!!"

"I surrender!! I surrender!! Don't kill me!"

"....."

With the 3 groups chasing and hunting, the Heaven Sect's side was destroyed beyond recognition, and a majority of the disciples pleaded for their lives. Those who didn't surrender were killed off by the ones that had defected to Yue Zhong, as well as the tribesmen.

Yue Zhong strode over to the escaping disciples, with the Stinger in his hands, as long as he saw an expert whether hiding or not, he would immediately fire a shot to destroy their heads.

Bai Xiaosheng was like an unsheathed blade that bathed in blood, waving in and out of the human crowd, his daggers flashing about, and a number of the Altar Lords and Law Protectors were

assassinated without a sound. His abilities made it hard for him to deal with a tightly packed group in defence, but against single unorganized enemies, there was almost nobody that could stop him.

The IFV and machine gun mounted vehicles had stopped shooting as well, they just maintained their inactivity but exuding a pressuring aura on the battlefield. Yue Zhong had brought a limited amount of ammunition, and to prepare for any unforeseen circumstances, he had to use them sparingly. Otherwise, without any ammunition, his IFV and machine gun-mounted vehicles were just normal vehicles.

Not long after, the reinforcements from the Heaven Sect fell entirely into Yue Zhong's arms.

Song Miaoyi gripped her Level 3 Treasure Black Gold Spear, as she looked at those tied-up captives, her eyes shone with disbelief: "Did we win just like that?"

Song Miaoyi could not help but look towards Yue Zhong, her eyes filled with a look of wonder and awe. When they had heard that the Heaven Sect had sent reinforcements of about 800 disciples, Song Miaoyi and her uncles had panicked, and were in favor of retreat. However, this man in front of her had remained calm and planned a counter-attack, and had easily caused this 800-strong reinforcement to collapse, without much casualty on their own side! It was almost a miracle.

Zhen Yeyang had an excited look as he walked about the captives. He had led his men and captured over 400 captives, contributing largely to the success, and Yue Zhong had already assigned him a platoon commander role. He had hence become an officer under Yue Zhong's command.

Just as Zhen Yeyang was patrolling, he suddenly caught sight of a familiar person, and he could not help but spit out, as he backed up a few steps warily: "Elder Chen??"

The man who was called warily by Zhen Yeyang, was precisely the 7th Elder of the Heaven Sect, Chen Shenggang. As an Elder of the Heaven Sect, Chen Shenggang was a Level 40 Enhancer, and if he suddenly went on a rampage, killing a few normal people wasn't an issue.

Chen Shenggang squeezed out a flattering smile as he said: "I've surrendered! Zhen Yeyang, can you bring me to meet your leader?"

Zhen Yeyang looked at Chen Shenggang, feeling a little strange as he nodded and said: "Follow me!"

The moment Chen Shenggang came in front of Yue Zhong, he immediately knelt and kowotowed: "This small one Chen Shenggang was an Elder of the Heaven Sect. As long as this esteemed leader can spare my life, this small one is willing to do anything for you!!"

Yue Zhong was a little speechless, as he looked at Zhen Yeyang and asked: "Was he really an Elder?"

Zhen Yeyang nodded and ascertained his background: "Leader! He truly was the 7th Elder of the Heaven Sect! I've seen him at the headquarters a few times."

Yue Zhong immediately gave the order: "I'll accept you! Chen Shenggang, show me your abilities!"

As long as he knew Chen Shenggang's abilities, Yue Zhong could then make the appropriate measures. Chen Shenggang would then not be a threat to him.

Chen Shenggang stood up and responded loudly: "Yes! I can manipulate the ground!! Please observe!"

Chen Shenggang's pupils shrunk, as he activated his [Ground Manipulation] skill, and a 3m spike shot out from the ground. He then bellowed, as 6 consecutive small spikes shot out from the ground.

Yue Zhong observed Chen Shenggang's display, and his heart

turned cold.

The skill of this Chen Shenggang was truly tyrannical, if he was a little less cowardly, and had charged towards the IFV while releasing this skill, the IFV would have been overturned. It might even have been penetrated by the ground spikes.

Chen Shenggang lowered his head and bowed, with an honest look: "Leader! This is my ability! It has a limited range, and can only create such sharp spikes within a 100m. If it's beyond a 100m, then I would need more time, to create spikes with enough threatening power!"

Chen Shenggang's ability was not weak, but his courage was truly too small, the moment he saw Luo Kui being blasted apart, he had lost all will to fight. After that, he had seen how casually Yue Zhong and Bai Xiaosheng slaughtered those experts from the Heaven Sect, and had not dared to risk anything. He just hid behind a cover, and acted as a normal disciple, and surrendered.

If it wasn't for Zhen Yeyang discovering him, Chen Shenggang had wanted to pose as a captive, before finding an opportunity to escape. Although he did not dare to fight against Yue Zhong and his troops, he had confidence in escaping. He had the [Ground Manipulation] ability, no cell could contain him. Unless it was those specially constructed cells that were meant to counter his ability, which would mean that his ability was useless.

Yue Zhong stared at Chen Shenggang and asked slowly: "Are these all the reinforcements sent?"

Chen Shenggang nodded as he bowed: "Responding to Leader! There's only us!"

Yue Zhong's gaze was like a knife that pierced into Chen Shenggang's heart: "You guys must have set off from Peaceful Heart Town right!"

"Yes!!" Chen Shenggang looked at Zhen Yeyang beside Yue

Zhong, and did not dare life, and directly responded.

Yue Zhong continued asking: "How many troops are at Peaceful Heart Town?"

Chen Shenggang replied with full honesty: "There's only a Law Protector, 7 Altar Lords, 50 zealots and about 170 normal disciples there. In Peaceful Heart Town, there are about 20 rifles, 25 handguns, and the remaining weapons are all obsolete melee weapons!"

Yue Zhong stared at Chen Shenggang coldly: "Bring us to Peaceful Heart Town! After we take it down, I'll raise you to become a platoon commander!"

Chen Shenggang did not dare reject as he responded soundly: "Yes! Leader!!"

Peaceful Heart Town was different from Mahogany Town, and was one of the actual headquarters of the Heaven Sect, and was only about 20km away from the central base in Long An Province. There were 2 Elders stationed there, and over a 1000 disciples as their force, and could respond to any situation in the nearby towns, at the same time, they could send reinforcements back to the main base if need be.

The force of a hundred people soon came to Peaceful Heart Town.

"Who is it?" The disciple stationed at the entrance saw this 100-strong troop, his heart became wary, as he raised his gun and questioned.

Chen Shenggang came out from the crowd and stared at the disciple coldly: "You can't even recognize me? By using your gun against me, are you thinking of flouting the rules?"

"Oh, it's Elder Chen!!! Your subordinate didn't know it's the return of Elder Chen, if this small one had offended you, please do not take it to heart!!" The disciple had turned ashen, and

immediately threw himself to the ground!

The 4 disciples at the gate immediately kneeled and called out loudly: "Long live Elder Chen!!"

Chen Shenggang threw a haughty gaze as he commanded: "Go bring Law Protector Ning as well as the 7 Altar Lords, and the heavenly troops to gather at the Green Garden! I have something to tell them! I'll get others to stand guard here. Go!"

## Chapter 382: Long An County

---

"Yes, Elder Chen!!" The 4 disciples immediately replied in a respectful manner, before leaving towards the centre of town.

Chen Shenggang then led Yue Zhong and the rest towards the Green Garden district part of town to be deployed.

Ning Yi, a middle-aged man with a medium build, slightly yellow skin, and ordinary looks, brought 7 Altar Lords as they hurried towards the Green Garden district. He looked at Chen Shenggang and asked: "Elder Chen, didn't you guys set off to help Zhen Yeyang? How come you've suddenly come back?"

Chen Shenggang looked at Ning Yi as his pupils shrank, and assumed a stern face: "Our Sect Leader has issued a sacred instruction, with tasks for you guys to do! Everyone kneel, and pay heed!!"

"Sect Leader is all-powerful, invincible, and long live Sect Leader!!"

Ning Yi's gaze turned cold, as he followed the 7 Altar Lords and knelt, as they started proclaiming the usual chants in front of Chen Shenggang.

"The instruction for the Sect Leader, is.....for all of you to die!" Chen Shenggang's expression turned grim, and immediately activated his [Ground Manipulation] skill. In an instant, 2 sharp earthen spikes shot out from the ground and pierced diagonally through the bodies of 2 Altar Lords.

"Chen..." Ning Yi saw the scene of the 2 Altar Lords dying miserably in front of him, and a strong fury and fear arose in his heart. He had just shouted out a word, when a blade flashed in front of him, and his head was removed suddenly and cleanly from his neck, fresh blood spraying up towards the skies.

Yue Zhong had activated his [Shadow Steps] and cleanly executed



Ning Yi, before quite casually loping off the head of another Law Protector beside Ning Yi.

Bai Xiaosheng who had been standing at one side also activated his skill, as he flashed , and the green dagger in his hands danced about, slicing the throat of an Altar Lord, blood exploding out in a steaming crimson arc from the mortal wound.

Song Miaoyi had also struck out viciously with her spear, piercing the head of one of the Altar Lords who was still kneeling, like a stick pushed into the wet mud.

In just a few breaths, Ning Yi and the other 7 Altar Lords had all been gruesomely slaughtered without much of a resistance at all.

"Do it!" After killing the most powerful 8 combatants, Yue Zhong walked out of the room, and gave the order to Zheng Minghe.

The troops lying in ambush at various parts of the Green Garden immediately took aim and fired at those fanatics of the Heaven Sect that were lined up neatly!

In an instant, those Heaven Sect disciples were showered with a rain of bullets, their bodies battered and blood spilled, and their formation was the best target for the troops of Yue Zhong, not a single bullet wasted.

After firing rapidly, 50 of the zealots fell in their pools of blood, while Zheng Minghe brought some men as they walked throughout the square, coldly slashing the necks of anyone still breathing on the ground, with a cold and detached look on their face.

The upper echelons of Peaceful Heart town were thus easily taken care of by Yue Zhong and his troops. The remaining ordinary disciples were tricked into coming to the Green Garden District, and were all captured. The entire Peaceful Heart Town thus fell into Yue Zhong's lap.

Yue Zhong tasted sweet victory, and continued: "Chen

Shenggang, go report to the main central base! Say that the enemies had been wiped out, but Elder Niu and Elder Luo have fell in battle! Your troops have taken serious hits, and you hope that they can deploy some men over!"

"Yes! Leader!! I'll do so right now!!" Chen Shenggang had also thoroughly sold himself, truly treating himself as Yue Zhong's subordinate, as he made to report to the central base.

Yue Zhong pondered a while, before calling out: "Wait!! Make the report after 6pm!"

Yue Zhong's forces had been battling for almost an entire day. Although they were Enhancers, they would still feel exhausted. The ordinary ex-disciples and Zhen Yeyang that had defected were in no better shape. They sorely needed the rest now.

After 6pm, the response from the main base would need some more time as well, and the forces they sent would only arrive the next day. This would buy an entire day's worth of rest for Yue Zhong's troops.

"Continue to station yourselves there and await orders!"

Chen Shenggang had relayed the fabricated story that Yue Zhong had told him to the main base of Heaven Sect, and only received this simple command. The Heaven Sect seemed to have no plans to send any troops.

Yue Zhong did not waste any time during the night, as he organized the tribesmen that he rescued out into a single troop, and handed command over to Shang Lun. He then moved on to the captured Heaven Sect's disciples. There were a total of 600 or so of them, and he grouped them into 6 teams, handing command over to Chen Shenggang, Zhen Yeyang, Bai Xiaosheng, Lu Ningshui, Luo Chifeng and Ming Jiajia respectively.

Chen Shenggang and Zhen Yeyang had become traitors of the Heaven Sect, and their hands were dyed with the blood of their

past comrades. Even if they betrayed Yue Zhong, they had nowhere else to, that was why Yue Zhong decided to make use of them.

Yue Zhong did not sleep the entire night, instead, he patrolled the entire town on his own. After all, Peaceful Heart Town was only about 20km away from the main base, and they were almost under the enemies' noses. Furthermore, Chen Shenggang and Zhen Yeyang had just recently defected over, and Yue Zhong could not trust them fully, therefore, he had to take up the night watch, to prevent any incidents.

At the same time, Yue Zhong assigned a few trusted aides who were experts to be stationed at key points, in the event that something unforeseen cropped up.

The night passed quietly.

Early the next morning, the sun was just starting to rise, and Yue Zhong received the order relayed from the headquarters of the Heaven Sect.

"Immediately bring your men and weapons and make your way back to base! Kill any enemies you see!"

Chen Shenggang immediately turned to Yue Zhong and asked: "What do we do, Leader?"

Yue Zhong contemplated a while, before he enquired: "What's the strength of the main base like?"

Chen Shenggang replied swiftly: "There are always 4 Elders, 40 Law Protectors, 60 Altar Lords stationed at base. They're all high-level Enhancers. Other than that, there are over 5,000 disciples in the Heaven Sect, of which 1,000 belong to the White Shirt Army, or the fanatics. Amongst those 1,000, there are 50 experts wearing Type 3 Mutant Beast hides. They are the personal troops of Linghu Xiangru, the Sword Apostles.

Each and everyone of them have power equal to a Law Protector,

and they practically worship Linghu Xiangru, to the point of being extremist. They have terrifying strength."

The Type 3 Mutant Beast hides were considered precious treasures within the Heaven Sect. Even ordinary Law Protectors and Altar Lords might not get a piece. For every single one of the Sword Apostles to own a piece, it was a testament to their power and importance.

The moment Chen Shenggang spoke of Linghu Xiangru, his eyes had a hint of fear: "However, within the Heaven Sect, the scariest is still the Sect Leader Linghu Xiangru. He has a holy halo around him, and is impervious to all sorts of physical attacks, and every word he says seem to radiate power! Those who could force him to use all his power have died! When he came to recruit me initially, I knew I wasn't his match, and hence I surrendered. What his abilities are, I'm not entirely sure. No one in the entire Heaven Sect actually knows as well, however based on my conjecture, he should be a powerful Evolver."

Yue Zhong continued to think before replying: "Ok, I've got it! Let's comply with their orders, and move out to take a look!"

With Yue Zhong's orders, the 800-strong troop immediately set off from Peaceful Heart Town, making their advance towards Heaven Sect.

Yue Zhong rode with Ming Jiajia and Chen Shenggang in a Hummer and went forth ahead as vanguard.

With the ex-Elder leading the way, Yue Zhong and the rest quickly traversed and reached the vicinity of Heaven Sect.

When Yue Zhong and the rest came close to Heaven Sect, they heard the sounds of intense gunfire, as well as explosions.

"Seems like there really was a problem!" Yue Zhong's eyes flashed coldly, as he thought to himself, and quickened his pace.

They climbed up a hilltop, and observed the situation at Long An

County.

They discovered that in the distance, there was a group of gun-wielding militants that were dressed in assorted clothing, as they launched frenzied assaults on Long An County.

Those militants were equipped with decent weaponry, possessing rifles, submachine guns, heavy machine guns, grenade launchers, rocket launchers, hand grenades, and even mortars. They were using these modern weaponry to suppress the Heaven Sect's disciples so much so that they didn't dare risk their lives.

Yue Zhong pulled out a binoculars to observe the current battle, and thought silently: "This troop is not weak! However, they can't be compared to my expert battalion! They must be untrained, and seem to be learning from experience."

"The heavens are with us, we're undefeatable!! The heavens are with us, we're undefeatable!!"

The disciples in Long An County were being suppressed, and just when the situation seemed bleak, out rushed 400 zealots in white clothes, their hands wielding huge blades, as they chanted with fervor and rushed at the militants outside the city in a kamikaze attack.

These zealots were different from the ones that Yue Zhong had to deal with, as although they were rushing without a care for their own lives, they were spaced out, and wanting to take them all down in a single strike would be nearly impossible.

Seeing the fanatics launching their counter attack, the militants began to target them with their heavy weaponry, spraying bullets at those unfortunate souls.

Blanketed by the rain of bullets, many of the zealots were punched full of holes. However, those militants were not expert marksmen, and many of their shots went wide, coupled with the fact that the fanatics had spread themselves out, the bullets only

managed to kill a few of them. Some were even unfazed when they were struck by the bullets. Under those circumstances, many of the zealots managed to bravely push through the rain of bullets and waved their melee weapons at those militants.

# Chapter 383: Internal Strife

---

The moment those white-shirt fanatics charged into the midst of the militants, they started slashing in a crazy manner. They seemed only intent on killing any unfortunate soul to meet their blades.

"Help!!"

"Ah!! Help!!"

"....."

The white-shirt zealots were like devils that had unleashed carnage upon those militants, causing them to lose their fighting will in an instant. Many abandoned their weapons and started to retreat backwards.

"A motley bunch!" Yue Zhong looked at the performance of the militants, and thought silently to himself.

The militants had the upper hand with their modern weaponry and could have overcome them, but they were frightened of the enemies who had a stronger zeal and fighting spirit.

"The heavens are with us, we're undefeatable!!"

"The heavens are with us, we're undefeatable!!"

The fanatics were hollering out at the top of their voice, charging at the militants like crazy demons, and killing them like sheep as the militants were steadily retreating.

"Kill!! Kill!! Kill!"

"Long live Sect Leader!! Long live Sect Leader!!"

"....."

Seeing those militants being slaughtered by the white-shirt fanatics, the disciples within the city walls also regained their morale and started to chant.

An Elder with a strong build and riding a motorcycle, with a lightning-like gaze he came leading 50 men, every one of them riding a motorcycle as they charged out from the city, and rushed at the militants.

5 Altar Lords took the initiative to coordinate and lead 300 of their subordinates as they charged out as well.

Right at this time, a group of warriors decked in a black suit came out from the midst of the retreating militants. They aimed as they each held a grenade launcher, and started firing rapidly at the zealots.

Grenades landed one after another in the midst of the zealots.

As long as those white shirted zealots were hit by the grenades, they would be immediately blasted dead. This was true even if they were wearing Type 3 Mutant Beast hides, as it could not completely negate the impact of the blast. As for those who had no defence, their bodies were immediately blasted apart.

At the same time, the gunfire that had stopped due to the retreating militants restarted again, as all sorts of heavy fire rained down upon the militants and white shirted zealots alike.

Under that frenzied spray of gunfire, the militants who had abandoned their weapons were punched full of holes together with the zealots, everyone turning into flesh sieves.

The backup weapons that had been lying in wait also kick started their firing, causing carnage to come down on those disciples and troops that had just left the city gates.

The motorcycles were destroyed by the bullets, and their riders were also killed by the fearsome rain of metal.

The 5 Altar Lords that had brought their men out were killed almost instantly. Only the hardy Elder managed to dodge the bullets and retreat back into Long An County.

"What a ruthless fellow!!" Yue Zhong saw this, and his heart



turned cold.

The commander behind these militants had obviously had designated these weaker militants as baits and cannon fodder, to force out the power of the disciples, and once they were hooked, he had ordered the deaths of the militants and zealots without batting an eyelid. It could be seen that this commander was truly vicious and decisive.

With over 400 zealots being annihilated, it was huge blow to the Heaven Sect in Long An County, as out of those 400 fanatics, there were over 10 Sword Apostles, and they had died to the exploding grenades. This was a huge blow to the morale of the Heaven Sect.

While the militants did manage to wipe out a number of the zealots, they had lost 200 warriors themselves. However, the other militants came out from their places of hiding and started their assault in the direction of Long An County.

"This is an entire battalion!" That is to say, the commander most likely still had another battalion or two somewhere as backup!

"These are all proper military equipment! They must have opened up one or 2 military camps." Yue Zhong came to this conclusion when observing them, and he frowned. He was also someone who warred frequently, and could tell the tactics and some strategy of the person behind the scenes.

This time, it was the Heaven Sect on defence. They had rifles as well, and a number of snipers were hidden on high grounds, sniping the militants from their points of cover.

A number of the militants were shot in the head.

With the threat of the snipers, the militants ducked for cover. At the same time, the snipers on the militants' side also began their own counter attack against the snipers in Long An County.

In the intense gunfight, both sides started to lost their snipers rapidly.

On the other side, the militants were still using their heavy weapons to continue their assault on Long An County. The different key locations of the Heaven Sect were starting to get compromised. The Heaven Sect was lacking the proper equipment to contend against the militants.

When the militants came to within 200m of the city gates, an burly Elder wielding blades burst out from the wreckage and piles of bodies.

He charged into the midst of the enemy, the Dark Magic Blades in his hands flashing about with a black light, as he started slaughtering the militants. He leapt about in the battlefield, seemingly without equal, and in a short span of time, he managed to kill 8 militants.

After suddenly killing those 8 militants, his body flashed, and he disappeared.

At another location, a dozen militants were currently making their way forwards carefully, when all of a sudden, 10 ice picks condensed in mid air, and nailed 10 militants to the ground, killing them instantly. The remaining militants began firing at a nearby building, however, all they did was break some windows, and they didn't manage to hit the Elders of the Heaven Sect at all.

If modern weaponry could dominate the battlefield, then street-fighting was considered the forte of those experts of the Heaven Sect. Unless the heavy artillery could flatten the entire ground of Long An County, otherwise the advantage belonged to those Heaven Sect's experts, who could make use of the terrain.

With the harassing of the experts, many militants met their tragic ends, and the remaining had no choice but to stay close together as they made their way into the town.

At the same time, a fully equipped battalion was making their way from behind a hill, as they entered the town, and joined in the battle.

Chen Shenggang watched the situation in Long An County with an alarmed expression as he asked Yue Zhong: "Leader, what do we do?"

Chen Shenggang was cowardly by nature, and was reluctant to join the fray.

"We wait!!" Yue Zhong replied solemnly as he continued observing.

Yue Zhong currently had 800 people, which was about 2 infantry battalions. However, if he wanted them to just jump into the heat of battle, they would likely perish in a short time.

"Boss! What now?" On a small hill, a burly-looking man built like a bear was looking at another younger bespectacled man, who had looked thin and gentle as he was asked this.

The cultured looking young man was the leader of the militants, Wen Fuxin, and the bear-like man was his sworn brother Luo Leihu!

A strange glint passed in Wen Fuxin's eyes, as he sighed and said: "I miscalculated!! I never expected the fighting morale to be so high, and they can still put up such a fight!"

In Wen Fuxin's initial calculations, after decimating the fanatics, they would be able to use the modern weaponry to take down the defence of the Heaven Sect easily. However, the reality was that things did not proceed as planned, and after sending two battalions, it was only barely enough to suppress them, but not to the point of overcoming them.

Long An County had become a meat grinder of sorts, with both sides sustaining casualties almost every second. It was the first battle that Wen Fuxin was facing such a loss.

Luo Leihu suggested: "Why don't we retreat first!! Today can be considered a draw. We can always come back and annihilate them!"

Wen Fuxin's eyes flashed with a dark look: "No!! It's already so late, if we were to retreat now, those from the town will definitely chase us down. We might get hit badly! Plus, they have gained some of the weapons we lost, the next time, our attack would not be as smooth already!"

Luo Leihu started to become anxious: "Then what now?"

Wen Fuxin took a deep breath, before solemnly ordering: "Convey my order! All troops are to attack Long An County! Today, even if we are down to our last man, we cannot retreat!! There will only be one side that lives today!!"

Upon receiving that drastic order, the last battalion awaiting further instructions also set off for Long An County.

A Heaven Sect Elder suddenly burst out from a window, and the long blade in his hands flashed about, taking the heads of 3 nearby militants.

Just as he was about to leave, he found himself suspended in mid-air. His eyes flashed with shock, and he turned his gaze to discover 3 Enhancers looking at him coldly, their hands outstretched, casting their ability on him.

"Go die!" Luo Leihu hoisted a rocket launcher and fired a shot directly at the Elder.

With a 'Hong', the rocket landed explosively on the body of the Elder, causing him to be blasted into tons of itty-bitty juicy pieces.

When the third infantry battalion joined in the fray, the forces within Long An County started to be beaten back.

# Chapter 384: Heaven Sect's Sect Leader

---

Wen Fuxin had high-level Enhancers within his troops as well, and the moment they entered the fray, they displayed their prowess. They joined forces with the ordinary soldiers to hunt the experts of the Heaven Sect, and the killing on both side increased in intensity. The Heaven Sect was slowly but surely being forced back.

As the heavy artillery rained down, a majority of the normal disciples started to break down, and they tried to escape, with no intentions of regrouping or reorganizing themselves.

"We won!!" Wen Fuxin looked at his troops pushing in, and the Heaven Sect defence crumbling, and he heaved a sigh of relief.

"Long live the Sect Leader!! Long Live the Sect Leader!!"

"Long live the Sect Leader!!"

"....."

Right when the defences of the Heaven Sect seemed to break down, a group suddenly started calling out excitedly.

A ordinary-looking man, with normal looks and long straggled hair, wearing a golden cassock came walking out of the group of people. His eyes shone with radiance, and he was the Sect Leader of the Heaven Sect, Linghu Xiangru.

Behind him, there were 4 extremely radiant holy lights that seemed to shine towards the sky, and there were also 40 Sword Apostles by his side.

Linghu Xiangru's voice reverberated like thunder as his eyes flashed coldly: "You heretics, today, I shall pass judgement on you on behalf of God, and send you to Hell, without the chance of reincarnation. Repent for your sins today by kneeling!! Repent!! Drop your resistance and accept your death. This way, you may have a chance to leave Hell in the future."

With those words, the militants suddenly had feelings of regret and fear.

Yue Zhong had already arrived at a small corner of Long An County by this time, and he heard the words of Linghu Xiangru, and could perceive a strong Spiritual force affecting his mind: "This is Spritual AOE skill!! With this skill, there's no wonder he managed to become the Sect Leader, with so many people worshipping him!"

Linghu Xiangru's voice was like that of a powerful deity that seemed to command everyone to cease their resistance: "Drop your weapons!! Stop resisting!!"

With that powerful command, the militants near him suddenly cried out in pain, as they lost all fighting will. They loosened their grips and the weapons in their hands dropped.

The 40 Sword Apostles shot forwards and waved their Tang Replica Swords, directly chopping off the heads of those militants.

"Long live the Sect Leader! He's blessed and invincible!!"

"Long live the Sect Leader! He's blessed and invincible!!"

"....."

When the disciples witnessed such a strange sight, they grew excited, and began shouting out with fervor.

Peng! Right when the people present were in excitement and joy, a sniper from afar aimed and fired a shot at Linghu Xiangru.

The bullet shot towards Linghu Xiangru in a flash, but suddenly stopped 3m away from his body.

"I'm an Apostle of God! As the hand of God, I am invulnerable and impervious to any attack! Nothing can harm me, and those who seek to harm me will taste their own medicine!" Linghu Xiangru's voice travelled across the entire battleground, as he locked on to the sniper position, and the bullet in front of him

instantly shot back, and penetrated the sniper's head!

Linghu Xiangru's voice reverberated within the entire area: "My people, use the weapons in your hands to kill these heretics!! They are the scum of the earth, and are devilish existences that God hates. Kill them, and you'll have earned more merit for yourselves. After your death, you will be reborn in the kingdom of God, and you get to enjoy pleasures!!"

"Kill!! Kill the heretics!!"

"Kill!! Kill them all!!"

"....."

With the Spiritual pressure weighing down, the Heaven Sect disciples started to get riled up, and their eyes turned bloodshot, as they started to charge at the militants like crazed demons.

Linghu Xiangru continued advancing like a divine being, his voice filled with the strong oppressive Spiritual pressure exuding out: "Enemies of mine, put down your weapons! Repent!! Cease your resistance and await the chance to be reborn!!"

The militants with weaker wills immediately lost their resolve to fight after hearing those persuasive words from Linghu Xiangru. They kneeled and began crying, their weapons dropping on the floor, and they were then slaughtered by the frenzied Heaven Sect disciples. Those militants who had successfully pushed in were wiped out in almost an instant.

"Fire your cannons!! Blast them to pieces!!" Luo Leihu bellowed loudly.

Heavy rounds began firing at the location Linghu Xiangru and his faithful worshippers.

Huge explosions rang out continuously, and the location where Linghu Xiangru stood was enveloped by the blast, a few of the disciples were instantly incinerated or blasted dead.

While these militants did not have great aim, and could not compare to proper trained soldiers, they had gained the "Artillery Skill" from battles, and weren't too bad. They managed to create a devastating effect from the grouping of the heavy artillery rounds.

Luo Leihu looked towards the cloud of dust in the distance, as he thought to himself: "Did we finish that guy?"

Linghu Xiangru's abilities were truly astonishing. Luo Leihu had never come across someone who had the ability to affect people in such a wide radius with just words. In front of such a terrifying ability, the 3 battalions had almost been wiped out.

Who would have expected, Linghu Xiangru stepped out from the scene of destruction and carnage without even a speck of dust on his body, as he looked coldly and order: "You guys have tried to attack an Apostle of God! Such a heinous sin! Commit suicide now!"

"Yes! We're sinners!" Under that pressure, those militants' eyes went blank as they took their own guns and pointed them in their own mouths, and pulled the triggers.

Following a few gunshots, those militants had bullet holes in their heads, their bodies falling lifelessly onto the ground.

Luo Leihu was after all a Level 46 Enhancer, and after Linghu Xiangru's words fell, his body trembled, and he almost could not control his own trembling as he pulled the Dark Magic Blade from his waist, as he started to place the blade on his neck.

"No!! I can't die!!" Right when Luo Leihu was about to slash his own neck, his mind suddenly regained its clarity, as he bit down harshly on his own tongue, breaking the tip, and the huge sense of pain woke him up.

"How terrifying!! What a strong opponent. I'm not his match!!" Luo Leihu could think clearly now, and he immediately retreated backwards, his entire back covered in cold sweat, as he could not



muster the courage nor will to contend against Linghu Xiangru.

Linghu Xiangru watched the retreating Luo Leihu, and his brows furrowed. The holy light behind his back flashed, as the bullets that were fired at him stopped within a 5m radius.

Linghu Xiangru then swept the surrounding with a glance: "Those who seek to harm me, will suffer consequences!"

The bullets that were suspended in mid air around Linghu Xiangru immediately flew backwards into the darkness, piercing the very people that fired the bullets, and 20 militants died instantly.

"Enemies of mine, put down your weapons! Repent!! Cease your resistance and await the chance to be reborn!!"

After killing the 20 militants, Linghu Xiangru continued forwards like a divine being, uttering the same words over and over like a curse as he took each step.

With the enveloping of that pressure, groups of militants began to lose their composure, as they started kneeling, and were executed by the disciples.

"Linghu Xiangru, what a evil existence!" Wen Fuxin saw his own troops giving up and being killed, and his eyes flashed with a strange glint before ordering: "Activate the demon-killing plan!!"

Under Wen Fuxin's command, his subordinates began their preparations.

Facing that ability of Linghu Xiangru, Wen Fuxin's subordinates began to retreat backwards like a flood, as they abandoned their posts, and a huge amount of weapons and ammunition was thrown, becoming the spoils of war for the Heaven Sect. The disciples continued their frenzied charge, hunting down and slaughtering the troops without restraint.

Just as they retreated a distance of 200m, Wen Fuxin's troops suddenly began their counter-attack, numerous guns firing from

all directions at the disciples who had chased over. The dense rain of bullet struck the disciples and they fell to the ground. 2 Altar Lords that had given chase were also killed with a shot to their heads.

Those Heaven Sect disciples had not much experience against modern weaponry, and hurried to hide behind positions with cover, and occasionally firing back at Wen Fuxin's troops.

In that intense gunfight, there would be some disciples from the Heaven Sect that were killed every second, and the same could be said for the militants.

"Enemies of mine, put down your weapons! Repent!! Cease your resistance and await the chance to be reborn!!"

Linghu Xiangru continued walking about the battlefield, his voice ringing out like a demonic curse.

"Quickly escape!!" The moment Linghu Xiangru appeared, the troops of Wen Fuxin would lose their composure, and immediately retreat backwards. On their left shoulders, there were long slashes, obviously they had used the pain to withstand the spiritual attack from Linghu Xiangru! However, even if they injured themselves on purpose, they could only defend against the spiritual attack with difficulty. If the distance was too close, then they would be helpless against his attacks.

Linghu Xiangru's brows furrowed slightly, as he stepped out, and immediately crossed a distance of 5-6 metres, chasing after the troops of Wen Fuxin. He was adamant on wiping out these elite soldiers.

Beside Linghu Xiangru, 38 Sword Apostles followed closely behind, they were his personal guards, and his trusted and fanatical worshippers. The intense battle had cost them 2 of their comrades, but the number of soldiers belong to Wen Fuxin that had died at their hands numbered in the hundreds.

Linghu Xiangru brought his men and slaughtered an entire battalion and more, and the other soldiers under Wen Fuxin could only watch on with horror and run whenever they could, otherwise they would definitely die.

"Commit suicide!!" Linghu Xiangru spent 5 seconds to catch up to those soldiers of Wen Fuxin who ran, as he coldly ordered.

By this time, he was within a 20m distance from those militants, and it was this radius where his Level 3 [Vocal Assertion] ability was at its strongest.

With that single command from Linghu Xiangru, the 20 militants immediately stopped in their tracks, seemingly bound, as they lost all sense of rationality and pulled out their own weapons before killing themselves.

"Die!!" Right at this time, a sense of danger welled up in Linghu Xiangru's heart, as he looked towards the direction, only to see Luo Leihu who he had been chasing for so long smiling grimly, pressing a button.

Hong! Hong!! Hong!!

Huge explosions occurred at Linghu Xiangru's current position, as a few remote-controlled bombs hidden at a corner detonated at the same time. The fearsome blast consumed the entire area, causing even a few buildings beside to be destroyed.

"Fire the cannons!!" Luo Leihu saw the carnage and called out madly.

A few mortars were immediately fired at the location where Linghu Xiangru was, continuing to rain destruction on the land.

Luo Leihu himself hoisted up a grenade launchers and fired a few more grenades into the area without rest.

"All of you deserve death!!!" At this time, an incredibly enraged voice rang out from the fiery blaze of destruction, as Linghu Xiangru stepped out with bloodshot eyes, his entire appearance

having undergone a drastic change. His golden cassock was blasted apart into pieces, revealing a Type 3 Mutant Beast hide underneath, his holy aura was down to only a single beam, while his long hair was burnt off leaving only a short patch. His ordinary face was red and swollen, as a few shrapnel pieces had lodged in his face.

Those 10 remote-controlled bombs were set up specifically by Wen Fuxin specifically to deal with Linghu Xiangru, and he had sacrificed a few elite soldiers as bait just to do that. However, Linghu Xiangru's abilities far surpassed Wen Fuxin's expectations, even under such extreme conditions, he had not died.

Luo Leihu watched Linghu Xiangru rushing over to him and started firing his grenade launcher again.

"Return!" Linghu Xiangru's eyes flashed with a glint, as he activated his Level 3 [Reverse Trajectory] ability.

In an instant, the grenades fired were immediately sent back towards Luo Leihu, 2 of them landing on his body directly and with a 'hong', Luo Leihu was instantly blasted into pieces.

## Chapter 385: Yue Zhong Makes His Move!

---

"Kill yourself!!" Linghu Xiangru reached the dozens of mortar operators in a flash and coldly commanded.

With that order, those soldiers of Wen Fuxin directly pulled out their guns and shoved them in their own mouths, pulling the trigger.

Peng! Peng!

Following the sounds of gunfire, those soldiers had all killed themselves.

"You guys dare to injure me!! All of you must die!!" Linghu Xiangru had been agitated by his serious injuries, his face now an ugly mask of fury. His body flashed about, charging at the location of the troops throughout the battlefield like a demon.

"Kill yourself!!"

"Kill yourself!!"

"....."

Linghu Xiangru was like a demon as he charged at the troops of Wen Fuxin, any enemy that got in his way would be commanded to die with his Level 3 [Vocal Assertion] ability. Even a Level 30 Enhancer would find it tough to resist the command the moment Linghu Xiangru got within range.

Seeing such a strange phenomenon, the troops of Wen Fuxin lost their composure, as they cried and sobbed in their attempts to escape, abandoning their weapons and ammunition.

The remaining Elder, 5 Law Protectors and 23 Altar Lords led the other disciples as they charged towards the remaining troops, killing them and causing chaos and mayhem.

"We're finished!!" Wen Fuxin saw his retreating soldiers and his face turned pale. This time, he initially had an 80% confidence of

succeeding in his assault on the Heaven Sect. However, he had severely underestimated Linghu Xiangru's combat abilities. He was like a death-defying being that could single-handedly crush the morale of his troops. If there wasn't this Linghu Xiangru, Wen Fuxin would have long conquered Long An Province.

"Kill!!!"

"Kill the heretics!!"

"Charge!!"

"....."

Every single disciple of the Heaven Sect had bloodshot eyes, the blades in their hand waving about in an unceasing motion, as they chased down the retreating militants. Although they lacked the technical know-how for operating modern weaponry, with regards to using the cold-hard melee weapons, they were naturally extremely comfortable!

Linghu Xiangru saw that the outcome was decided, and he heaved a sigh of relief, and started to make his way back. He had over exerted himself by continually using the Level 3 [Vocal Assertion] and [Reverse Trajectory] abilities, expending a huge part of his energy.

"Enemy!!" Just as he had just took a few steps back, he felt a sudden sense of danger, and he quickly activated his [Reverse Trajectory] ability again.

A rocket had managed to reach a distance of just 1 metre away from Linghu Xiangru, when it immediately turned and shot back towards where it came from, in a small alley, and exploded instantly.

At that same instant, Yue Zhong had activated his [Shadow Steps], his body flashing as he wielded his Crocodile Tooth Saw Blade, swinging towards Linghu Xiangru's head.

Linghu Xiangru's mind was currently going off with all sorts of

warnings, as he hastily activated his [Vocal Assertion] ability: "Stop!!"

With a command that induces self-harm like suicide or self-mutilation, it was hard for people to resist such commands. Needless to say, the simpler ones like stop, or staying one's hands was even harder to resist. Linghu Xiangru had a comprehensive understanding of the skill, and he had chosen to use a single command that was hardest to resist at the first instant.

A strong Spiritual pressure landed on Yue Zhong, and the Necklace of Clarity shone once, before easily dispelling the effect.

The force of the Crocodile Tooth Saw Blade in Yue Zhong's hands did not seem to diminish, as it swung towards Linghu Xiangru's head.

Linghu Xiangru's face turned ashen, and with a thought, the remaining holy aura appeared in front of him. The 4 holy auras behind his back was the Type 2 [Buddha Protection] ability, and was a defensive skill. Earlier, the 4 holy auras had protected him, allowing him to survive those explosions.

Yue Zhong's left hand shot out, while the blade in his right hand came in contact with the blade of holy light. The Crocodile Tooth Saw Blade was stopped in its tracks, but Yue Zhong's left hand connected viciously with Linghu Xiangru's abdomen.

The fist with a strength 6-times that of a normal person exploded out, as a force of almost a few-hundred jin landed, causing Linghu Xiangru to fly back 6-7 metres.

Linghu Xiangru was after all a Level 58 Spirit-based Enhancer, and after becoming the Sect Leader of the Heaven Sect, he had never been injured before. This time, even with the protection of the Type 3 Mutant Beast hide, he still received a tremendous impact, causing his internal organs to rupture, as he spat out a mouthful of fresh blood. If it wasn't for the strengthening of his Endurance through his equipment, he could have possibly been

killed by this single fist of Yue Zhong.

"Kneel!"

"Stop!!"

"Stop!"

"....."

Linghu Xiangru retreated backwards hastily, while trying anxiously to gather his Spirit, and casting the [Vocal Assertion] on Yue Zhong. He had ascertained from the light shining at Yue Zhong's neck to be some sort of artifact that blocked Spiritual attacks. However, any equipment such as this had their limits, as long as he broke the limit, the equipment would lose its effectiveness.

"Go and die!!" Yue Zhong's eyes flashed furiously, his left hand exploded out with a ball of Devil Flame, and he swung viciously towards Linghu Xiangru, the Devil Flame threatening to envelop the latter.

Linghu Xiangru felt the overwhelming danger, as his pupils shrunk, and he activated his Type 2 [Buddha Protection] again, causing 4 holy auras to appear and cover him.

Although Yue Zhong's Devil Flame could incinerate many things, including an armored tank that he could reduce to just a puddle of metal liquid, he had no way of burning through those holy lights in a short time.

While burning, Yue Zhong continually hacked at the 4 beams of holy light with his blade, with no way of cutting through.

"Kill yourself!!"

"Kill yourself!!"

"....."

Inside his protection, while backing up anxiously, he kept trying to cast his Level 3 [Vocal Assertion] and strong surges of Spiritual



pulses kept crashing on Yue Zhong, wearing down the count of the Necklace of Clarity's defence.

Under that relentless assault of Linghu Xiangru, the Necklace of Clarity began to wear down in terms of its defence, before the spiritual attack managed to enter Yue Zhong's mind.

Linghu Xiangru casted his Spiritual blasts a few times, to no avail, as his eyes went wide with shock and he couldn't help asking: "What the hell? How can you block my Spirit attacks??"

Linghu Xiangru suddenly thought of something, as he asked in a furious manner: "Don't tell me you're a Spirit-based Evolver!! Impossible! If you're one, how can your speed be so fast?"

"You speak too much!! Die!!" Yue Zhong's eyes flashed coldly, and with a thought, White Bones appeared out of thin air, swinging its huge axe viciously on the holy auras of Linghu Xiangru.

With a hong, the holy lights shimmered a little, and Linghu Xiangru's face turned pale, as one of the beams disappeared.

While the defence of the Type 2 Buddha Protection was shocking, its energy expenditure was equally exhausting, and Linghu Xiangru had just been through a tough battle, having spent most of his Stamina and Spirit. This time, he was facing a joint attack by Yue Zhong and White Bones, which caused one of the holy auras to finally collapse.

"Attend to me!! Attend to me!! Quickly! Kill these 2 heretics, I'll reward anyone who does it!!!" Linghu Xiangru was panicking by now, his face ashen as he looked at his damaged holy aura, and could not care less about his image as the Sect Leader, and ran to the disciples.

Yue Zhong and White Bones chased him down.

"Protect the Sect Leader!! Kill the heretics!!"

"Protect the Sect Leader!!"

"....."

The numerous disciples saw the Sect Leader that they had worshipped and thought invincible being chased by Yue Zhong and White Bones, and promptly went crazy with rage, charging over towards them.

Linghu Xiangru awkwardly ran past the human crowd towards the distance, he didn't want to die, and still wanted to sit at the top of the Heaven Sect, and enjoy life's pleasures.

"Kill the heretics!!"

"Kill the heretics!!"

"....."

Dozens of fanatics charged at Yue Zhong, their eyes filled with madness, with chants coming out of their mouths. Their single thought was to kill Yue Zhong and White Bones.

"Go die!" Yue Zhong's eyes flashed coldly, and he opened his hands, as a huge ball of Devil Flame shot towards Linghu Xiangru's direction. Those poor souls who stood between Yue Zhong and Linghu Xiangru were instantly engulfed when the flame touched them, as they started burning and shrieking in agony.

In barely 2 seconds, the entire path that was blocked by the disciples had been charred black, and out of the 3 remaining holy auras surrounding Linghu Xiangru, one disintegrated.

When they saw the huge number of their fellow disciples being incinerated almost instantly, all the normal disciples had a change of expression, with only the zealous fanatics still charging at Yue Zhong without fear.

Yue Zhong's body flashed, and in a few breaths, he managed to catch up to Linghu Xiangru, viciously slashing down at the 2 remaining beams of light, and with his 6-times normal Strength, he managed to do enough damage to finish destroying one more beam!!

White Bones had also caught up, as it swung its axe at the remaining beam of holy light, causing Linghu Xiangru to be knocked flying together with the beam.

Linghu Xiangru saw Yue Zhong make his way over with the determination to kill him, and his eyes flashed with fear as he called out: "Stop! I know a secret that can allow a normal skill to evolve into a Type 2 skill!! As long as you stop!! I will tell you this secret!!"

When Yue Zhong heard that, his eyes immediately shone, and he replied: "Get your men to stand down! Otherwise I have no choice but to kill you!"

Linghu Xiangru immediately turned and shouted at the disciples: "Stand down all of you!!"

With that, all the disciples immediately looked at one another, before quietly retreating.

Yue Zhong used his Crocodile Saw Tooth Blade to point at Linghu Xiangru and said deeply: "Speak!! If there's the slightest falsehood, I'll immediately execute you!"

Linghu Xiangru immediately pulled out a glass vial from his pocket, within it, there was a red, blood-like substance, that seemed to be shrouded in a mysterious atmosphere.

=====

There's someone like Linghu Xiangru in Singapore, minus the God & Devil abilities. He's called Kong Hee. He had misappropriated funds used in worship for this megachurch called City Harvest Church. Look up "kong hee charged" in google and you'll see what I mean. Worst part is, he still has followers that have been led to believe he truly is doing it for them.

Funny how sometimes blind faith can be used by wolves in sheep's clothing to do many things. He gave Christianity a bad name at any rate.

If there're any Singaporean readers who believe in Kong Hee out there, man, I feel sorry for you.

[Ulamog]:

Kong Hee Info

[Ulamog]: At this topic I also feel sorrow but more for people who allow this kind of bad example to color their views of how real Christianity should be. I know that as the years pass we focus more and more on our goals and our own needs than we ever did even 10-20 years ago. The World is a changing place. Christianity was intended to HELP save people and get them through their issues, and to make people outgoing and loving and change the world one person at a time. Not to collect an offering or steal people's money to fund music careers..... >.<

## Chapter 386: Annexing the Heaven Sect!

---

Linghu Xiangru looked at Yue Zhong and said: "Speaking to this young brother, I'm Linghu Xiangru. How should I address you?"

Yue Zhong looked at the vial of red viscous liquid, and could tell that it was something valuable: "I'm Yue Zhong. Don't waste my time, you have 30 seconds, if you can't convince me, you'll have to die!"

Linghu Xiangru pointed to the vial and said: "This is a super-enhanced drug that I've researched. As long as a person with an ability drinks this, it can forge one's bones and temper marrows, as well as evolving a single ability into its Type 2 stage!! As long as you let me go, this vial is yours."

Yue Zhong's face flashed with disinterest: "This must be something you obtained from a Type 3 Mutant Beast right! I already know of such a formula, I'm just lacking the Type 3 Mutant Beast component. It's nothing extraordinary!"

Linghu Xiangru's face instantly turned to one of shock and he couldn't help but blurt out: "What?? You can make this too? Impossible!!"

"Seems like it truly relies on the Type 3 Mutant Beast." Yue Zhong confirmed his conjecture from Linghu Xiangru's expression.

When Yue Zhong saw so many members of the Heaven Sect possessing the Type 3 Mutant Beast hide, he had surmised that they should be in possession of a Type 3 Mutant Beast's corpse. The vial that could cause someone to evolve must be either from the corpse of the Type 3 Mutant Beast, or a plant similar to Yue Zhong's Snake Birth Fruit Tree.

Yue Zhong looked at Linghu Xiangru and immediately offered: "Give that vial and its formula to me, and dissolve the Heaven Sect. I'll spare you after that!!"

Linghu Xiangru's right hand gripped the vial tightly as he shook his head profusely: "No! Definitely not! Yue Zhong, if you let me go, I can give this vial to you, and confer upon you the position of vice-sect leader! You'll only be below me in authority!! You can choose freely from the beauties in our Heaven Sect, as long as we work together, we'll be able to forge great things!!"

The Heaven Sect was something that Linghu Xiangru had expended a lot of effort to establish, and he wasn't willing to dissolve the fruits of his labour.

"Since it's like this! You can just die!" Yue Zhong suddenly raised his Stinger, and pulled the trigger 6 times without blinking.

The remaining holy light behind Linghu Xiangru immediately revolve to block the bullets in front of him.

However, at the same time, a sharp bone spike shot out from the ground, going through the holy light and piercing Linghu Xiangru's neck and penetrated his brain.

Linghu Xiangru had an expression of shock, as the last holy light dispersed, while his body slumped lifelessly to the ground. The vial of red liquid in his hand also fell towards the ground.

Yue Zhong stretched out his hand and grabbed the vial. He did not immediately take it, instead keeping it within his storage ring,

Yue Zhong waved his hand, and took out his Crocodile Tooth Saw Blade to cut off Linghu Xiangru's head. Enhancers had all sorts of strange abilities, if he didn't remove the head, who knows if Linghu Xiangru had the ability to revive himself.

After he disposed of Linghu Xiangru, Yue Zhong rummaged through the cassock, and found 2 more vials of the red liquid.

This super-enhanced drug was a heaven-defying treasure. Instantly evolving a skill, replacing the need for a Level 4 Skill Book, at the same time it helped save precious skill points.

Yue Zhong eyed the super-enhanced drug and made an

assessment: "This drug should only be effective once!"

If it could be used more than once, Linghu Xiangru would have long used them all.

Yue Zhong glanced at Linghu Xiangru's corpse, and quickly removed all the system equipment.

Linghu xiangru had some decent Spirit-based equipment. His entire equipment when compared to Yue Zhong, was only lacking a Level 4 Defence Armor, a Necklace of Clarity, the storage ring, and other Level 4 Treasures. However, he had 2 treasures that Yue Zhong did not have.

"Level 4 Treasure: Shoes of the Wind! Upon equipping, Agility +12. Movement speed increased by 10%"

"Level 4 Treasure: Necklace of Spirited Speech! Upon equipping, Spirit +8. Speech-based Spiritual Attacks enhanced by one level."

It was precisely due to this Level 4 Necklace of Spirited Speech that allowed Linghu Xiangru's Level 3 [Vocal Assertion] to be so powerful. It hadn't yet been enhanced to its Type 2 stage, yet it could already suppress Enhancers of above Level 40. Unless it was a Spirit-based Evolver, otherwise, few could actually withstand the might of that skill.

"Linghu Xiangru's dead!! Any Heaven Sect disciple that surrenders will be spared!!"

White Bones held the decapitated head of Linghu Xiangru high, as it charged about within the ranks of the disciples, while Yue Zhong shouted loudly while running beside it.

"Sect Leader!! Sect Leader's dead!!"

"It's over!! Sect Leader's dead!!"

"How did he die? Isn't he the Apostle of God?"

"Kill them, revenge for our Sect Leader!!"

"....."

Many of the disciples lost their will to continue when they saw the decapitated head of Linghu Xiangru. Especially those who were blinded by their faith in him, and had believed that Linghui Xiangru was an invincible being. With his death now plain to see, their faith suffered a huge blow, as they stood there dumbly, not knowing what to do.

There a few enraged disciples that charged at Yue Zhong and White Bones, but were easily slaughtered by White Bones.

Following the broadcast of the message, as well as the sight of Linghu Xiangru's head, many of the disciples started to lose their bearings. Some tried to escape in all directions, while some broke down. No one had the will to fight on anymore.

The entire Long An County was thrown into chaos.

When Wen Fuxin heard the news of Linghu Xiangru's death, his originally pale face regained some color: "What? He really died? This is my chance!! The heavens are helping me!!!"

Right at this time, an intelligence officer came running to Wen Fuxin's side, and reported: "Boss!! Not good!! Boss!! There's an armed unit coming right at us from behind!!"

Wen Fuxin's face that had just regained its color turned pale once again, as he grabbed the shirt of his intelligence officer in a slightly agitated manner: "What? Is that true??"

The intelligence officer replied: "It's true! Boss! If you don't believe, take a look yourself!"

Wen Fuxin did not hesitate, and hastily went to the entrance to observe, only to discover that an IFV, a few machine gun-mounted vehicles and elite soldiers, combined with a force of Heaven Sect disciples wielding melee weapons, as well as some tribesmen launching an assault on Long An County.

"Finished!!" When Wen Fuxin saw these, his face turned ashen. He only had about 2 platoons of soldiers left. The rest of his troops



had escaped, and the current soldiers weren't in a condition to fight. Under these conditions, he had no way of contending against this new force of nearly a thousand people, including their modern weaponry.

If he was given more time, once he gathered those scattered troops of him, he would definitely not be afraid of dealing with this obviously motley group of people.

"What do we do? Boss!" One of the intelligence officer immediately asked in worry.

"Retreat to the town! Quickly recover any scattered troops!!" Wen Fuxin's eyes flashed as he thought, before he canceled his previous order: "No!! Immediately bring our men to break through! Whoever can escape will be the remaining force! As long as the forest is remaining, there will still be firewood\*!! The enemy's sights are on Long An County, not us."

The moment Wen Fuxin gave the order, he quickly brought his soldiers as they awkwardly tried to dodge Zheng Minghe's soldiers.

Zheng Minghe saw Wen Fuxin's retreating troops, and did not give chase, instead bringing his 800-strong army towards the depths of Long An County.

Under normal circumstances, the men that were hastily thrown together to make up this army would not be a match for Long An County's disciples, nor Wen Fuxin's troops. However, both armies had suffered a huge collapse, and the moment Zheng Minghe brought this huge force in, it crumbled any remaining hope or fighting will of Wen Fuxin's troops and the Heaven Sect disciples.

A large number of the militants as well as disciples immediately surrendered to Zheng Minghe and his troops, while within the county, important key locations and vantage points were overtaken by subordinates deployed by Yue Zhong.

A number of soldiers were also sent out to maintain security and

restore order, as those disciples that had gone crazy were immediately executed on the spot, and the chaotic Long An County finally regained its former sense of tranquility.

Chen Shenggang saw the soldiers patrolling about, his mind in a trance as he thought: "The Heaven Sect has fallen just like that?"

The Heaven Sect had 8 Great Elders, 72 Law Protectors, a 108 Altar Lords and over 8,000 disciples. Linghu Xiangru had unfathomable powers, and could easily take down a battalion by himself. Such a huge force was actually taken down so casually by Yue Zhong and his troops, giving Chen Shenggang a sense of unreality.

"Too strong! This kind of person is the goal I should be chasing!!" Lu Ningshui brought a hundred over captives and patrolled about, as he saw the blood-filled streets of Long An County, his heart in unrest. He had never imagined that Yue Zhong had just brought a number of experts to swallow up the entire Heaven Sect. It filled his heart with respect and veneration for Yue Zhong. From this moment on, Lu Ningshui had become another diehard loyal supporter of Yue Zhong.

Because of the overwhelming victory, many captives that had surrendered to Yue Zhong earlier changed their coats, and saw themselves as subordinates of Yue Zhong. Of course, if Yue Zhong had lost, then they would have immediately denounced him, and joined the victor's side. Such was the way of this world.\*2

# Chapter 387: Ying Kaishan!

---

Yue Zhong brought Bai Xiaosheng and 20-over soldiers with full equipment as they went towards the central headquarters of the Heaven Sect. There were still a few loyal worshippers and devotees ensconced there.

The central headquarters was in a lavish looking villa. As Linghu Xiangru had been a ordinary person before the apocalypse, after gaining power, he had also enjoyed himself. Therefore, the headquarters was set up in the most luxurious part of the county.

"Chang Li!! Just surrender! If you continue like this, you'll only die!!" Zhen Yeyang brought a group of 100+ disciples that had surrendered as they stared at the villa, shouting loudly.

Within the villa, the Altar Lord Chang Li shouted out in fury: "Zhen Yeyang! You traitor!! You betrayed the Heaven Sect, and have become the claws for them to act against us! You will definitely not have a good ending, after your death, you'll not be able to reincarnate and shall surely suffer your burning skin peeling from your thick face in Hell!! Let your new master come and meet me!! Otherwise, I'll burn this entire villa, and you'll only gain our corpses!!"

"Well said!! Chang Li, you're undoubtedly a central pillar of our Heaven Sect! You have a backbone!!" Following a furious roar, a man dressed entirely in black leapt out, as he charged towards the villa.

Zhen Yeyang recognized the newcomer, as his face changed and he quickly bellowed: "Open fire!! Open fire!!"

The troops of Zhen Yeyang raised their guns and started firing at the middle-aged man, but their bullets only got deflected.

Chang Li took a look at the man in black, as his eyes lit up in joy: "Elder Ying! You're here!!"

This man dressed in black was called Ying Kaishan, and was the leader of the 8 Elders in the Heaven Sect. He possessed a fearsome strength, and was the number one under Linghu Xiangru. Such an expert had arrived, and caused Chang Li to celebrate, there was finally someone they could rely on!

Ying Kaishan swept his eyes around the surroundings, and discovered only 23 disciples. He frowned and asked: "Are there only you guys here? Where's the rest?"

Chang Li replied respectfully: "I had deployed the rest to the other parts of the villa, to guard the important areas."

Ying Kaishan furrowed his brows and reprimanded: "Dumbass!! We're low on numbers, how can we still divide our strength? Go get the rest back, and bring those beauties that the Sect Leader kept over here as hostages! If they don't retreat, we'll kill a woman every minute! Until they retreat, then we'll make use of the chance to escape from here, and wait for a chance to get our revenge!! We must stay alive, and seek vengeance for the Sect Leader!!"

Chang Li immediately responded: "Yes! Elder Ying!! I'll go get them now."

Not long after, following the sounds of crying of women, 300 bound up but different beauties were dragged in by Chang Li and 20 other disciples.

When Linghu Xiangru had established the sect and set himself as the Sect Leader, the first thing he did was to set up his own harem court. As long as he saw a beauty that wasn't the wife of his own subordinates, he would find ways to get them into his harem. When the higher-up stays happy, it spells the same for the subordinates. With Linghu Xiangru's character, his subordinates would offer him beauties the moment they caught any grade A class beauties. Over time, he had gained over 300 such beauties for himself.

Ying Kaishan surveyed the environment, as he looked at the 46

disciples and asked solemnly: "Is this everybody?"

Chang Li looked at the 46 disciples, his face crunching in sadness as he gritted his teeth and replied: "Everybody's here!! These are the remaining brothers who are willing to sacrifice it all for the Heaven Sect!"

Ying Kaishan's face turned solemn and said: "Close the door!! Everyone come over here, I've something of utmost importance to say to everybody!!"

"Yes Elder!"

With the order from Ying Kaishan, the 46 disciples gathered around Ying Kaishan.

"Please enlighten us, Elder!!" Chang Li and the 46 disciples spoke out in unison.

"What I would like to say is... I want to use your severed , bleeding heads, to show and prove my loyalty to Leader!!" Ying Kaishan's eyes turned cold, and sharp ice spikes shot out from his body, piercing through Chang Li and all of the 46 disciples, nailing them all gruesomely to the wall like some perverse game of pin the tail on the donkey.

"Why....Why!?! " Chang Li was pierced in his stomach, as he was nailed to the wall, shuddering as he asked Ying Kaishan.

Ying Kaishan's expression was cold as he took out a Dark Magic Blade and cut off Chang Li's head: "I need to use your deaths to gain the respect and approval of Leader. Don't blame me! If you want to, blame yourselves for being stupid!"

"Ah!!!"

"Murder!!"

"....."

When the 300 beauties saw this scene, many lost their composure and began to scream. It was the first time witnessing a slaughter

for a few of them, and many were still not used to it.

Ying Kaishan stared at them coldly, and released an intense killing aura: "Shut up!! Keep quiet all of you!"

The 300 beauties immediately shut up after being intimidated by that killing intent.

Ying Kaishan pointed to 2 of the beauties and ordered: "You and you! Go open the door! Invite Leader in!"

Of the 2 beauties, one had long black hair, a full bottom, and a voluptuous figure coupled with incredible looks. The other was slightly shorter, but had fair skin, and defining features, and could be considered cute.

The 2 of them did not dare go against Ying Kaishan's orders, as they went to the door of the villa and opened it.

The moment the door opened, Yue Zhong brought Ming Jiajia and took huge strides into the villa.

Ying Kaishan got down on one knee in front of Yue Zhong and proclaimed: "Salutations and welcome to the Leader!!"

"Welcome Master!!" The 300 beauties also got down respectfully and spoke out in unison.

When Linghu Xiangru established the Heaven Sect, he passed the rule that everyone had to treat him like the emperors of the past. Those who did not listen were immediately treated as blood offerings to God, and under that kind of treatment, many became obedient, or at the very least, on the surface.

Yue Zhong looked at Ying Kaishan and said: "Get up! Ying Kaishan, you did extremely well! You will be a platoon commander first, and your rank will be a second lieutenant for now."

Ying Kaishan was a man who knew how to make use of opportunities, when he saw that the Heaven Sect had fallen, he had immediately lined himself with Yue Zhong. He was the one

who had suggested this trap to wipe out the remaining devotees, to prove his loyalty.

"Yes, Leader!" Ying Kaishan's eyes flashed with fervor, as he stood up swiftly.

Ying Kaishan pointed to the 2 ladies that had opened the door for Yue Zhong and recommended: "Leader, this lady is called Xu Qian, and this one is called Sun Xueyan! Both of them had just recently been offered to Linghu Xiangru within this month, however, Linghu Xiangru had been out hunting Mutant Beasts, and raising his own level. They should still be virgins! They have already undergone the strictest training to be prepared, and Leader you can use them as you wish now!"

Ying Kaishan was a keen person, and had his capabilities. He wanted to gain a high position in this establishment of Yue Zhong, and regardless of the methods, as long as it could be used, he would employ them where necessary.

Xu Qian was the voluptuous and alluring lady with the long black hair, and was about 21 years old. Sun Xueyan was the slightly petite and fair, cute beauty of about 16-17.

"En!" Yue Zhong swept a gaze at both the ladies as he replied indifferently.

Zhen Yeyang walked into the villa and reported to Yue Zhong: "Leader! There's someone who wants to see you!"

"Who?" Yue Zhong furrowed his brows slightly while asking curiously. In this Long An County, he could be considered the single leader now, and possessed the authority to kill anyone. Everyone was in awe of him, and there shouldn't be anybody who would seek him of their own accord.

Zhen Yeyang replied: "He's a researcher! I have no idea what background he has, however he seemed to be researching a top-secret project for the Heaven Sect! Only Linghu Xiangru could

enter as he pleased, and the location was always protected by the Sword Apostles. Even Elders could not go in! I think that Leader you should personally meet him!"

Yue Zhong frowned and replied: "Ok! I got it! Lead me!"

Zhen Yeyang brought Yue Zhong towards a separate villa from the headquarters.

The moment he entered the villa, Yue Zhong saw that the place had been remodelled into a research lab. Inside the lab, there could be various equipment seen, and within many glass containers, there were countless Mutant Beasts and plants.

In the research lab, there were also cages. Inside some of these cages, there were some L1s, S1s Mutant Cats, Mutant Pigs as well as other evolved zombies and Mutant Beasts locked up. Inside one such cage, there were even 2 Level 23 live Mutant Lizards.

A researcher dressed in white was currently busy scribbling and noting down some research, performing all sorts of tests, keeping extremely busy. The moment Yue Zhong stepped in, the researcher lifted his head and looked at Yue Zhong, before calling out: "Elder Ou! Someone's here!"

A man in a white coat, with an incredibly messy hairdo and unkempt beard, of about 27-28 looked up from a microscope. He eyed Zhen Yeyang, before looking at Yue Zhong and said a little indifferently: "I'm Ou Ming! I was the 9th Elder of the Heaven Sect. Are you Yue Zhong?"



# Chapter 388: Ou Ming

---

Yue Zhong eyed Ou Ming and replied: "I'm Yue Zhong!"

Ou Ming directly pulled out a box and handed it to Yue Zhong with a look of indifference: "Since you're here! That idiot Linghu Xiangru must have been done in by you. This entire Long An County must be under your control already as well. I might as well rely on you! This is the product of my research: Ou Ming Evolving Liquid Ver 1. After taking it, it can help any Enhancer over Level 30 with a Type 1 Skill to evolve it into a Type 2 Skill. If a normal person lesser than Level 30 were to use this liquid, there's a chance of awakening a Level 3 Skill, and the possibility of permanently enhancing a random attribute by 10 points. This liquid can only be used by a person once, subsequent dosages will have no effect. There are 3 vials over here, treat it as my pledge of allegiance!"

Yue Zhong opened up the box and took a look, in it, there were 3 vials that were exactly the same as the vials he got from Linghu Xiangru.

He asked: "This liquid is your research?"

Ou Ming had a look of self-satisfaction: "Of course!!"

Yue Zhong looked at him and directly said: "I want the formula for this liquid!"

Compared to one or 2 vials of the liquid, Yue Zhong wanted to the formula and process. With it, he could enhance every expert under him in the future.

Ou Ming did not seem to hesitate and directly handed a stack of documents to Yue Zhong: "Not a problem! This is the formula for Ou Ming Ver 1!"

Yue Zhong opened up the documents and took a careful read, and discovered the intricate process of producing this 'Ou Ming Ver 1'. Its main ingredients were the blood essence of a Type 3 Mutant

Beast, as well as the brain cells of the Type 3 Mutant Beast, combined with the sap of a Mutant Plant known as the Ghost Night Vine, and the Blood Orchid, another Mutant Plant. Lastly, there were some other common materials needed to be added.

On that document, the steps and important details to pay attention to were all listed extremely clearly. With this documents, as well as the necessary ingredients, Yue Zhong could begin a large-scale manufacturing of this 'Ou Ming Ver 1'.

Yue Zhong asked: "The Ghost Night Vine and Blood Orchid, you have them here?"

Ou Ming pointed to a corner of the research lab: "That area, from the left to the right, are the Ghost Night Vines and Blood Orchids."

At the corner, there was a small tree being wrapped by a number of black vines, below it, there were a few zombie corpses. Those pitch-black vines were precisely the Ghost Night Vines. To the right, there were a few blood-red flowers the size of huge sunflowers blooming atop the corpses of zombies. These were the Blood Orchids.

The 3 important components necessary for the production of the 'Ou Ming Ver 1', with the exception of the corpse of a Type 3 Mutant Beast, were all gathered here.

Yue Zhong saw how cooperative Ou Ming was, and rejoiced silently in his heart, as he smiled and promised: "Very good! Whatever your requests, as long as they're not too excessive, I will do my best to fulfill them!"

Ou Ming contemplated silently for a moment, before his eyes blazed with a passion: "I don't have any special request! I like to research these zombies, Mutant Beasts and Mutant Plants. Let me stay here and continue my research! Please pass any high-level zombies, any Mutant Beasts and Mutant Plants for me to research. The results of my research will be passed to you, and you can use it any way you want. However, there is a condition, that is whenever

you use the fruition of my research, you have to use my name!! With regards to this 'Ou Ming Evolving Liquid Ver 1', when you pass them to others, you have to use the name. I want my name to resound across the entire world!! Surpassing even Einstein and Newton! I want to become the first and foremost scientist in the world!"

Yue Zhong looked at the fervent Ou Ming and expressed his agreement: "No problem!!"

The naming of such products of science were extremely important to these scientists whose passion laid in research. To Yue Zhong however, it could be called anything. He didn't care what it was called, as long as the results of the research were useful.

Ou Ming pointed to the rest of the research team and said indifferently: "Oh yes! This research facility needs constant power! We don't lack any beverages or food. The families of these researchers are here, so please look after them kindly. If they have any requests with regards to their conditions, please help to address them."

By partaking in the research in this facility, there would definitely be a restriction of freedom. Ou Ming was also extremely thorough, and did not request to leave his facility, and instead, proposed for Yue Zhong to look after the rest of the researchers.

Yue Zhong looked at Ou Ming appreciatively, and smiled: "Not an issue! Ou Ming, do you want a few beautiful assistants?"

Ou Ming replied apathetically: "No need!! I'm uninterested in 3D women! If you discover any dating games you can send them over! I'm only interested in 2D girls."

Yue Zhong became speechless. He had no idea that such a passionate scientist was only interested in 'gal games'.

"Alright! If there's nothing else, please leave. Of course, if you

want to stay behind to observe, just keep silent. I want to start work!" Ou Ming had no airs of a subordinate and shifted his focus towards the microscope, as though the Mutant Beast meat was more interesting than a beautiful lady.

Yue Zhong asked one final question: "Is the nuclei of the Type 3 Mutant Beast of Linghu Xiangru still in your hands?"

Ou Ming immediately opened up a box beside him, and retrieved a blood red nuclei, throwing it to Yue Zhong without any care: "Are you talking about this? If you didn't say, I almost forgot! This nuclei cannot be digested by us humans, the previous person who ingested this just directly passed it out through his shit. At the same time, it is incompatible with other research materials, even acid cannot corrode it. Here!"

Yue Zhong directly kept the Type 3 Mutant Beast nuclei into his ring, as it was extremely helpful to the advancing of Mutant Beasts. If he could use it to raise Lightning into a Type 3 Beast, then he could gain another trump card!

Lightning was already so terrifying as a Type 2 Mutant Beast, if he could evolve it into a Type 3 Mutant Beast, then there would be no equal to it in the near future.

Yue Zhong pulled out a glass vial filled with the Snake Birth Fruit Juice and gave it to Ou Ming: "This is a fluid that can allow a person to become an Evolver!"

When Ou Ming heard that, he immediately took it and smelled the liquid, before sticking out his tongue to taste a little, and his eyes became bright with a strange glint. He almost lost his composure as he pulled Yue Zhong's clothes and asked loudly: "Is there more? Please give me more!! This is not enough for research!!"

A juice that allowed someone to become an Evolver, it was an incredible treasure. Ou Ming had been here for such a long time, and had conducted research on over 150 types of Mutant Plants,

but it was the first time that he heard or saw an extract of a Mutant Plant that can help someone to Evolve.

Evolvers were the chosen of this apocalyptic world, they had much more potential than normal Enhancers. They were faster than other normal people in gaining benefits from various sources.

Beside Yue Zhong, the naturally awakened Evolvers like Yao Yao and Zhuo Yatong had incredible learning speeds, compared to others, they were extremely fast at picking up skills.

When Yue Zhong had become an Evolver, his learning ability had increased as well, and while he could not compare to those naturally awakened Evolvers, he was still vastly ahead of other ordinary Enhancers.

Even Ou Ming who was usually calm and indifferent, upon learning of this miraculous item, had lost his composure. This was after all something that could help make Evolvers, if he could derive the formula from this liquid, he could immediately become the top researcher in the history of mankind! The moment he thought of this, Ou Ming's blood began to boil with anticipation.

Yue Zhong pulled out the green Snake Birth Fruit Juices out, and handed them to Ou Ming: "I'm left with this!! However, these are just byproducts, they're not enough to become Evolver. They can only strengthen the body's constitution."

These green coloured Snake Birth Fruit juices had no way of changing a person into an Evolver, but if a normal person was to administer it, one could gain 5-6 points in a given attribute. However, it had no effect on an Evolver like Yue Zhong.

"That's great!! That's great!!" Ou Ming grabbed those vials and ran excitedly to the research bench, and began to run tests. He had completely forgotten about Yue Zhong who had passed him the juices.

Yue Zhong took a look at Ou Ming running about excitedly, as

well as the rest of the research team engrossed in their work, and nobody gave a single hoot about him. He observed quietly for awhile, before leaving the lab.

Yue Zhong gave an order to Zhen Yeyang: "Zhen Yeyang, go inform Zheng Minghe to bring 15 experts and begin protection of this facility. From now on, this villa is out of bounds to anybody, without my instructions, no one is to barge in, any offenders will be executed!"

Ou Ming's research lab was extremely important to Yue Zhong. Be it the possibility of evolving a skill into its Type 2, or the current ongoing research into the serum that turns someone into an Evolver. To any power, this was an important trump card. Yue Zhong would definitely not let anyone get their hands on the research!

"Yes!" Zhen Yeyang's heart shuddered, as he swiftly replied.

Yue Zhong turned around, and left the research lab.

Since the control of Heaven Sect over Long An County had been consolidated, the entire area had become calm.

## Chapter 389: Evolve, Type 2 Skill

---

The moment Long An County was secured, Yue Zhong did not immediately bring his forces away. Instead, he arranged for another battalion to be deployed over from Tianxin District to stand guard at Long An County.

With the additional security of the elite battalion, Long An County truly became under Yue Zhong's control. Even if the remaining forces from Heaven Sect were to make any funny movements, the elite battalion was more than enough to keep things in check.

Yue Zhong brought a vial of the 'Ou Ming Ver 1' and placed it into Ming Jiajia's hands, saying: "Jiajia! This is 'Ou Ming Evolving Liquid Ver 1'! After administering, it can help the ability of an Enhancer above Level 30 to evolve into a Type 2 skill. However, there are risks to this, and should the evolution fail, there could be a strong backlash as well! Do you want to take it?"

"Please allow me to!! I'm not afraid!" Ming Jiajia had a resolute look, as she took it from Yue Zhong's hands, and immediately downed the contents in a single gulp.

In this apocalyptic world, to gain strength, one had to take the risk. Ming Jiajia had long since understood that fact, and knew the chances to become stronger were already rare and slim. The moment she passed one up, it would be gone forever. Furthermore she wanted to stay by Yue Zhong's side, and become an indispensable existence to Yue Zhong, strength was thus crucial.

The moment the liquid entered Ming Jiajia's body, it became a hot surge of energy that rushed about in her body, as her blood started to heat up as though burning. She could not help but groan in pain, collapsing in Yue Zhong's arms, and perspired profusely.

Other than that, as she was perspiring, blood started to ooze out from every single pore. That intense pain caused Ming Jiajia's body

to shudder involuntarily. She could only try to withstand the pain while groaning in pain like an injured kitten.

"What a powerful concoction!!" Yue Zhong held Ming Jiajia tightly as his heart pounded. It was the first time he witnessed such terrifying effects.

After an entire hour, Ming Jiajia's torment came to a stop, by this time, her entire body looked as frail as a newborn, mixed with blood and grime.

Yue Zhong carried Ming Jiajia and brought her to the bath to clean up, before bringing her back to bed to rest.

Early the next morning, Ming Jiajia awoke, and Yue Zhong asked in concern: "How're you feeling?"

Ming Jiajia closed her eyes and observed her changes quietly, before opening her eyes and said: "It's fine now! My Spirit has gained 5 points of enhancement. My [Summon Shadow Wolves] skill has also evolved to [Summon Type 2 Shadow Wolves]!"

Yue Zhong's pupils lit up in interest: "Let me see the extent of your new strength!"

Ming Jiajia nodded and waved her hands, activating the skill. In an instant, without any noise, a Shadow Wolf rushed out from Yue Zhong's shadow and pounced towards him.

Yue Zhong's heart tightened in wariness as he activated his [Shadow Steps], twisting his body and sending a powerful punch towards the Type 2 Shadow Wolf!

The Type 2 Shadow Wolf had no means of dodging in mid air, and received the powerful punch. It was sent back 6m, however, it did not seem to be injured in the slightest, and its eyes flashed furiously. The moment it landed, it shot towards Yue Zhong like a lightning bolt.

"What a crazy speed!!" Yue Zhong observed the Type 2 Shadow Wolf and his heart trembled. Its speed was actually faster than



Lightning and himself! It was actually comparable to the Agility-based Evolver Bai Xiaosheng. Without any sharp weapons, even with a Strength of 6x normal, Yue Zhong had not managed to hurt it.

As the Type 2 Shadow Wolf pounced towards Yue Zhong, he activated his [Gravity Manipulation] and caused the Type 2 Shadow Wolf to plummet to the ground. He made a grab for the wolf, and slashed down with the Crocodile Tooth Saw Blade, cutting the Type 2 Shadow Wolf cleanly in two.

Yue Zhong's pupils narrowed as he asked Ming Jiajia: "How many of these Type 2 Shadow Wolves can you summon?"

Ming Jiajia thought and replied honestly: "With my current Spirit, I can maintain 5 Type 2 Shadow Wolves for 10 minutes. After that, I can't sustain the energy necessary to summon them."

While these Type 2 Shadow Wolves could not compare to actual Type 2 Mutant Beasts, the differences weren't that big. The fearsome thing was that they could be continuously summoned out, and Ming Jiajia could even summon 5 at one go. If Yue Zhong didn't have any protection, and was suddenly ambushed by these wolves, he would definitely suffer quite a bit.

Yue Zhong currently had few experts under him that could contend against these wolves singlehandedly. That was to say, just based on single combat power, Ming Jiajia had already ranked amongst the top 10. However, her personal defence was still lacking, and without protection, a single sniper bullet could take her life easily.

Yue Zhong smiled and ruffled Ming Jiajia's little head: "Very good! Like this, Jiajia you have become a powerful expert as well!"

Ming Jiajia revealed a bright sweet smile: "Hehe!!"

Since Ming Jiajia had successfully taken the 'Ou Ming Ver 1', Yue Zhong did not hesitate further and immediately gulped down the

contents.

In an instant, Yue Zhong started to bleed from his pores, as a strong powerful surge of energy raged within his body, causing him to feel as though he was breaking apart. While Yue Zhong had a strong will, the pain caused him to feel like he was dying from the most excruciating torture you could imagine. After shivering uncontrollably for an extended period, he managed to recover somewhat, albeit slowly.

A strange light flashed within his mind, as it gathered around the [Summon Skeleton] skill rune, causing it to change. A few strange lines carved themselves onto the rune, before finalizing the fusion process and the skill rune shone with smallish dark pulses of light.

The moment the rune formed, a radiant light shot out from Yue Zhong's mind where the Skill Rune was stored and landed on White Bones.

Under the blanket of that radiant light, White Bones started to undergo a change, its body turning entirely black, leaving not a single spot. Every part of its body started to sprout sharp spikes, giving it the hideous appearance of a killing machine.

"Congratulations on gaining 5 points of Spirit!" A bright sound of notification rang within Yue Zhong's mind.

"Level 4 Skill: Summon Dark Skull (Type 2 Skill). Enhancing requires 2 skill points per enhancement."

"Your Special Summon Skeleton has evolved and has gained enhancement in its abilities. Every skill has gained a +1 enhancement."

"Dark Skull (White Bones) Level 42.

Strength: 91 (10)

Agility: 91 (10)

Vitality: 91 (10)

Stamina: 91/91 (10)

Spirit: 91/91 (10)

Endurance: 153 (10)

Skill 1:

Utilizing Bones Ability (+1).

Skill 2:

Strengthen Bones (+1).

Skill 3:

Bone Control (+1).

Skill 4:

Feign (+1).

Skill 5:

Return to Hell (+1).

Skill 6:

Immediate Summon (+1).

Skill 7:

Sharpen (+1).

Skill 8: Basic Intelligence (+1)."

After the Special Summon White Bones evolved into the Dark Skull (White Bones), its 6 attributes had gained 20 points each. At the same time, every skill gained +1 enhancement. Its combat ability had undergone an earth-shattering change after evolution, even if it were to face Type 2 Mutant Beasts, it could hold its own. It was no longer helpless against those fearsome beasts

" ... "

In the villa that used to be the headquarters of the Heaven Sect, Yue Zhong sat silently in a sofa, his hands holding the info of his

various subordinates.

Ming Jiajia sat obediently beside Yue Zhong as she read an English book. She only originally knew Vietnamese and Chinese, but as she wanted to follow Yue Zhong for a long time, she started picking up various languages. English happened to be one of them.

Ning Yuxin, Sun Xueyan, and Xu Qian, these 3 beauties were currently sitting in front of Yue Zhong, and each of them held a magazine as they were absorbed in their own reading separately.

Yue Zhong looked at the details of his subordinates, as he frowned, before turning to the loli Ming Jiajia, as his eyes lit up: "Jiajia! Would you like to be the mayor of Long An County?"

Hearing Yue Zhong's words, Ning Yuxin, Sun Xueyan and Xu Qian abruptly looked towards Ming Jiajia, as they trembled slightly.

Especially Xu Qian, as intense jealousy could be seen in her eyes. The mayor of the county would have control over 7,000 people, calling their fates was as easy as flipping their hands. It was an incredible honor and prestige.

Prior to the apocalypse, Xu Qian was a small-time model, and had dealt with numerous people. She was no stranger to authority and power, and was attracted to a position of control. There was one time when she was competing with another model for an ad. Xu Qian had better qualifications, but just because the competition had a mayor as her backer, she got the job. Through this, Xu Qian learnt about the harsh ways of society. If it wasn't for her personal principle on being a virgin to hook a millionaire, she would have long become a rich canary shared amongst other rich people.

While Ning Yuxin and Sun Xueyan were not as envious as Xu Qian, they were still shocked by the news.

Ming Jiajia tilted her head as she pondered, before replying in a resolute manner: "I don't want to leave Master's side! However, if

Master requires me to stay here and manage Long An County, I would do so for you. When you're gone I would definitely not allow anyone to snatch it away from you!"

Yue Zhong revealed a smile, and lightly pecked Ming Jiajia's forehead: "Good! From now on, you're the mayor of Long An County! I'll leave it in your care then!"

Yue Zhong had groomed a number of experts, but he could only fully trust a handful. Ming Jiajia had been by his side ever since he crusaded across Vietnam. She had weathered almost everything with him, and was the most trustworthy. At the same time, her experience was not lacking, and she had the highest qualifications, as everyone knew she was the favourite general under Yue Zhong, and no one would dare contest her rule.

Ever since Wen Fuxin had slunk away in defeat, he had long since disappeared with his men. The world was wide and the boundaries were endless, Yue Zhong had no means to spare to chase him down.

After passing the command that Ming Jiajia was to assume control as the mayor, Yue Zhong reassigned some of the Heaven Sect's experts into his own expert troops. They then proceeded to replenish their ammunition, and he only brought this bunch of elite soldiers with him towards Guilin City.

Xiama Village was a small village that was about 20km away from Guilin City, and before the apocalypse, it had about 300 inhabitants. Currently, it was the territory and home to over 300 zombies.

On this day, 2 Audis, 1 Santana, a bus, a truck, and 5 other cars came from the distance, stopping right in front of this village.

40 men stepped out of the 5 cars, amongst them, 2 of them were wielding rifles, and the remaining 30-over were holding machetes, long bats and other various melee weapons.

"Do it!!" A huge burly bald man, with a long knife scar on his face, held his Tang Replica Sword as he looked at Xiana Village and ordered solemnly.

The men started to get into action, as they hammered large wooden stakes into the ground, and started to tie some ropes to the stakes, constructing a simple trap.

Upon completion, the scar-faced man commanded a skinny male: "Zhao Jia! It's your turn!!"

"Yes! Boss!" The skinny male had a pale look, as he pulled out a small knife, and cut his hand, causing a few drops of fresh blood to drip onto a handkerchief.

Zhao Jia then brought the blood-stained handkerchief and ran towards the entrance of the village, and shouting at the top of his lungs: "Zombies! Your granddaddy Zhao Jia is here! Get the hell out!!"

The zombies within the village caught scent of the fresh blood, as well as the noise Zhao Jia was making, and they started to shamble towards the source.

After Zhao Jia was done getting their attention, he quickly retreated. He didn't dare to stay too long, as the biggest risk of his job as bait was, if he were to meet an S2, the bait would definitely die and become food.

Unfortunately, Zhao Jia didn't have the necessary luck it seemed. Alas, he had just ran for a few metres, when an S2 suddenly leapt out from the crowd of zombies in a flash, chasing after him!

"Help!! Help!!" Zhao Jia saw the S2 and was frightened out of his wits, as he sobbed and ran while screaming.

His cries did not help him, as everyone stood near the trap and watched quietly, not daring to take a step beyond the limit.

The S2 reached Zhao Jia easily, and pounced on him, taking a vicious bite out of his throat, and chewed his flesh of his neck in a

bloody mess...

# Chapter 390: Guilin City

---

While the intense screaming continued to ring out, Zhao Jia was feasted on as he died. As he breathed his dying gurgle, the S2 tore chunks of meat from his face, neck and everywhere else within easy reach. It was truly a gory scene.

The S2 then turned its attention towards the scent of the humans, charging towards the dozens of people as well as Scarface. Its speed brought it towards them in just a few breaths, but it was tripped by the trap made of ropes.

2 strong males brought out nooses, and with a fluid and practised motion, they managed to restrain its arms, before pulling on other side, causing the arms of the S2 to be spread.

"Die!!" The scar-faced man bellowed angrily, his Tang Replica Sword slashing at the S2, as his huge strength burst out, and he chopped the head of the S2 off easily.

Looking at the rolling head of the S2, the men present heaved a sigh of relief. If the S2 had gotten too close to them, they would have instantly been killed.

A yellow-skinned man with a thin stature stepped forwards as he congratulated Scarface: "Congratulations Boss, for killing this S2 so smoothly. Like this, your level is going to rise again!! We can't wait to see you hit Level 20!"

Scarface held the Tang Replica Sword gingerly, his face flashed with pain: "Enough of your bullshit!! Go make your preparations! Today, we had better cleared Xima village. Otherwise, we won't have enough resources to pay Boss Guo! Damn it! The rental of this Tang Replica Sword is truly expensive. One day's usage actually requires a 100 jin of rice, it practically is robbery!!"

With the flow of time, the drops from the zombies and Mutant Beasts had declined steadily. At the beginning of the apocalypse, a



single S2 could give several valuable items. A few Level 3 skill books wouldn't have been a surprise. However, the killing of an S2 now would at most give a few Survivor Coins, and even a White Treasure Box drop would be considered rare.

The weak, yellow-skinned male with a wretched appearance touched the stake in the ground bitterly as he looked towards the village, when his expression suddenly turned to one of horror. His voice shook as he shouted: "3...3 S2s! 4 L2s!! A total of 7 evolved zombies!!"

They discovered that within the group of zombies making their way over, there were suddenly 3 S2s and 4 L2s charging over. The men present immediately turned pale. Many of them were just normal people, and could deal with a few ordinary zombies. The trap they had set was enough to deal with a single S2, but against the L2 with high defence, it was practically impossible.

"Disperse!" Scarface's expression changed rapidly, and was the first to run back. While Xiamia Village was sure to possess a huge amount of resources, which would allow him to live comfortably for a while, it required him to be alive to enjoy it! Even a Level 20 Enhancer would have to retreat when facing these 7 evolved zombies, needless to say himself, who had yet to reach Level 20.

When the 7 evolved zombies made their appearance, the men immediately abandoned their stations and ran for the cars behind them.

At this time, a somewhat frivolous-looking young man stepped in front of Scarface, blocking his way and tapped his shoulders as he asked loudly: "Are you from Guilin City?"

Scarface recoiled in shock, this young man was obviously incredibly fast, he had no way of reacting when the young man had tapped his shoulder. That ghost-like speed was impossible to defend against, if he had wanted Scarface's life, it was going to be incredibly easy.



the 7 soldiers without so much of a struggle, causing Huang Weili and his subordinates to stare wide-eyed with shock.

After killing the 7 evolved zombies, the 7 soldiers charged into Xiaman Village. There were still over a few hundred ordinary zombies to be hunted.

Huang Weili looked at the small team led by Bai Xiaosheng and his eyes were filled with respect: "So strong!! These men are definitely high-level Enhancers! Who are they exactly?"

Bai Xiaosheng glanced to the side, as his gaze travelled to Huang Weili, as he spoke unceremoniously: "You must be the head!! Come with me to meet our boss!!"

Inside Xiaman Village, there were only a few hundred ordinary zombies, as long as there were no accidents, the 7 Enhancers were more than enough to wipe them out.

"Yes!" Huang Weili replied respectfully, although his heart was unable to remain calm: "Above this freak, there's still a boss? How strong must the boss be?!!"

"So young!" Huang Weili quickly came in front of Yue Zhong, as he looked at Yue Zhong carefully, and thought silently.

Yue Zhong eyed Huang Weili coldly and said: "Tell me everything you know about Guilin City. If I'm satisfied, this bag of rice will be yours. If you dare hide even a single thing, you will have to bear the consequences."

"Yes!....." Huang Weili only felt a huge sense of pressure on him, as he started to tell Yue Zhong everything while trembling ever so slightly.

Prior to the apocalypse, there was only a small field troop stationed at Guilin City, and during the apocalypse, many of these soldiers had also turned into zombies. However, the regiment commander Du Shanxiong managed to escape with his life. After regrouping and making use of firepower, the army managed to

overcome the zombies then.

At the same time, the army relied on its modern weaponry to charge into Guilin City, wiping out a huge number of the zombies, saving many citizens and inhabitants within the city.

Guilin City had a population of about 1,200,000, with Du Shanxiong's actions, they managed to save a total of 200,000 survivors.

At the same time, when Du Shanxiong received the distress call from Nanning City, he had led his subordinates as they brought tanks and heavy artillery to launch an assault on Nanning City.

In front of those modern weaponry, the ordinary zombies were decimated. A large number of survivors were rescued by Du Shanxiong, and he worked together with Nanning City's government officials to save a total of 350,000 survivors.

With his ability and combat power of his troops, conquering Nanning City would not have been an issue then. However, when he was about to launch an assault, a scout he had deployed discovered that the numerous zombies within the surrounding villages around Nanning were converging on Nanning.

Nanning City had more than 7 million people before the apocalypse, and when it set in, over 5 million had become zombies overnight. When Du Shanxiong brought his troops to conquer Guilin City and Nanning City, he had expended a large amount of ammunition, and his soldiers were getting exhausted. Under the urgent pleas of the government officials, he had no choice but to break out of Nanning, bringing his troops and the 400,000 survivors (Of which, 50,000 were from the scattered villages) back towards Guilin City.

After that, Du Shanxiong had been continually fighting against the remaining 3 million zombies around Guilin City till now. Through the constant battles, Guilin City was already cleared of all zombies, and the surrounding areas were slowly being cleansed as

well.

However, as the surrounding villages were numerous, there were some like Xiaman Village that was not yet cleared.

Under his efforts, the total number of survivors within Guilin City walls numbered 850,000, close to its original number prior to the apocalypse.

"As expected! Starting from scratch is truly difficult!!" Yue Zhong heard Huang Weili's words and could not help but sigh.

Yue Zhong had worked tirelessly and slaughtered all sorts of enemies up till now, and he could only boast of a few hundred thousand survivors. This Guilin City already possessed 850,000, and what's more, they had a proper army. Be it the combat ability or the potential of growth, Guilin City surpassed his establishments.

Du Shanxiong was a regiment commander that had control over various modern weaponry, and he had no lack of experience. Achieving what he had came as no surprise.

At the initial stages of the apocalypse, the ordinary zombies had no way of defending against bullets. Even up till now, ordinary zombies would still fall when fired upon. Du Shanxiong had not managed to clear the millions of zombies purely because he had not enough ammunition. He was shackled by the collapse of humanity that he had to maintain some for deterrence, otherwise the problems of zombies would be solved.

Yue Zhong stared fixedly at Huang Weili and asked: "How many troops does Du Shanxiong have?"

This was the crucial question. In this apocalyptic world, he was used to viewing all other factions as enemies. To his enemies, his first concern would be to grasp the number of troops the enemies had.

Huang Weili had a difficult look: "I don't know! Only the

government officials would know such military intelligence."

Bai Xiaosheng laughed in a perverted manner: "850,000 survivors! There must be how many beauties!! Hehe! Too great. Boss Yue, I love Guilin City!!"

Yue Zhong was speechless when he looked at Bai Xiaosheng.

Bai Xiaosheng was truly lustful, and in this new world, beauties also loved strong people like Bai Xiaosheng. Just in Long An County, he had already gained a few beauties who had belonged to Linghu Xiangru previously. He did not mind anybody who came, as long as they were good-looking, and those ladies were extremely satisfied that their new man was someone strong, hence, the relationships were formed very quickly.

Bai Xiaosheng eyed Huang Weili and did not care as he asked Yue Zhong casually: "What do we do with them? Shall we kill them?"

Bai Xiaosheng had long since grown used to killing, and was numb to it. Killing a few more innocents did not matter to him.

When Huang Weili heard that, his hairs stood on end, and he broke out in cold sweat. He immediately knelt in front of Yue Zhong and pleaded: "Boss Yue spare us! Boss Yue spare us please!! Leave me with my life so that I can serve you!!"

Yue Zhong threw a 100 jin bag of rice to Huang Weili and said indifferently: "Relax, I won't kill you!! Take this and go!!"

"Thank you Boss Yue!! Thank you Boss Yue!!" Huang Weili immediately took the bag up and thanked Yue Zhong profusely, before he turned and ran without looking back.

Bai Xiaosheng looked at Yue Zhong and asked: "Leader! What now?"

Yue Zhong and his team had brought along an IFV, some machine gun-mounted vehicles, and even some anti-tank missiles. If such a troop was to arrive at Guilin City, they would immediately be searched. The controller of Guilin City would

definitely not allow such a force to enter. At the same time, Yue Zhong and the rest might be forced to enter the army.

Yue Zhong replied indifferently: "Zheng Minghe, go bring some men to Sanshui Village and get things ready! Shang Lun, Bai Xiaosheng, Ying Kaishan and Ning Yuxin, you will enter the city with me! After entering, go immediately to Ming Sheng Garden District 23, Unit 4, Room No. 607 to look for me."

"Yes!" Everyone responded, and set out to carry out Yue Zhong's orders.

Yue Zhong and his small team then set forth in a hummer and arrived at Guilin City in half an hour.

As expected, the moment they arrived, they were searched, and after determining there were no suspicious items, and quarantined for an hour, they were released within the city.

# Chapter 391: Family Reunion

---

"Wait a moment!!" Right as Yue Zhong and the rest were about to leave the security checkpoint, a worker chased up to Yue Zhong as he called out.

Yue Zhong turned around and asked: "What's the matter?"

The young man then explained himself: "The current regulation in Guilin City is that only authorized vehicles can travel on the road! The authorization tag can be bought at 1 ton of rations! Of course you can leave the vehicles with us or choose to sell it off. If you leave it with us, the parking fee will be 1 jin of rations a day. If you want to sell it off, we can buy it at a hundred jin of rations!"

Yue Zhong pondered for awhile, before pulling out a huge bag of rice and handed it to the worker: "I'll choose to park it then!! There's a hundred jin of rice here! It should be enough for 100 days!"

Shi He, the worker, received the bag of rice, as he observed Yue Zhong's team carefully, his gaze lingering on Ning Yuxin's figure for awhile before revealing a relaxed smile: "Got it! I'm Shi He, how about becoming friends!"

Although Shi He was young, he was extremely sharp. He could tell that these people in front of him were experts for them to possess such a calm and steadfast attitude. Furthermore, to be able to travel or drift in this new world, this group of people was definitely not simple. There was no disadvantage in making friends like these.

Yue Zhong smiled mildly: "I'm Yue Zhong! If there's time, let's meet up! I have things to do, so I'll be leaving first!"

After which, Yue Zhong brought Shang Lun and the rest towards the centre of Guilin City.

"Yue Zhong eh!" Shi He watched the retreating backs of Yue



Zhong and his team, and resolved to get in his good books the next time they met.

Yue Zhong and the rest walked along the roads towards the inner parts of Guilin City, and along the way, they noticed various differences from other places they have been.

In the city, while many shops had closed down due to the carnage, there were a variety of other shops that had popped up. There were those that sold homemade crossbow bolts, ropes, machetes, shields, etc. There were martial arts dojos that taught close combat, and there were even stores selling leather clothes made of Mutant Beast hides. Finally, there were small eateries everywhere, giving it a vibrant feel and a thriving vibe.

Although it could not compare to the days of before the apocalypse, this scene in Guilin City was the most orderly and thriving that Yue Zhong had seen so far. It looked bustling and was comparable to the Long Hai City that Yue Zhong had established.

The fact that Guilin City could grow to this current stage, was because of its 850,000 survivors. The army cleared up the enemies around the city, while the government officials ensured stability and peace within the city walls. Both gave rise to a peace and prosperity that Guilin City enjoyed.

Yue Zhong continued walking, and he discovered the underlying ugliness of the city as well. At certain alleyways, they would discover thin and weak survivors with tattered clothes and sunken faces.

They even saw some bodies that were obviously starved to death, or those survivors who had committed suicide. The worse thing was that, even though the living survivors saw these tragic scenes, they did not do anything for the bodies, instead choosing to keep a wide berth.

At the Salon Street of the pre-apocalypse Guilin City, there were already many women who had decided to sell their themselves. A

few hundred had dolled themselves as they lounged about, as they tried to latch themselves onto any man who walked by, negotiating terms while pulling the men into the rooms to begin their "fleshy" deals.

Although there were shortcomings, Yue Zhong had to admit that, other than his own Long Hai City, Guilin City did possess the potential to be a place to grow. And the one point that Yue Zhong lost out on was the fact that Guilin City had close to 900,000 survivors whereas Long Hai had only more than 100,000.

As Yue Zhong and his team continued, they finally arrived in front of Ming Sheng Garden District 23, Unit 4, Room No. 607.

This unit was bought by Yue Zhong's parents previously in Guilin City, before they were transferred to Nanning for work and had to buy a new place. Yue Zhong guessed that if they were to be here in Guilin City, they would definitely be staying here.

Yue Zhong stood in front of that door for a long time, as he carried his hope and anxiety in his heart, before fearfully knocking the door. By this time, it had already been almost a year since the apocalypse had set in, which meant a year where plenty could happen. He was extremely worried that it would be strangers meeting him instead of his parents, who could have been killed by zombies already.

The door opened, as the slightly unfamiliar face of a middle-aged lady popped out, and upon seeing it, Yue Zhong's heart immediately sank.

The middle-aged lady looked at Yue Zhong for a while, as though she was unsure, before she suddenly broke into an excited smile: "You... you are... Yue Zhong!! You must be Yue Zhong right?! You're back!! Xiao Ning, Yue Zhong... Yue Zhong's back!!"

"What?! Yue Zhong!! Yue Zhong is it truly you?" Right at this time, another middle-aged housewife walked out from a room, and the moment she laid eyes on Yue Zhong, emotional tears welled up

in her eyes, and she ran over to hug Yue Zhong as she balled loudly. "You're back!! My son's still alive!! My son's alive!! Thank God!! Thank God!! My son's still alive!!"

In this post-apocalyptic world, countless families have been broken up and collapsed due to deaths and the cruelty of human nature. Yue Zhong's mother Ning Li had followed her husband Yue Ming in escaping to Guilin City, but both had long given up hope of seeing their son ever again. Now, as she finally saw her son, she could not help her emotions from bursting out.

"Mum, I'm home!!" As Yue Zhong returned the embrace to his sobbing mother, even his hardened heart softened and impassive eyes reddened, as tears flowed freely.

Since the apocalypse, Yue Zhong had been in Hunan, but there was never a moment where he did not think about his family. However, the roads were perilous and the hordes of zombies prevented the possibility of making his way. He could only suppress his anxiety, and took things one step at a time. He hadn't really thought that it would be impossible to meet his parents ever again, but here he was, finally seeing his mother, and his heart was filled with myriad complex emotions.

"Where's Dad?" Yue Zhong regained his calm, as he looked towards the room expectantly, asking his mother Ning Li.

"He went to work! He hasn't knocked off yet!! Come Yue Zhong, I'll introduce you, this is Sun Jie. You remember, your Auntie Sun! When you were young, she carried you before!" Ning Li had cried for a while as well, and by now, after calming down, she pulled Yue Zhong to introduce the unfamiliar middle-aged woman.

Yue Zhong greeted Sun Jie with manners: "Auntie Sun, how do you do!"

Yue Zhong had heard of Sun Jie's name before, and knew she and Ning Li were playmates when young. Even when Yue Zhong's family moved to Nanning, Ning Li had not broken contact with

Sun Jie.

Sun Jie beamed as she looked at Yue Zhong: "Good! Good! Yue Zhong, you have grown so well, such a dashing young man!"

Sun Jie continued smiling as she asked Ning Li: "Since he's back! Why not let Xiao Yun and the rest take a look at him?"

Ning Li responded heartily: "Yes!"

Sun Jie smiled, before looking warily at Ning Yuxin outside the door, and then left: "I'll head back first!"

Ning Li then noticed Ning Yuxin and the rest before asking Yue Zhong: "Yue Zhong! Are these your friends?"

Yue Zhong lied: "This Ning Yuxin is my university schoolmate. These 3 are Bai Xiaosheng, Shang Lun and Ying Kaishan. They are friends I made on my journey back. Thanks to them, I could reach here safely."

Yue Zhong could not just tell the truth to his mother: 'Your son Yue Zhong has already become a mighty general who is a bona-fide killing machine. He is the leader of over 200,000 survivors, and this group consists of a maidservant who was the spoils of war, while the other 3 are just a few of your son's subordinates.'

Ning Li looked at them with gratitude: "Thank you so much! I'm so thankful that you guys have looked after my son. Since you guys have just arrived here, you must be lacking a place to settle down. If you guys don't mind the small space, why don't you live here?"

In Ning Li's heart, there was nothing more important than her son. Since Bai Xiaosheng and the rest had protected Yue Zhong, they were her benefactors. Although having to sustain 4 more additional people in this new world order would be tougher, she was willing to bite the bullet.

Ning Yuxin responded extremely politely: "Thank you Auntie!!"

Bai Xiaosheng took a glance at the room and replied proudly:

"Yue Zhong!! You don't have to worry about the 3 of us!! We will look for somewhere nearby! You just spend time with your family!"

Ning Li's residence was truly on the dilapidated side, and was obviously poor. On one hand, Bai Xiaosheng wasn't willing to stay here, on the other, he could not bear to be indebted to Yue Zhong's family.

Bai Xiaosheng turned and walked out: "Let's go! Old Ying! Old Shang!!"

The corner of their mouths turned up in a smile, and seeing that Yue Zhong did not say anything, they left quickly. They had already agreed beforehand on a signal, if Yue Zhong were to use it, they would all converge here at the first notice.

Ning Yuxin hesitated a while before leaving as well. She was not willing to come in between the family reunion.

After Ning Yuxin left, Yue Zhong then started asking about the happenings from Ning Li.

Before the apocalypse, Yue Zhong's father Yue Ming had been an ordinary civil servant, while his mother was a staff member of an institution. While the family wasn't poor, they were not rich as well. After the apocalypse, the 2 of them had escaped to Guilin City, and Yue Ming had stayed with the government as a clerk, while Ning Li had remained unemployed, staying at home.

The treatment of civil servants weren't too bad, as Yue Zhong's father could earn 40 jin worth of food, 1 jin of fuel, and 1 jin of meat every month in trade-in tickets and the family survived on this!

Since there were so many mouths to feed in Guilin City, the atmosphere was slightly tense. The total amount to feed close to 900,000 mouths numbered extremely high every day. The current monetary approach was to use tickets to exchange for items.\*1

# Chapter 392: Kin!

---

Ning Li looked at her son with a doting look and said: "It's good that you're back!! Your dad will help you get a job here! After that you can find marry a decent girl and bear me a grandchild!"

Ning Li was very traditional, and just hoped for her son to settle down, marry a girl, and leave on peacefully.

Yue Zhong did not want to turn his mother down at this juncture and only smiled and nodded: "Sure!!"

In the evening, close to 6pm, Yue Zhong's father Yue Ming came home and saw Yue Zhong, before saying a single sentence mildly: "It's good that you're back!"

Yue Zhong detected Yue Ming's body trembling, and could see that his father was suppressing his emotions.

Yue Ming had always been the pillar of support in the family, and could not easily lose his composure in front of his son. Men had always been less expressive of their emotions anyway.

Yue Zhong also responded with a sentence: "Dad! I'm home!"

"It's good that you're back!" Yue Ming looked at Yue Zhong once before he sat down on the sofa and his body trembled. He held up a newspaper to block himself, as even the usually stoic he could not help but shed a few tears upon seeing his long lost son.

Ning Li left the father-son pair in the living room, as she went to the kitchen and got busy.

Fried vegetables and roasted meat, these rare food after the apocalypse were displayed on the table, and there were even 4 buns and some dumplings. This was considered a sumptuous meal, and this single meal had been at the cost of half a month of Yue Ming's meat and fuel wages.

Not long after, Sun Jie brought a young pretty lady with black,

shoulder-length hair, a tall figure, with a pure and innocent charm to the Yue household.

The moment that demure lady entered the house, she greeted Yue Ming and Ning Li politely: "Uncle! Auntie!"

Ning Li smiled warmheartedly: "Come! Come! Yue Zhong, this is Gao Xiaoyun, she's Auntie Sun's daughter! She's 18 this year, just slightly younger than you. You must take good care of Xiaoyun-meimei in the future! Xiaoyun, this is your Yue Zhong-gege!! You should hang out more with him."

When Yue Zhong heard this, he understood the meaning of the dinner. Ning Li wanted to arrange marriage between the both of them. This meal was to introduce the 2 of them to each other.

Sun Jie also spoke up enthusiastically: "Xiaoyun, this is your Yue Zhong-gege! He was a university student, if you have anything you're unsure about in the future, just seek help from him. Yue Zhong, the 2 of you youngsters should have a lot to talk about, we won't bother you! Go on and have a chat. Go on!"

Gao Xiaoyun looked towards Yue Zhong and smiled gently: "How do you do, Yue Zhong-gege!!"

Yue Zhong responded with a smile: "How do you do, Xiaoyun!"

After that, Gao Xiaoyun proceeded to have her dinner quietly. Whenever Yue Zhong initiated a sentence, she would reply with a sentence. This continued all the way till the meal ended.

After dinner, Gao Xiaoyun looked to Yue Zhong and said: "Yue Zhong-gege! Can you come with me?"

Yue Zhong returned her look and said: "Sure!"

"Something's happening!!" Sun Jie and Ning Li exchanged a glance, the pair of friends broke out in satisfied smiles. Their relationship was great in the first place, and had hoped to join through marriage. It was their wish to see Yue Zhong and Gao Xiaoyun get together.

Gao Xiaoyun and Yue Zhong walked below the apartment for a few steps before she turned around and spoke out: "Yue Zhong-gege! Can you go to my mum and turn the arranged marriage down? I have someone I like already!"

Yue Zhong looked at Gao Xiaoyun and replied indifferently: "These matters, you should be the one to tell your mum!"

Sun Jie and Ning Li were on good terms. If Yue Zhong said he was the one to turn Gao Xiaoyun down, Ning Li would feel extremely bad towards Sun Jie. Yue Zhong did not want to be the bad guy in this scenario. Although Gao Xiaoyun could be considered a pretty flower, compared to Chen Yao, Zhuo Yatong, or Ji Qingwu, she could not match them at all. In Yue Zhong's heart, this Gao Xiaoyun was not even comparable to a single strand of hair on his mother's head. He was naturally unwilling to cause his mother distress.

Gao Xiaoyun looked at Yue Zhong and retorted: "Yue Zhong-gege! Don't be like this!! I won't like you! Can you be magnanimous about this? If you want to try and hold on, it makes you look bad as a man! Guys should be cooler about this. Go tell my mum that you want to decline this relationship, and in exchange, I'll get you a job. Although there aren't any formal preparation, I can introduce you to the police post!"

Yue Zhong's gaze turned cold: "Xiaoyun-meimei! You look too highly upon yourself! Please don't get me wrong, I have no feelings for you! However, if Auntie Sun and my mum insists that we try, I wouldn't mind giving it a shot. If you want to reject me, please go tell Auntie Sun yourself! I won't pester you."

In Long An County, Yue Zhong could easily find over a hundred girls with better appearances than Gao Xiaoyun. Initially he had thought she was refined and demure, however, he never expected her to be so narcissistic, and he lost all favourable impressions of her.



"Let's conclude our chat here! Good bye!" Yue Zhong left Gao Xiaoyun alone and went home.

As Yue Zhong left, Gao Xiaoyun's pretty face was distorted in anger, as she stared coldly at Yue Zhong's back, before snorting and left for her own house.

The moment Yue Zhong reached home, Ning Li came to him and ask expectantly: "How was it, son? Xiaoyun's pretty right!! Were there any feelings?"

Yue Zhong glanced at Ning Li and responded: "Mum! She said that she has someone already! We won't have any chance!"

Ning Li grumbled and consoled Yue Zhong: "She already has someone she likes? How come I didn't know that? Why didn't she say so!! This Sun Jie also! Her own daughter has already fallen for someone else but she wants to introduce her to my son. Ah, son, your mum is to be blamed for not sorting things out properly!! However, since my son's so outstanding, you're definitely able to find someone much better than Gao Xiaoyun!!"

In the eyes of parents, their own offsprings would be the best in the world, and Ning Li was no exception.

Ning Li was depressed for awhile, before she suddenly brightened up: "Oh yes! Son! Didn't you travel with that university schoolmate Ning Yuxin? Is she your girlfriend?"

Ning Yuxin had a demeanor that far surpassed Gao Xiaoyun, and in Ning Li's eyes, she was the perfect candidate.

Yue Zhong chuckled bitterly: "Mum! Why did your thoughts go to her?"

Ning Li paced about and muttered to herself: "She's too pretty though! I'm afraid it would be hard to keep her at home! If she marries in, who knows if she makes my son a cuckold. It's too bad!! Actually Gao Xiaoyun would be just nice, not too pretty or ugly! What a pity, you guys don't have the fate!"

Ning Li then said confidently: "While our household may not be rich, in this world, we're considered better off than others! Son, don't worry, with my connections, I'll definitely help you find a good wife, better than Gao Xiaoyun!"

Yue Ming's household wasn't considered rich, but as he was a civil servant, he had a steady rice bowl, and it was considered decent.

It must be known that with the problem of tight rations, plus that everybody was still reliant on the mercy relief of gruel rations, in a society where many women would sell their own bodies for just a bun and the selling of one's own children for food was common, marrying into a household with a steady ration was considered the dream of many ladies.

Yue Zhong saw that Ning Li was about to start nagging, and he massaged his throbbing head and changed the topic: "Mum! I'm going to bed!!"

"En! The mattress is ready! Go have a good rest!"

Ning Li just responded simply, before muttering to herself again: "The Chens' daughter is still too young. As for the Qins...no, she's not good looking. The young lady of the Luos' can be considered pretty, but she's a bit short. The Li' daughter is too old, already hitting 26!"

It's truly tough to be a parent. As Ning Li was pondering over the issue of a daughter-in-law, Yue Zhong was sleeping comfortably. He had been fighting non-stop and killed countless enemies. Even when he was in bed with the beauties in his life, his heart still longed to see his parents. Now that he has seen them alive and well, he slept extremely soundly.

"Time for breakfast!"

Early the next morning, Yue Zhong came to the table, and saw that there were 3 bowls of porridge and 3 half buns.

"Mum! These are items I found outside in villages!!" Yue Zhong looked at the contents on the table, before going back to the room, and pulled out flour, rice, various canned foods, digestive biscuits, milk, chocolates, cigarettes and other foods from his bag.

Ning Li looked in astonishment at the assortment of items, and smiled happily: "Great!! Great!! My son is truly capable! Haha!!"

Amongst those food in Yue Zhong's bag, if they were to be measured against Yue Ming's salary, it could be said that they were worth at least half a year of wages.

Yue Ming looked at the food that Yue Zhong brought out, and pulled out 4 green tickets and handed them to Yue Zhong: "Here's tickets for 40jin of food! Go rest and have fun these 2 days! After that, I'll bring you for interviews. Heading out to find stuff is too dangerous. If you're not careful, you won't make it back alive. It's better if you stay inside here and find some work, and work hard. Next time, you can become a government personnel."

Yue Zhong received the tickets, and smiled at Yue Ming, before turning and heading out: "I got it! I'll be heading out first!"

After leaving his house, Yue Zhong pondered for awhile, and decided not to summon anybody as he left towards the market on his own.

# Chapter 393: Market

---

The market in Guilin City was bustling, and many different food vendors were peddling their cooking.

"Mutant Pig Meat Skewers! Delicious Mutant Pig Meat Skewers! Each stick is 2 meal ticket! It's absolutely delicious, and worth the buy!!"

"Authentic Ning County snacks! They're mouth watering, come and have a taste people!!"

"....."

Along the streets, there were many stalls run by food vendors, and countless passersby would be drawn by the aroma, as they pulled out food tickets to exchange for different foods to try.

In Guilin City, with the governance of a 2-factions cabinet, as well as the soldiers of Du Shanxiong who patrolled the surroundings of Guilin City to maintain peace and security, it gave the city the chance to slowly grow.

Along the way, Yue Zhong realised that the 40 jin worth of food tickets could exchange for about 400 RMB prior to the apocalypse. In a world where the economy had almost collapsed, such a sum was considered huge.

Yue Zhong followed the paths and weaved in and out of streets until he came to the busiest street Xinyang Street, to discover that there were stalls set up everywhere, displaying all sorts of Mutant Plants and Mutant Beast meat and bones. Even the hides and anything to do with mutant lifeforms were sold here.

These items were brought by powerful lone warriors, or the small squads that were assembled to scavenge for items on the outside. As long as even ordinary humans made preparations, using simple melee tools were enough to hunt a huge Mutant Beast. This intelligence and craftiness was the reason why the

human race had been oppressing everything else before the apocalypse.

"How are you selling this?" Yue Zhong walked to a stall, and picked up a nuclei with properties unknown and asked the vendor. He had seen with a single glance that this nuclei was most likely obtained from a Mutant Beast of above Level 40. So far, the only usage that Yue Zhong had discovered of such nuclei was that they could be used to power up other Mutant Beasts, giving them room to grow and evolve.

The stall vendor glanced at Yue Zhong, and shook out of his stupor, opening a price with excitement: "5-jin ticket!!"

At first, everyone had thought that these nuclei from Mutant Beasts were some treasures, however with the passing of time, no one discovered a use for them. They were soon reduced to ornaments and decorations. There were even cases of squads directly throwing them away when hunting Mutant Beasts.

Yue Zhong frowned as he rejected the offer: "Such an item just looks nice! How can you open with such a high price? These are just used for decor after all, 1-liang ticket, will you sell?"

The vendor started employing all his tactics to try and promote his goods: "Boss, while these items are useless, and are just for looks, see how pretty it is! It may not have any use now, but who knows, after things are stabilized, it might be even more valuable than a bloodstone!! Invest in it now, after the prices shoot up, you're sure to make a fortune! If it wasn't for the fact that I'm in dire straits, I wouldn't sell them!! Since you are interested in them, I'm willing to give you a discount for it. 2-jin ticket!"

Yue Zhong seemed to hesitate, before he pulled out a 10-jin ticket and handed it to the vendor: "Alright! 2-jin ticket it is!"

"Fool! In this world, these pretty stones would be at most worth 1-liang or 2. This young idiot!" The stall vendor received the payment with glee and celebrated silently as he mocked Yue Zhong

in his heart.

The vendor handed the nuclei and 8-jin ticket to Yue Zhong before asking warmly: "Oh yes!! Boss!! Do you want more of them? If you do, I can help you get some more!! If you want 10 and more, I can give you 80% discount on them!!"

In this market, everyone knew the selling price for a nuclei was at most a few liangs, and it was rare to find an unsuspecting sheep to fleece. He had thus become excited. In this Guilin City, there were many survivors who had managed to escape to this place, and they understood the suffering of insufficient rations. Under these circumstances, many would stoop low to earn more tickets for themselves.

Yue Zhong pretended to consider, before nodding: "En! Ok, I'll take 20 then! Having more wouldn't make a difference!"

"20!! Please wait!" The vendor beamed, and responded with a single sentence, as he abandoned his worthless stand, asking someone to man it for him, while he ran through the crowd of the market.

Not long after, the vendor came running back with a huge bag, revealing an assorted group of nuclei: "Boss!! There's a total of 36! Please double check!"

Yue Zhong pretended to be shocked: "Didn't I ask for just 20. Why did you bring 36?"

The vendor cajoled Yue Zhong: "Boss! You're a businessman, how can 20 be enough? The 36 in here is the entire amount of this street. Once you buy them over, you're the monopoly of the nuclei business! By then, when the prices rise, you can call the price!! Even if you were to sell each for 20jin, no one would dispute!! If you can do such a business, your family will also look up to you!"

Yue Zhong put on a face as though he was won over, and handed the 40 jin ticket to him: "Makes sense!! Alright, I'll buy them all!"

The vendor took the 40 jin tickets and had an ugly expression: "This... this doesn't seem to be enough!"

"Is this enough then?" Yue Zhong chuckled and pulled out a pouch of Chinese tobacco and handed it to the vendor.

The vendor immediately grabbed it and responded hastily: "Enough!! Enough!! They're all yours!!"

In Guilin City, as the manufacturing of tobacco had stopped, tobacco was considered a luxury good, and only the upper echelons of society got to enjoy them. If the vendor brought this Chinese tobacco to the government to exchange, it would be worth at least 100 jin. Just gaining this was a huge profit for the vendor already.

Yue Zhong looked at the vendor: "Since you've accepted my tobacco, then my ration tickets...."

The vendor grinned in happiness as he gripped the tobacco tightly, passing the ration tickets back to Yue Zhong: "Take it back!! Take it all back!!"

Yue Zhong laughed and took the bag as well as his tickets. With the bag of nuclei, he could rear another Type 2 Mutant Beast. However, they were harder to control, he could only choose to push Lightning into a Type 3 Mutant Beast, before evolving one of the little brothers of Lightning.

"Hold it!!"

Right at this time, the soft yet bright voice of a young girl rang out, as Yue Zhong turned to the source of the voice, he saw a teenage girl of about 17 or 18, with exceptional looks and her long hair in a ponytail. Her lithe body was wrapped in black Mutant Beast hide, and she had a Dark Magic Blade hanging by her waist. Her eyes were full of spirit, and she exuded a heroic aura. She was currently flanked by 6 other males as she came over.

Yue Zhong looked at the young beauty and arched his brows as he asked: "What's the matter?"

Chen Qianhong had a domineering tone as she spoke to Yue Zhong: "The nuclei in your hands! I will buy them all! Don't worry, I, Chen Qianhong, will not let you get the short end of the stick! Whatever you used to buy it, I'll buy it from you at 3 times the price!"

"3 times!! Damn it!! Damn it!! Why did I sell so fast! If only I was a little slower! 3 times!! Ah!!!" The vendor was currently full of regret as he muttered to himself.

Yue Zhong looked coldly at Chen Qianhong and declined: "Not selling!"

A suave young man beside her who was decked in designer clothes, with a slightly pale face, frowned as he shouted at Yue Zhong: "What gall!! Do you know who this lady is?"

Yue Zhong's brows arched, and challenged the pale-face young man: "I don't know and I don't care! This is something I bought! Don't tell me you guys want to rob? Or that in Guilin City has no regards for rules and regulations? We can do whatever we want to, is that it?"

"You...." The pale-faced man became speechless upon Yue Zhong's retort, feeling that he lost face and could not help wanting to threaten Yue Zhong.

"Dan Yu!! Don't be rash! He's right! The goods are his! It's his right not to sell! We can't force him!" Chen Qianhong waved her hand as she blocked the path of the brash young man with obvious ill intent. She casted a deep look at Yue Zhong and scoffed: "Brat! If you don't want to sell then it's fine! It's not like you can eat them anyway! Also! Guilin City is a place of law and order, don't spout nonsense! Let's go!"

Chen Qianhong reprimanded Yue Zhong in a self-righteous tone, shooting him a dirty look, before turning around in a proud manner and left with her 6 lackeys.



Yue Zhong looked at the pompous and self-righteous figure leaving, and turned to ask the stall vendor: "Who is that Chen Qianhong? What an attitude!"

The vendor proceeded to explain to Yue Zhong patiently: "You haven't heard of her? She's the daughter of our Guilin City's mayor Chen Ying! Although she is really arrogant, she is still decent. Whenever she buys something, she would always pay fairly. But, that Dan Yu guy you offended beside her is not a good thing. His father is the District Head of Xinyang District, and he himself has some ties with the Green Bamboo Gang. Whoever in this street offends him, would be dragged away by people to be beaten up. You better leave quickly!!"

Yue Zhong had given the stall vendor good business, hence he wasn't stingy with his information.

"Green Bamboo Gang! Interesting!!" Yue Zhong laughed, and didn't seem to mind, before striding off. Even the Heaven Sect had fallen at his hands, a small gang allowed by the government to exist wouldn't pose a problem to him.

Dan Yu followed Chen Qianhong for a while, waiting for her to check out another stall before stepping to a side.

A man swiftly arrived in front of Dan Yu.

Dan Yu looked at the man and gave an order coldly: "Go get some men from Boss Zhao at the Green Bamboo Gang, and go teach that bastard a lesson! Get those nuclei from his hands also! Quickly!"

"Yes! Young master!" The servant responded quickly and left in a flash.

Dan Yu looked coldly at the direction which Yue Zhong had left, and snorted coldly: "Want to go against me? Looking to die!"

Yue Zhong walked about in Xinyang Street for quite a while, arriving at the 2nd Street, and noticed that there were stalls set up here as well. However, the crowd was noticeably lesser, with only

about 100 stalls. In front of those stalls though, there were many people gathered.

Yue Zhong came to one of the stall, and noticed that the stall displayed only a [Shadow Steps] skillbook as well as a Tang Replica Sword.

"Level 2 Skill [Shadow Steps]! Exchanging for a Level 3 [Strength Consolidation]. Or a Level 3 Strength-type treasure! Level 1 Tang Replica Sword, exchanging for 50 tonnes of rations! Or a Level 2 Strength-based Equipment! Don't haggle, those who can't afford them, scram!"

On the table of that stall, there were those 2 System treasures, at the same time, there was a banner on top with those words.

"Isn't the price of the Tang Replica Sword too expensive! Can you lower the price?"

"How about I purchase the Skill Book with 10 tonnes of rations?"

"....."

As the people gathered around the stall, many tried to haggle. A number of them wanted to use rations and other similar items to exchange for the System equipment, especially the Tang Replica Sword, which was the key starting point for enhancement. They competed aggressively, before a middle-aged man used 50 tonnes of rations to purchase the Tang Replica Sword.

Although there were only about 100 stall vendors, they all took out precious System equipment for exchange with items they wanted.

In Guilin City, with close to 900,000 survivors, the number of Enhancers grew with the passing of time, and they grew stronger as well. Hence, there was a market of exchange amongst these Enhancers. The bulk of items traded in this Xinyang 2nd Street were God & Devil System Equipment, and although they were normal items, the scene caused Yue Zhong to be wide-eyed with

surprise.

Yue Zhong continued walking and looking around, before he came to a stop and his eyes shone: "Ah! A decent treasure! Someone was actually willing to bring this equipment out!"

"Level 3 Treasure: Sapphire Ring, upon equipping, +1 to all attributes."

Although the Sapphire Ring gave +1 to all attributes, the drop rate of this Sapphire Ring was extremely low. Yue Zhong had hunted so many zombies, and Mutant Beasts, but had never come across it. Furthermore, its enhancements did not clash with other rings, and Yue Zhong immediately set his mind on buying it.

Right at this time, the familiar female voice that Yue Zhong heard earlier resounded beside him, as Chen Qianhong walked up to the stall in her black suit, her face icy-cold as she asked: "How much for this Sapphire Ring?"

## Chapter 394: Conflict Arises

---

The young man, who was dressed in black, replied indifferently: "A Necklace only! I want a Level 3 and above Agility-based Necklace, trading One for one!"

Chen Qianhong thought for awhile, before she pulled out a Ring of Fireball from her bag, a Ring of Ice Pick, as well as a Dark Magic Blade, placing them in front of the young man in black and asked earnestly: "I don't have a Level 3 Agility-based Necklace. How about I use these 3 items to exchange for that Sapphire Ring of yours?"

The young man immediately rejected it coolly: "Not exchanging!"

Dan Yu's face turned ugly, and stepped forward to threaten: "Oei! What kind of tone is that! Do you know whos she is? Do you not want to live to see tomorrow's daylight?!"

The young stall vendor immediately pulled out a Dark Magic Blade, as a dark force coagulated atop the blade, causing a sense of fear to arise in those who looked at it. The young man pointed the blade at Dan Yu, and barked out coldly: "Scram!"

A strong surge of killing intent billowed out from the young man, enveloping Dan Yu, who immediately turned pale. He retreated a few steps, and plopped down weakly on his backside, trembling as he stammered: "You can't kill me!! My dad is the District Chief Dan Hong!"

Hearing this, all the stall vendors around gathered together, as they glared at Dan Yu with a ferocious glint in their eyes. The killing intent from all the stall vendors became extremely heavy, and the tension in the air was palpable.

In this 2nd Street of Xinyang, there was an unspoken rule, which was that regardless of background, whoever came here had to deal according to the vendor's wishes. If anyone wanted to forcefully

rob, use their authority to override the vendors, or even force a deal, all the Enhancers would immediately step forwards to get rid of the troublemaker. Hearing the retarded words from Dan Yu, each and every single Enhancer on site who was Level 10 and above, stood up to stare at Dan Yu and Chen Qianhong's group.

"Friends! Please keep your weapon! This time, it was my friend that did not know the rules, and he's ignorant! I will apologize on behalf of him." Chen Qianhong bowed deeply towards the young man in apology.

Chen Qianhong then sternly said: "However! Guilin City is a lawful society! Please sheathe your weapon, and use your strength on the zombies and Mutant Beasts, not on your fellow humans!"

The young man in black stared coolly at Chen Qianhong, and kept his Dark Magic Blade, before sitting down quietly without a word.

The rest of the vendors scattered back to their stalls, not congregating together. After all, everyone wanted to earn a living here in Guilin City. As long as they weren't forced to the extreme, they didn't want to antagonize the government. Unless of course they were willing to abandon their life here and go back to the wilderness.

Chen Qianhong heaved a sigh of relief upon seeing this. If these 100 some odd Enhancers were to band together, they were a force not to be underestimated. Especially since there were a number that were above Level 30. If they were to go crazy and create chaos in the city, it would definitely cause major problems.

Dan Yu stood up from the ground, as he thanked Chen Qianhong: "Thanks, Xiaohong\*!!"

Chen Qianhong frowned as she snapped at Dan Yu: "Dan Yu! If you're going to be like this, just stay away from me in the future!"

Dan Yu had grown up spoilt and was accustomed to being

domineering over others. After the apocalypse set in, his dad had gained power, and it caused him to be even more overbearing.

"Yes!! Yes!!" Dan Yu recoiled, and hung his head. He was always bullying the weak while fearing the strong, and since Chen Qianhong's father was more powerful than his own, he could only lower his head to her.

At this time, Yue Zhong came forward and brought out his Necklace of Hurricane, before handed it to the black-robed young man: "I have a Level 3 Necklace of Hurricane, to be traded for your Sapphire Ring. Will you exchange?"

The young man received the Necklace and inspected it carefully, before throwing the Sapphire Ring to Yue Zhong: "Deal!"

Dan Yu looked towards Yue Zhong, and his expression turned grim as he barked out "You again!!"

Yue Zhong did not even glance at Dan Yu, as he took up the Sapphire Ring and went to another store, treating Dan Yu as though he was air.

Chen Qianhong furrowed her eyebrows and reprimanded Dan Yu: "Dan Yu, for once, just shut up!"

When he was scolded by Chen Qianhong, Dan Yu immediately bowed his head, and his face twisted with fury. Anyone would be pissed when scolded like a dog.

Chen Qianhong looked at Yue Zhong deeply, before she turned around and left. She was extremely beautiful and exuded a noble aura, and her background was decent. Be it before the apocalypse or after, there was no shortage of men who tried to woo her, and she had seen all the different sorts of tricks men used to get her attention. To all those attention-seekers, she would only employ the best method, which was to ignore them.

Yue Zhong walked about the market for quite a while, and other than the Sapphire Ring, the majority of the stuff sold could not

compare to his own equipment, and thus he had no plans of purchasing anymore.

Yue Zhong walked about idly, before settling at a small eatery that was popular with the crowd.

"2 bowls of dumplings!!"

"1 bowl of vegetarian noodles please!!"

The eatery was packed full of customers as they hollered their orders.

A number of the waiters and waitresses bustled about as they walked to and fro, serving the food and cleaning the tables of the customers who left.

Yue Zhong waited for quite a long time, before a bowl of meat dumplings were delivered to his table. He took a slurp of the soup, the aroma of the meat and broth wafting into his nostrils, and he felt vitalized. He took a bite of the meat dumpling, and the juiciness of the meat exploded in his mouth, assaulting his tastebuds with the simply delicious flavour.

"This is made from the meat of a Mutant Beast! No wonder it's so fragrant!" Yue Zhong could tell immediately from a single bite, and he dug in with gusto.

Yue Zhong had already inhaled 6 of the dumplings, when a number of brutes wielding butcher knives and wooden bats entered the store noisily and shouted: "Make way!! Make way!! The Green Bamboo Gang is here on official business, those not involved scam to one side!!"

When those hooligans entered the shop, the customers were all frightened and ran out the shop.

The Green Bamboo Gang was after all one of the bigger gangs in Guilin City, and it was rumored that they were backed by a government official. They had numerous experts, and were extremely overbearing in their conduct of business. Ordinary

citizens did not dare to antagonize them.

A slightly chubby middle-aged housewife rushed out from the counter with a cajoling smile, as she tried to persuade one of the gang members, a baldy with a scorpion tattoo: "This brother!! We have already paid our protection fee for the month!!"

The bald man with the scorpion tattoo stared at her and barked out: "We're not here to collect protection fee!! Get lost to one side! Don't hinder your father I from my business!"

When she was spoken to so explosively, the housewife trembled and ran to the kitchen taking the waitresses with her.

One of the hooligans present saw Yue Zhong sitting and enjoying his meat dumplings without a care in the world and immediately reported to Scorpion-Tattoo Baldy: "Brother Green Scorpion! That's the one!"

Green Scorpion glanced at Yue Zhong and barked out an order: "It's that kid. Go! Maim one of his hands!! Let him taste the consequences of offending those he shouldn't have!!"

The hooligans immediately rushed towards Yue Zhong's position. "Just because of a disagreement, you want a hand of mine! What tyranny!" said Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong glanced at the hooligans rushing at him, and his eyes flashed with a cold gleam. Casually reaching out with a speed like a striking snake, He grabbed the hand of one of the hooligans, twisting harshly with his 6-times Strength, breaking the hooligan's arm with a clean and clearly audible snap.

"Ahh!!!" The hooligan immediately screamed out in agony at the overbearing pain.

Yue Zhong then lashed out with a kick, sending the hooligan flying back and knocking several tables away, before the unfortunate fellow spat out a mouth of fresh blood and fainted without any signs of life.



Yue Zhong then grabbed the first man's dropped machete easily, swinging down viciously at a new target. The slash caused the arm of the newly targeted hooligan to be chopped off, and a jet of blood sprayed onto the walls in a violent manner. After his attack, he kicked out and sent that same hooligan flying into the wall.

"Enhancer!! He's a high-level Enhancer!!" Seeing how casually Yue Zhong dispatched 2 of his comrades, the remaining hooligan shouted out with fear.

Enhancers possessed tremendous combat power, and weren't existences that these ordinary gang members could afford to offend! Screaming, they scrambled away towards Green Scorpion.

"This won't do! Leave something behind!"

Yue Zhong's gaze was furious and cold, as he walked right in front of Green Scorpion, throwing the blood-stained machete in front of him, saying: "It's your turn! You must be the instigator! Leave your own right arm behind! I can spare your life! Or do you want me to remove both hands myself?"

Green Scorpion looked at the blood-stained scene in the store, his body trembling uncontrollably, and he gritted his teeth and asked: "You're too damn cruel!! How can you chop off so many people's arms! Don't you know this will ruin their lives?!"

Yue Zhong looked at him mockingly: "Scum like you dare speak of cruelty to me! When you chop off people's arms, it's very fun for you guys isn't it? If I didn't have the strength, I would have been the one to suffer under you scum! You can chop people, but other people can't do the same to you? Since you aren't willing to do so, let me help you then!"

# Chapter 395: Blackmail! Mu Xiangling!

---

In truth, if they weren't in Guilin City, Yue Zhong would have exterminated them early on. Inside Guilin City, he could not just go on a killing spree and rid the world of such scum, as even though they were hooligans, if there was a sudden surge of deaths, the government would act as well.

"I'll do it myself!" Green Scorpion cried out in alarm, as he could feel the resolute intent from this terrifying man in front of him, and knew that if he didn't do it himself, both his arms would be immediately broken. At that point in time, he would become a true cripple.

Green Scorpion's right arm shook as he grabbed the blood-stained machete, and in a furious bellow, he hacked his own left shoulder, chopping his left arm off.

"Ah!!!" Green Scorpion cried out in pain, and kneeled on the floor, his forehead glistening with perspiration as he stared venomously at Yue Zhong and spat out: "Are you satisfied now?"

Yue Zhong looked at him coldly and asked: "Who told you to come after me?"

"It's that Dan Hong's son, Dan Yu!! He told us to come and fix you!!" Green Scorpion betrayed Dan Yu without a moment's hesitation, as he was currently filled with equal hatred and anger at Dan Yu for causing him to meet this devil in front of him!!

Yue Zhong maintained his cold gaze and said: "So it truly is him! You can scam now!! Don't appear in front of me again, otherwise, you guys won't live to see another day!"

"Let's go!!" Green Scorpion cried out to his men, afterwhich, he grabbed his dismembered arm and ran out.

Those who had lost their arms to Yue Zhong also quickly grabbed their arms and left.

Medical procedures had long since advanced to a stage where reattaching broken limbs was possible even before the apocalypse, by grabbing their arms, there was a chance for recovery.

Yue Zhong glanced at the store owner and his staff who were shivering while looking at him, and he pulled out a Tang Replica Sword and left it on the table: "My apologies for causing problems for your store! Treat this Tang Replica Sword as my compensation!"

This single Tang Replica Sword was easily worth 50 tonnes of rations. Even if it were on sale, it would command at least 10 tonnes of rations. 10 tonnes of rations was enough for this store to open up another 2 more branches.

The store owner's eyes gleamed as he rushed to grab the Tang Replica Sword, and he gratefully reminded Yue Zhong: "Esteemed hero!! The Green Bamboo Gang don't have a single decent person, since you have thoroughly offended them today, please take care of yourself! There are powerful Enhancers amongst them as well!"

"I got it! Thanks!"

After which, Yue Zhong left the store with big strides.

"Brother Green Scorpion!! What do we do? Do we just forego this? I'm unwilling to let this go!!" One of the hooligans spat out with extreme anger.

Green Scorpion's face was also twisted in anger as he roared out: "Of course not!! Bastard!! That bastard dares to go against us! The Green Bamboo Gang!! I must bury him!!"

Green Scorpion growled poisonously: "Go notify Court Leader Hu!! Let Court Leader Hu deal with him!! We must kill this bastard!!"

With the absence of a limb, Green Scorpion's combat ability was reduced by half. His position within Green Bamboo Gang would definitely drop and his future was looking bleak. His heart was

currently filled with bitterness and anger. He had never once thought how his victims had feel when they faced the same plight, instead he only knew that he had been crippled by someone stronger, and he was filled with thoughts killing Yue Zhong and Dan Yu.

After leaving the store, Yue Zhong came across a young pretty girl of about 11 - 12 years, her hair tied up in pigtails. Her eyes were big and watery, her skin fair and tender. She was about 1.48m, and her limbs were slender and beautiful, giving her a frail appearance, that sense that with a good squeeze her bones might snap any moment.

The little loli blocked Yue Zhong's path and exclaimed: "Big Brother!! I lost my teddy bear! Can you help me find it?"

Yue Zhong glanced at the little loli and asked: "Where did you lose it?"

The loli pointed to a dark alley and said: "There!! I dropped my teddy bear somewhere there!"

Yue Zhong's mind was on alert, but he put on a smile and said: "Sure! Let's help you!"

This loli came out of nowhere and was suspicious, thus Yue Zhong suspected that she could be part of a trap set for him by his enemies. He wasn't afraid, however. As long as he was on alert, even if an enemy that was stronger than him was to appear, it would be hard to deal with Yue Zhong.

The loli just gave Yue Zhong an extremely sweet smile and said: "Thank you Big Brother!!"

"It's alright!" Yue Zhong naturally patted her shoulders. If she was an enemy, there would be a reaction from that seemingly harmless pat.

However, Yue Zhong's hand reached the shoulder of the loli without resistance, and as long as he willed it, he could crush her

neck instantly.

"Big Brother?" The loli had no strange reaction however, and just turned around innocently to look at Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong continued without skipping a beat: "There was a worm on your shoulders earlier!"

"Oh! Thank you Big Brother! Xiangling's most afraid of bugs! Oh right Big Brother, my name is Mu Xiangling! What's your name?" Mu Xiangling tilted her head curiously and asked Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong replied: "I'm Yue Zhong!"

"Oh! So it's Yue Zhong-gege!"

Mu Xiangling and Yue Zhong came to the small alley, when she suddenly leapt into Yue Zhong's embrace, and used those huge round eyes of hers to look at Yue Zhong, her face an expression of shyness as she spoke: "Yue Zhong-gege! Xiyu, Xiyu likes Yue Zhong-gege!! Yue Zhong-gege!! You must like Xiyu too right!"

Mu Xiangling had pounced into Yue Zhong's embrace, and her hands reaching for Yue Zhong's zip with practiced ease.

"What's going on?" Yue Zhong was filled with questions, he had not sensed any killing intent from Mu Xiangling, and he was questioning himself if had suddenly become heaven-defyingly handsome, as why would there be a random loli that just pounced on him?!\*

Just as Yue Zhong was at a loss, Mu Xiangling pulled out a handphone and quickly took a picture of them, before leaping off his body, and her face instantly changed to one of disgust, spitting: "It's enough now! Perverted lolicon! You can get up!! A 100-jin ration ticket!! Give me that and I'll forego this matter, otherwise I'll go develop this picture and start handing it out! You will be scorned by the people here and will never have a place in society again! Even the police will keep looking for you!!"

Mu Xiangling spoke with scorn: "A 100-jin ration ticket in

exchange for a secure position in society! It's a decent bargain! You'd better not think about using force to snatch my phone away! On the other end of this street, there's a police post! If I were to scream out now, and then tear my clothes, you will become a pervert who tried to rape a child! Although there are many useless bums at the police post, there are a few decent ones there. I'm sure you don't want to be caught! The moment you're caught, you're dead meat!!"

"Blackmail!!" Hearing those words, Yue Zhong finally understood what had happened to him. He was tricked into an extortion scam by this shrewd little loli.

Yue Zhong glanced coolly at the loli who had seemingly become a different person, as his expression turned black, asking: "Seeing how smooth you were, you must have done this countless times?"

Mu Xiangling's eyes flashed with anger, as she used a tone that belied her age and she spat out: "Men are all perverted creatures! Treat them a little nicely, and their true colours are shown, they even feel good about themselves. You really think you're the reincarnation of Pan An? Wake up! The heavens would not drop freebies for the likes of you. Hand up the 100-jin ration ticket obediently, and I will delete the photo in front of you. I've always conducted my business properly."

"Who would have thought that I would be schooled by a little loli!! However, Mu Xiangling, you seem to have gotten something wrong! About who's the hunter, and who's the hunted!!" Yue Zhong stared at Mu Xiangling, as his pupils shrunk, and he activated his [Art of Fear].

The tyrannical Spirit attack launched at Mu Xiangling, and she was instantly enveloped in a terrifying illusion, as her body froze in terror, so much so that she could not move. Although she could see what happened to her, her body had no way of responding.

Yue Zhong casually retrieved the handphone from Mu

Xiangling's hands and deleted the photo, before stuffing it back into her hands, and deactivating the skill.

"So your a high-level Enhancer!!" The moment Mu Xiangling was pulled out of the illusion, she muttered with dejection.

Enhancers were powerful existences. Mu Xiangling was an ordinary human, and had no way of retaliating.

"That's right! I'm a high-level Enhancer!" Yue Zhong chuckled lightly, and in a wave, Mu Xiangling's handphone had appeared back in his hands. In that second, he had easily snatched her phone right in front of her.

Yue Zhong reached out and pinched her cheek, before giving her 3 candies and a 20-jin ration ticket:" Brat! Don't do such things in the future! Not everyone is reasonable like me! If you had really met those strong perverts, you would not be able to do anything in front of them. This is for you! Go home and lead a proper life!"

After this, Yue Zhong turned around to leave the alley. Everyone had their own principles and way of life, and while he had stopped her once, he could not stop her every time. There were many things he had to do, and could not waste time on a random loli he had just met.

## Chapter 396: It's A Deal!

---

"Wait up!!" Mu Xiangling ran up to Yue Zhong, and opened her arms wide to block Yue Zhong's path again.

Yue Zhong cocked his eyebrows and drawled: "Little rascal! Don't ask for a yard when given an inch!\*"

Mu Xiangling looked at Yue Zhong with those huge beautiful eyes of hers, as a complicated gleam flashed in her gaze: "Yue Zhong, since you're a high-level Enhancer, you must have the capability, and you must be rich, right?"

Regardless of where or what faction, high-level Enhancers led very decent lives. This was common knowledge, and any faction would do well to win Enhancers over to their side. This was simply because Enhancers possessed incredible combat power, be it hunting zombies, Mutant Beasts or killing other humans, they were considered experts. A powerful Enhancer with tyrannical strength could easily change the flow of a battle.

Yue Zhong nodded: "That's right!"

Mu Xiangling stared fixedly at Yue Zhong, and in a serious tone that did not match her age: "Then, please buy me!! I'm pretty, and am still a virgin! I can cook, wash, shop for groceries, manage your books, whatever! As long as you buy me, once I'm older, I can become your woman, no questions asked! If you really can't wait, you can have me now. Even if you want to give me away as a present once you buy me, it's fine as well!! You want me to be a doll, I'll be a doll! Whatever ways you want to play with me, it's all doable! As long as you can offer a good enough price!!"

Yue Zhong returned her stare and asked slowly: "What is the price to buy you then?"

Mu Xiangling did possess extraordinary looks, and when she grows up in the future, it was very possible that she could be on the



same level of beauty as Guo Yu or Chen Yao. Yue Zhong could be considered the leader of over a few ten thousands of survivors over at Guangxi, and the only beautiful loli that he had come across was that Ning Ruozhi, who was extremely adept at acting cute to gain his favour. As long as it was a reasonable price, he was willing to buy over this girl.

"Follow me!!" Mu Xiangling immediately turned around and walked away.

The moment she left the dark alleyway, she quickly raised her hand to tousle her hair, and then randomly grabbed some dirt off the ground to smear across herself. In just a few motions, an originally cute and pretty little girl transformed into a dirty and unbecoming little beggar.

Regardless of how beautiful a person can be, a messy and dirty appearance would belie her true appearance. Such a disguise was simple and crude, but extremely effective.

Yue Zhong observed her silently, it was obvious that this little loli knew how to protect herself, and had plenty of experience in surviving in this society. If it wasn't for Yue Zhong, she might have gotten yet away with another day's haul.

After her quick transformation into a little beggar, she brought Yue Zhong through random streets, before arriving at a dilapidated slum area, where the water was downright murky and rancid, and a horrible stench was present everywhere.

After tunneling about the different complicated alleys, Mu Xiangling and Yue Zhong arrived at an extremely rundown old room, as she pulled out a key to open the door.

The moment the door was pushed open, a strong medicinal scent wafted from within the house. Yue Zhong looked towards the direction of the smell, and saw a woman whose entire face looked swollen, her original features indistinguishable, and her body wrapped in blankets as she laid on a small bed.

"Mum! I'm back! Wait for a moment, I'll go prepare medicine for you!" Mu Xiangling walked to the woman, and got a cup of water as she fed her gently, before walking into the kitchen and started making medicine again.

Yue Zhong looked at the bedridden woman, who could not even make a sound, and could roughly guess the price of buying Mu Xiangling. He looked about the room.

In the room, there was practically nothing, just a small desk, a bed, and 2 chairs. On the small desk, there were a few middle-grade books placed neatly.

Although the house was sparse, it was tidy and clean. Everything inside seemed to be free of dust, and it could be seen that the little master of this house was efficient at cleaning.

Hardworking, gentle, dedicated, efficient, tidy, these were the qualities Yue Zhong noted about Mu Xiangling just by taking in his surroundings. These, as well as the earlier act of pretending to be cute, trying to trick him, as well as her street-smart.

After brewing the medicine, Mu Xiangling fed her mother with great care, before changing her adult diapers. She washed some clothes and wiped down her body, as she then fed her porridge. Mu Xiangling bustled about for an entire hour, before heaving a sigh of relief, and bit into a biscuit as she sat beside Yue Zhong.

Mu Xiangling looked at Yue Zhong, as she maintained her serious tone and said: "As long as you can treat my mum's illness, and leave her with 30-tonnes ration tickets! I will be yours! I know that the 30 tonnes amount is not little, as you can easily get a woman outside with just a 100-jin ration ticket. However, I'm pretty, and young, as well as a virgin! I'm great with household chores, and am athletic. Such a great bargain for 30-tonnes rations!! As long as you can buy me, I will listen to you only! Even if you wanted to kill me, I'd have no complaints! Will this do?"

Yue Zhong looked at Mu Xiangling who had been promoting

herself non-stop: "30 tonnes of rations is not an issue! However, I'm not a doctor, and I have no confidence of healing her entirely. Furthermore, you have not told me what's wrong with her."

30 tonnes of food wasn't something difficult for Yue Zhong to obtain. As long as he went to the 2nd Street of Xinyang and exchanged some System equipment, he could easily get the 30 tonnes. However, the main thing was that he wasn't a doctor, and he had no confidence of healing Mu Xiangling's mother.

It did not seem to be an external injury for Mu Xiangling's mother, and hence, the Life-Saving Grass which was effective for external wounds would not help her.

Mu Xiangling's eyes turned red, as tears started to drip on the ground. She thought back to the events that had happened at the start of the apocalypse, and started crying: "I heard the doctor saying that Mum's illness is due to a problem with her immunity. She could not defend against the various bugs and bacteria in the air, and hence, she had become like that. It's all because of me!! Mum had passed everything good to me to eat, and she didn't eat anything, that must be the reason for the problems in her immunity! It's all my fault! My fault!!"

Yue Zhong frowned, and assessed the situation silently to himself: "Problems with immunity? Then items that enhance or strengthen the body should be able to correct the immunity problem, probably?"

In Yue Zhong's possessions, there were currently 2 incredible treasures that can greatly enhance a person's constitution. One was the Snake Birth Fruit juice, that could directly cause a person to become an Evolver, and the other was the 'Ou Ming Ver 1', made from the blood essence, brain cells, and the rare Mutant Plants. These 2 were equally precious, and Yue Zhong would usually only gift those subordinates who pledge steadfast loyalty to him.

Yue Zhong was also human, and he hesitated a while, seeing that

the solution to the problem was expending either of his precious items on a woman he had just seen for the first time. Other than that, there was the crucial point, which was, it was just Yue Zhong's assessment. If any of those 2 items were to have no effect on the poor woman, then not only would he lose 2 valuable liquids, but even Mu Xiangling would not be his. It was truly a gamble.

Mu Xiangling was intelligent and perceptive, she could feel Yue Zhong's hesitation, as she pounced into his arms and cried pitifully while begging: "Yue Zhong-gege!! Please, please save my mum! You must have a way right? You're so strong, you definitely must have a way right?!"

"I do have something! It can allow an ordinary person to instantly become an Evolver! This treasure may heal your mum, and can transform her into an Evolver. Or it could have no effect, and your mum might not even be able to withstand the effects of it and die. I'm not a doctor, and I have no means of ascertaining if this thing of mine is able to help your mum. The decision to use it lies on you!"

Yue Zhong flipped his hand, and a vial of the Snake Birth Fruit juice appeared in his hands. He looked at Mu Xiangling and said indifferently: "Little brat! I'm not a philanthropist, this is after all a precious resource that can Evolve a person. You know how valuable this is. It's value exceeds even a thousand tonnes of rations. The moment you decide to use this, regardless of the result, you are mine. As for your mum, if she does survive this, she is to become my subordinate and fight for me! If you don't agree, I won't force you! You can go find other people to buy you!"

"Evolver!!" Mu Xiangling heard this, and the words shook her heart. She had heard from accounts of other people, that Evolvers were the favored children of Heaven, and their combat power was way over ordinary Enhancers. The moment a single Evolver appeared, many factions would clamor to curry favor and provide resources, just to raise a single Evolver.

Of the 900,000 people in Guilin City, the naturally awakened Evolvers were less than a hundred, each and every single one of them were famous experts. Even Mu Xiangling who belonged to the lowest caste of society had heard of their miracles. Ordinary people wished to become Enhancers, while Enhancers wished to become Evolvers.

A naturally awaked Evolver happened at the odds of 1:10,000. Of course, some places had more, while other places had less. The more humans there were, the chances of an Evolver happening is more likely.

The moment Mu Xiangling heard that her mother could become an Evolver, she became excited. However, she held herself in check, and thought carefully. The medicine in Yue Zhong's hand had no guarantee of saving her mother, and she became conflicted again.

Mu Xiangling looked at the Snake Birth Fruit juice in Yue Zhong's hands, and hesitated a moment, before gritting her teeth and reaching out with her palm: "I'm yours!"

Mu Xiangling took the vial of Snake Birth Fruit juice and opened it up, as she stuck out her small pink tongue to taste the liquid.

The moment that little drop of Snake Birth Fruit Juice entered her body, it transformed into a hot wave of energy and circulated within her body.

"Congratulation! You have gained an enhancement of 1 point in Spirit."

A System notification suddenly resounded within Mu Xiangling's mind.

"This is a true treasure!! He did not lie to me!!" Mu Xiangling finally let go of the concerns in her heart, and poured the contents of the glass vial into her mother's mouth.

As the Snake Birth Fruit juice entered the body of Mu Xiangling's

mother, it began its tyrannical body-changing transformation, rapidly altering every single part of her body. She started to ooze huge amounts of perspiration, foul blood, impurities, and an unbearable stench started to emit from her. At the same time, her swollen face was flushed red, as she opened her mouth to gasp for air.

"What's going on?" Mu Xiangling was horrified at her mother's condition, and grabbed Yue Zhong's hands, as she stared at Yue Zhong furiously. Her mother, who was most important to her, had suddenly entered into a life-threatening condition, and she was enraged, to the point that she forgot Yue Zhong was an existence that she could not possibly stand up to.

Yue Zhong replied: "Not to worry! One day, after taking in the contents of that, she will run a fever for a day. If she can resist, then her body will regain its health, and she would become an Evolver. You stay here and look after her! I will station someone to guard the place! White Bones, come out!"\*\*

There was suddenly a distortion in space, as a hole appeared, and White Bones walked out of that hole and proceeded to stand quietly in the middle of the house and stare coldly at Mu Xiangling.

Mu Xiangling's mind churned as she saw through Yue Zhong's intentions: "You don't have to do this! Since I've agreed to be your doll, I definitely will not renege on my promise! Of course, you can watch over me, that is your choice, Master!!"

Yue Zhong replied: "Alright! Just stay here and look after your mother! I'm leaving! Tomorrow this time, I'll come for you guys!"

Mu Xiangling did not turn to look at him, as she focused only on caring for her mother, and replied: "En!"

Yue Zhong left the dilapidated slums in huge strides, and went back towards the direction of the 2nd Street of Xinyang again. There was a huge exchange of System items after all, and he had plenty of equipment gained from the bodies of his enemies, and he

could perhaps use this chance to exchange them for a few skillbooks or appropriate equipment.

The countless scattered eyes for the Green Bamboo Gang noticed Yue Zhong, and one of them hurried to a teahouse nearby.

Pretty soon, a large group gathered under the banner of the Green Bamboo Gang followed the lead of a huge man, who was roughly 1.7m tall, dressed in a black cloak, and a huge sword hung at his waist. There was a scar on his otherwise handsome face, and his eyes shone with an intelligent light. He was roughly 19, 20, and he walked to block Yue Zhong's path.

The small hooligan from Green Bamboo Gang pointed at Yue Zhong and said loudly: "It's him!! Court Leader Hu, it's him!!!"

"It's you!!" The young man saw Yue Zhong, and was taken aback, before his eyes lit up in delight.

# Chapter 397: A Reunion of Brothers

---

Yue Zhong looked at that Court Leader Hu and chuckled: "Who would have thought that we would meet like this! Little Leopard!!"

The Court Leader Hu guffawed, as his pupils shrunk, and a strong fighting intent billowed out of him, and he pulled out his huge sword from his waist, and shot towards Yue Zhong like a meteor: "Haha!! It truly is amazing!! Take my strike!!"

Yue Zhong instantly pulled out his Crocodile Tooth Saw Blade and raised it to meet Court Leader Hu's strike, his 6x Strength exploded out, and the clash between the 2 weapons resulted in a huge grating noise.

Yue Zhong was sent one step back, while Court Leader Hu took 2 steps, it was obvious that in a contest of Strength, Yue Zhong had won.

"Hahaha! You truly have become even more powerful!! However, with just this little bit of ability, you're not my match!" Court Leader Hu laughed and stepped forwards, the blade in his hand suddenly exploded with twice the speed, and his strike had a wind force that struck towards Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong's pupils retracted, and his 11x Agility exploded out. The Crocodile Tooth Saw Blade in his hand turned into a quick flash, meeting the strikes from Court Leader Hu, blow for blow.

In just a few moments, a hundred blows had been exchanged between the 2, and sparks continuously flew from the clash.

"So powerful!!" The surrounding Enhancers that had come to watch were all shocked in their hearts. Most of them were close-combat specialists, and not even 10 of them could withstand any one strike from either Yue Zhong or Court Leader Hu.

After over a hundred exchanges, both parties drew back, and smiled at each other, before sheathing their weapons.



Green Scorpion saw that things were taking an unpleasant turn, and hurried to Court Leader Hu and pleaded: "Court Leader Hu!! He's an enemy of our Green Bamboo Gang!! 10 over brothers have been crippled by him!! You must seek redress for us!!"

Court Leader Hu's facial expression immediately froze, and he lashed out with a furious kick, sending Green Scorpion flying back 7 to 8 metres: "Redress your mum!! He's my big brother! You dare offend my big brother!! If he didn't chop off your arms, I would have been the one to do it!! Scram to one side filth!"

"Hu Yi! You dare act against us just for an outsider. Do you still want to be a court leader? Go chop him apart now and I'll ignore whatever happened today!" At this time, a normal looking young man with shifty eyes stepped forwards, a dozen Green Bamboo members moved forward behind him as he barked at Hu Yi.

Green Scorpion hurriedly crawled to the feet of the newcomer and cried: "Court Leader Sheng!! Hu Yi not only protected the outsider, he also lashed out at us from the Green Bamboo!! We seek Court Leader Sheng to help us clean up the murk of the Gang!!"

Hu Yi looked at Sheng Kexi and barked: "Sheng Kexi! This daddy doesn't need your guidance in my matters! You're still lacking if you want to strip me of my authority!! Na, you know what? Why don't we settle it here! Whomever kills whomever will not need to bear responsibility! Do you dare? Little bastard!!"

Sheng Kexi was enraged as he led his men away: "Hu Yi! Bastard! Don't think just because the Leader values you, you can do however you like! You better watch out. Today's matters, I won't let it go just like that. Let's go!!"

Hu Yi spat at Sheng Kexi: "Pei! Little bastard! If it wasn't for your big bad daddy, based on your abilities, how could you become a Court Leader!" He then turned to Yue Zhong and laughed: "Brother, let us go have a drink!"

Yue Zhong chuckled lightly: "I don't drink!"

"Then a fruit juice should be fine right! Come on! My treat!!" Hu Yi laughed out and pulled Yue Zhong towards a lavish looking nightclub.

Currently, it was still daytime, but those nightclubs would still be operating, their neon lights flickering without stop, and on the dance floors, there were dozens of hot babes and dashing young men wearing revealing clothes as they gyrated provocatively.

A roughly 30-year-old lady pimp with a lingering charm and heavy make-up walked towards Hu Yi and teased: "Boss Hu! You actually came to grace us with your presence! This is an honour. Who is this?"

Hu Yi looked at the lady pimp warily and said: "This is my big bro!! Go find some pretty and clean young girls and fetch them over. Don't bring some used goods to spoil this daddy's mood, otherwise I might just slash you!"

"Yes!! Yes!!" The lady pimp was frightened and hurriedly retreated.

The moment the lady pimp left the room, there was only Yue Zhong and Hu Yi left.

Yue Zhong glanced at Hu Yi and spoke slowly: "Little Leopard, you've changed a lot!"

All those years back, Hu Yi was a coward who had been following Yue Zhong, now he had become part of the underground, and was even a person of power. His mannerism, his speech, all held thick traces of his underground links, calling out 'this daddy' here and there, even going as far as to threaten others.

Hu Yi looked at Yue Zhong and chuckled: "Bro! If we are to continue living in this world, how can we not change. Aren't you the same Bro?"

Yue Zhong turned silent for a long while, as he sighed and nodded: "It's true! I've changed plenty!"

In just a short year, Yue Zhong had morphed from a simple university student into a decisive killing machine with a heart of stone that showed no mercy to his enemies. His change could be considered the biggest of all.

Hu Yi's eyes sparkled as he reminisced: "I'm always thinking about the past, and the years that we good brothers spent together. Although now when we look back, our actions seemed childish and flippant, even rebellious! But, it was the happiest moments of my life!"

Back then, Yue Zhong, Chi Yang, Hu Yi and a few others had banded together as they fought others, played truant, confessed to girls, and done a whole bunch of stuff to impress those very same girls. They had even fought for them before. In the eyes of the teachers and their parents, other than Chi Yang whose grades were considered decent, amongst the top 20 of the school, the rest of them were just barely scraping by.

Only when they reached their secondary 3 days\*, due to a personal matter and Yue Zhong having suffered a blow, did he finally focus on his studies and managed to get into university.

After their final examinations, due to the different paths in life, these band of brothers were forcefully separated, and they could only get together again during their holidays.

Yue Zhong's eyes glazed over with a slight longing for the past as well, as he asked Hu Yi: "Huang Ziming, Chen Li, Xie Manzhi, Lin Zixian, did you manage to discover their whereabouts?"

A hint of anguish appeared in Hu Yi's eyes, as he muttered: "Huang Ziming's dead!! I saw him turn into a zombie during the onset of the apocalypse. Chen Li is in Yanjing, Xie Manzhi is in Shanghai and Li Zixian is in Nanjing, as to their current situation, I'm unsure. As for their family members, I've searched around in Guilin City, only Uncle Chen is still alive, but he's already gone mad!!"

In this apocalyptic world, other than the top government officials or military officers, ordinary citizens led very hard lives. After all, the army, armed patrol and police officers were the first line of defence for the various human settlements.

Actually, it wasn't all that surprising. Even for Yue Zhong's establishments, in times of crisis, his troops would attend to him and his subordinates first. Since time immemorial, there was not a single case where there was a deviant in terms of practices. That was why, even up to today, there would be a countless struggle for riches and power, because with riches and power, there would be privileges.

Yue Zhong hesitated before asking the tough question: "What about Chi Yang's parents?"

Chi Yang was not only Yue Zhong's closest buddy, but also the second-in-command that he trusted fully, and he hoped that there were good news for him.

Hu Yi hesitated himself before replying slowly: "I've searched the entire Guilin City! There is no news about his parents, I'm afraid they might already be dead!"

In the nearby vicinity, only Guilin City had some form of stability. If there was no news in Guilin City, then the chances of getting any news in the surrounding villages would be even lesser, almost zero.

Yue Zhong became sombre, the fact that he could reunite with his parents, was a huge blessing in itself. He could not possibly hope to find out the whereabouts of Chi Yang's parents as well.

At this time, the lady pimp came back into the private room, as she revealed a teasing smile at Hu Yi: "Boss Hu, these are some new goods we just recently obtained. They are definitely untouched, take a look, who would suit your tastes?"

6 ladies who were on the skinny side and had sallow faces, stood

beside the lady pimp. There was nothing too attractive about them.

Hu Yi laughed: "Bro, you choose first!!"

Yue Zhong eyed the 6 of them and declined: "There's no need!"

Hu Yi glanced at the 6 women, and grinned, before waving his hands in a boss-like manner towards the lady pimp: "Right! They're all subpar! Comparable to those cronies you have outside. You're all dismissed! Don't ruin the mood for us!"

"Yes! Boss!!" The lady pimp replied, and hurriedly led the 6 women away from here.

"There's not a single good lady here! While there are a few good-looking ones, they've all been toyed with countless times already! I know you don't like those, so I didn't call them over." Hu Yi explained to Yue Zhong, as he looked towards the dance floor, and grinned at Yue Zhong: "Bro! Wanna head over there and have some fun? Those chicks are not bad, they're hot and can really dance!! Whoever catches your eye, just let me know. This is my turf, as long as I say the word, they would definitely abide by your wishes!"

Yue Zhong glanced at the dance floor, before furrowing his brows, and looked at Hu Yi and became stern: "Little Leopard, is fooling about with women all you can think about nowadays? If you continue to be like this, how are you different from those underground hooligans and scum?"

Hu Yi glanced at Yue Zhong and laughed bitterly: "Brother! Your words are truly unpleasant! Am I not a hooligan, a scum of the street already?"

# Chapter 398: Gao Minghao

---

Yue Zhong became silent again, before sighing lightly.

Hu Yi had joined the Green Bamboo Gang, and was conferred the Court Leader status, from a moral standpoint, he could be considered as a huge hooligan, a degenerate.

Yue Zhong looked at Hu Yi and said: "Give me the details about the strength of the Green Bamboo Gang!"

Hu Yi became alarmed, as he looked at Yue Zhong, and asked slowly: "Bro, what are you thinking of doing?"

Yue Zhong's pupils shrunk and he stared fixedly at Hu Yi: "I want to destroy Green Bamboo Gang! Are you going to help me, or going against me?"

Yue Zhong had been best friends with Hu Yi, Chi Yang and the rest, but the human heart was susceptible to change. He was not sure how much of a bond still existed between this best friend from those years ago and him.

Hu Yi looked at Yue Zhong in a grieved manner and said: "Bro! The leader of Green Bamboo Gang Gao Minghao is my benefactor!! I can't betray him!! If you really want to destroy the Green Bamboo Gang, I can only choose not to help either sides! And, don't tell me what you're about to do! Even if you succeed, all I ask is for you to spare Gao Minghao's life!!"

Hu Yi had exchanged blows with Yue Zhong, and could tell Yue Zhong's prowess. He had known Yue Zhong for so many years, and knew that underneath that calm and collected exterior, there was a bloodthirsty nature. Back then, there were a few seniors who had spoken out of line and made Chen Li cry, Yue Zhong had then snuck into the hostel that very night, and used his fists to pummel the head of that senior, causing him to be hospitalized and required 3 stitches. If it wasn't for Chen Li's dad and his

connections, Yue Zhong could have been expelled for his violent behavior then.

Yue Zhong looked at Hu Yi, and assured him with a smile: "Fine! I'll promise you that! If I do exterminate the Green Bamboo Gang, I will leave Gao Minghao alone!"

Yue Zhong knew that Hu Yi was extremely loyal, and when they had fought in group fights in the past, while he was trembling for fear, without a word from Yue Zhong, Hu Yi had never ran away on his own before.

Gratitude must be repaid, and vengeance must be carried out! This was the sort of man that Yue Zhong befriended and valued! He would naturally not make things difficult for this brother of his.

Hu Yi heaved a sigh of relief and offered: "Bro!! It's not like the enmity is beyond salvageable! Why not let me mediate between both sides?"

On one side, there was his brother for life, on the other, was the boss that had trusted him and given him a new lease of life after the apocalypse. Hu Yi wasn't willing to let these 2 come to a clash.

Yue Zhong looked at Hu Yi and replied with a proposition of his own: "En! That's fine! On account that it's you, I'm willing to take a step back. Oh yea, Little Leopard, you wanna come over to my side and help me? I have a base at Hunan, with over 100,000 survivors and a regiment of troops. If you come over now and earn some merits, I can give you a good position."

Although Hu Yi had picked up the bad habits of the underground, he was still someone Yue Zhong could trust. If he came over, as long as he performed, Yue Zhong would reward him accordingly.

Hu Yi became excited: "100,000 survivors!! Amazing!! You never disappoint Brother! But, I'm currently still indebted to Gao Minghao, and can't go over there in the short term. Once I've

performed enough, I will definitely join you!!"

Yue Zhong did not press the matter further, and directly gave him a Snake Birth Fruit juice and 'Ou Ming Ver 1', saying: "Suit yourself! The one of the left can help a person become an Evolver! However, when you consume it, you will be incapacitated for a day. Find a quiet place to drink it, keep the location secret. Or get someone to keep watch over you. The one on the right can help evolve any skill of an Enhancer above Level 30 into a 2nd Order Skill. Drinking it also causes an entire day's worth of discomfort. You handle it yourself!"

Hu Yi received the 2 precious medicine and laughed, directly consuming the Snake Birth Fruit juice: "Thanks Bro!! Hehheh! I knew Bro would not neglect me! Haha! With these 2 babies, I'm invincible!! Haha! Bro, I'd have to trouble you to protect me!"

The moment the contents entered his abdomen, it transformed into a hot surge of energy and circulated within Hu Yi's body, causing him to pass out and burn with a fever.

Yue Zhong looked at the unconscious Hu Yi and laughed bitterly, before hoisting him up onto his back and left the nightclub.

Yue Zhong carried Hu Yi back to his own place, and when Ning Li saw it, she frowned: "Yue Zhong, isn't that Hu Yi? He's a member of that Green Bamboo Gang. They are not decent people, don't follow suit."

Yue Ming had just arrived home as well, he glanced at the unconscious Hu Yi and said solemnly: "Lay him in the room first then we'll talk."

Yue Zhong then proceeded to drop Hu Yi in his room, before coming out to the living room and sat down.

Yue Ming spoke seriously: "There's sense in your mum's words, but they're not entirely correct! You and Hu Yi can be considered to be childhood friends. However, under no circumstances should



you join that underground group. Joining those groups will ruin your future!!"

Yue Ming had a very traditional mindset, and viewed those gangs with contempt, and would definitely not allow his own child to join those places.

Yue Zhong nodded: "En! I got it!"

Yue Zhong was not planning on joining the triads, in fact, if they weren't smart enough to get the hint, he didn't mind exterminating them.

Early the next morning, Yue Zhong had just stepped out of his home.

A suave-looking young man of about 27, 28, dressed entirely in white, sporting a short hairdo, and eyes filled with intellect, walked up to Yue Zhong. He smiled and said: "How do you do Yue Zhong! I'm Gao Minghao!"

Yue Zhong returned the greeting as he looked at the handsome man, his eyes narrowing: "Hey! Yue Zhong here!"

Gao Minghao gestured to one side and asked: "Is it ok if I have a moment of your time?"

Yue Zhong nodded and followed Gao Minghao towards a small stall and they sat down.

Gao Minghao eyed Yue Zhong, as he smiled with a vibrant charm: "Yesterday's matters. I need to give an answer to my men!"

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed, and he replied indifferently, "So are you here to kill me?"

In this world, human life was cheap. Someone could lose his life over the simplest bun. Not to mention for the sake of resolving a conflict.

Gao Minghao smiled: "You and Hu Yi are good friends! He is my most trusted subordinate. I don't want to make things difficult for

him. But, at the same time, I need to seek some redress for my men. Why not join us? As long as you perform some merit, I'll handle Green Scorpion and the rest."

Yue Zhong glanced at Gao Minghao and directly declined: "No way! I will not join the Green Bamboo Gang!!"

Gao Minghao frowned a little, "En! Things might be a little difficult then!" However, he soon smiled and said: "Oh right, our Green Bamboo Gang just discovered a Type 3 Mutant Beast! We're preparing to go deal with it, Yue Zhong, if you're willing to lend us a hand, all the matters will be considered solved. Also, you won't be working for free, we'll offer the necessary compensation. How about it?"

"Type 3 Mutant Beast! The Green Bamboo Gang actually dares to face a Type 3 Mutant Beast?! Their guts are sure something!" When he heard this news, Yue Zhong was shaken, and he took a careful look at Gao Minghao, his pupils shrinking.

A Type 2 Mutant Beast was fearsome enough, and the hides of Type 2 Mutant Beasts were enough to withstand even the rounds from 25mm cannons. As strong as Yue Zhong is, he had no confidence that he could deal with a Type 3 all by himself.

Yue Zhong thought carefully before agreeing: "Sure! I'm in! But, I want a share of the blood essence, the Beast meat, brain matter and nuclei from the Type 3 Mutant Beast."

Gao Minghao shook his head and rejected: "The blood essence is ours. Other than that, the hide, bones, blood and meat are ours as well. However, if you contribute more strength, then we can share the hide, bones, blood and meat with you."

"Great!" Yue Zhong immediately agreed with the suggestion. He had seen a number of Type 2 Mutant Beasts already, but as for a Type 3, he had only seen one once, and it had teleported him to Vietnam. He did want to hunt a Type 3 with these people.

"It's a deal then! 4 days later, I'll send someone to notify you." Gao Minghao chuckled, and stood up to leave.

Yue Zhong thought silently to himself: "Seems like I need to reconsider my plans for the Green Bamboo Gang."

After a while, Yue Zhong managed to find his back to Mu Xiangling's place.

At this time, on the bed, there was a beautiful housewife of about 27, 28 who was lying, her hair black and lush, her skin shining with a lustre, and her features exquisite.

In front of that housewife, Mu Xiangling was gripping her hand tightly not letting go.

"Mr Yue Zhong, you're here! How're you, I'm Xin Jiarou, I'm Xiangling's mother!" The housewife saw Yue Zhong and struggled to get up, as she looked straight at Yue Zhong, her eyes showing a resolute gaze: "I've heard everything between you and Xiangling yesterday. Please let Xiangling go!! She's still young!"

Yue Zhong's pupils shrunk, and his tone became incredibly cold: "You guys are trying to renege on the deal!"

At that instant, 2 sharp Bone Blades extended out from White Bones' body, and in an instant, the blades appeared at the necks of the mother-daughter pair. With a single order from Yue Zhong, it would immediately decapitate the 2 of them!

Yue Zhong stared coldly at Xin Jiarou, saying: "Miss Xin Jiarou! I gave your daughter the choice yesterday. At that point, she had the option to decline. Now, you guys have used my evolving medicine, and want to back out. I'm sorry then, even if it's a waste, you guys will have to die! You wasted my damn medicine!"

# Chapter 399: Level 5 Skill Divine Speed!

---

\*Ulamog: please note that henceforth the Type 2 Skills will be Second Order Skills

If Yue Zhong was to just toss his precious Snake Birth Fruit Juice that could easily Evolve a person outside, it would cause a mayhem. Such an important resource was used up, and now, Yue Zhong was about to gain nothing from its expenditure, his anger naturally hit the roof.

Mu Xiangling cried out shrilly, as she ignored the incredibly sharp bone blade, while staring fixedly at Yue Zhong and pleaded: "No!! Don't harm my mum!! Yue Zhong-gege! Don't hurt my mum!! I didn't renege on the promise!! I'm not going back on my word!! I will be your doll, just please!! Don't hurt my mum!!"

Xin Jiarou looked at Yue Zhong with a clear expression, and she did not panic in the face of danger, instead, she spoke clearly: "Mr. Yue Zhong, I'm not saying that we will go back on our word. My meaning is, I'm willing to replace Xiangling to be your toy. Whatever your command, I will not disobey. It's just that Xiangling is currently still too young, I implore you to be patient for a few more years, let her grow up, before becoming of service to you."

Yue Zhong looked back at her, seeing that she was resolute and clear about her decision. He waved his hands, and White Bones retracted its sharp bone blades.

Yue Zhong then directly asked Xin Jiarou: "I had initially agreed to help her because she was intelligent, and filial. She would become a capable person in the future. Your worries are unfounded as I have no shortage of women. You should be an Evolver now, tell me your attributes and awakened abilities!"

Xin Jiarou heaved a sigh of relief inwardly, although she had portrayed a calm exterior, she was truly terrified in her heart.

After Evolving, her senses had become more acute, and she could tell that Yue Zhong was genuinely about to kill them earlier. This man in front of her was obviously resolute and decisive, even ruthless, if he had to be.

"I'm an Agility-based Evolver! Strength: 8, Agility: 25, Vitality: 9, Stamina: 8, Spirit: 11, Endurance: 10. I have awoken the 2nd Order Level 5 Skill: Divine Speed!"

"2nd Order Level 5 Skill: Divine Speed! The Skill is a mutation of the 2nd Order Level 4 High Speed Movement Skill. Activation requires 20 Stamina, increasing Agility by 120 points. Upon activation, Stamina would decrease by 5 points every second. Enhancing this skill requires 3 skill points!"

When Yue Zhong heard this, his face couldn't help but change, and a hint of excitement appeared in his eyes: "What! 2nd Order Level 5 Skill?!"

When most ordinary people administer the Snake Birth Fruit Juice, they would awaken an ability. Most of the time, it was a Level 3 or Level 2 Skill. Xin Jiarou was the only person Yue Zhong had encountered, who had actually awoken a 2nd Order Level 5 Skill.

"Why? Could it be because of that illness?" Yue Zhong was wondering about the possibilities as he celebrated inwardly. This sort of miraculous mutation, it could either be Xin Jiarou was a true genius, or that the illness she was suffering from had a beneficial effect when interacting with the Snake Birth Fruit Juice.

Regardless of the truth, Xin Jiarou had become an abnormally strong expert. Once she had enough Stamina to use this overpowered ability, her speed would easily overtake Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong stared at Xin Jiarou and spoke solemnly: "Very good! Xin Jiarou, from now on, you're my subordinate! From today, you will have to fight for me, with your life! Are you willing?"

Xin Jiarou immediately got down from the bed, as she got down on one knee, announcing her loyalty: "Master, from today onwards, Xin Jiarou is your slave! Whatever your orders, I will definitely carry them out without bargain or complain."

Xin Jiarou wished to use her own loyalty and diligence to protect her precious daughter.

Mu Xiangling panicked, and hugged Xin Jiarou as she pleaded with Yue Zhong: "Mama!! Don't be like this!! Yue Zhong-gege, on account of our previous transaction, my mum will only be your subordinate!! I'm your doll and toy. My mum is not your slave at all!!"

Xin Jiarou's brows creased, as her face fell and she reprimanded: "Xiangling! Be obedient! Otherwise, I'll get angry!"

When Mu Xiangling was lectured by Xin Jiarou like this, she became obedient. She had always been respectful, fearful yet loving of her mother. She had ignored all threats to herself and wasn't afraid of someone as strong as Yue Zhong, but the moment Xin Jiarou's temper switched, Mu Xiangling would become like a docile kitten.

Yue Zhong looked at Xin Jiarou and reassured her: "Xin Jiarou, there's no need for this. Your ability and potential is high, so I hope to mould you into a powerful general under my command in the future!! As long as you work hard and stay loyal to me, I will not harm you nor Xiangling."

Xin Jiarou's latent potential was truly strong, and once she grew, her speed would become the best amongst the top warriors under Yue Zhong's command. Yue Zhong also hoped for this strong Evolver to continue fighting for him with her heart, instead of being antagonistic.

Xin Jiarou was still gentle, yet firm: "Yes, Master!!"

Yue Zhong saw the Xin Jiarou was set on being like this, and

decide not to press the issue, instead taking out a bunch of mostly basic Agility-based System equipment. Yue Zhong gifted them to her, saying: "These are all God & Devil equipment. You are to wear them and take them off as little as possible."

Equipment was always of utmost import\*1 to a warrior, and a good set of equipment could boost the combat ability of any otherwise mediocre warrior. If Yue Zhong was to remove everything he wore on his person, his combat ability would decrease by more than half.

"Thank you Master for your gifts!" Xin Jiarou received the equipment graciously and immediately wore them. After equipping the gear she could feel herself becoming exponentially stronger than before.

Mu Xiangling saw her mother putting on those equipment, and ran up to Yue Zhong rather enviously. She used her huge eyes to look at Yue Zhong, while hugging one of his arms and pouting: "Biased!! Yue Zhong-gege you're biased! How can you give only Mum the good stuff? Where's mine?!"

Every single piece of equipment was traded in tonnes on the market. Mu Xiangling was like a scrooge whose eyes lit up at the sight of these equipment, and wanted them for herself as well.

\*2

Yue Zhong pinched her tiny nose and chuckled: "You're also not going to be on the frontlines, what would you do with them?"

Mu Xiangling slapped his hands away, and crunched up her face: "Don't pinch my nose! I'll become ugly if you do that!!"

Mu Xiangling was intelligent, and could tell that after his anger had subsided, Yue Zhong was actually very easy-going and warm, and dared to tease and openly laugh together with him.

Xin Jiarou looked at her only daughter lovingly. Her daughter was her pride and joy, and was her sole raison d'être now.\*3 She

would do whatever it takes for Mu Xiangling.

Yue Zhong eyed the room and said: "This place is not suitable for living. Follow me." Although this room was kept clean by the little girl, and was simple, Yue Zhong wanted to gather his subordinates together, in case they were ambushed by enemies. Xin Jiarou and her daughter had to leave here.

They were quick to catch on, and hurriedly packed up their simple belongings. Taking one last longing look at their home, they then followed Yue Zhong to leave.

Yue Zhong brought Xin Jiarou and Mu Xiangling, as he followed some markings towards a small road and finally came to an apartment.

"Boss!!" Within the room, the 30+ experts that Yue Zhong had brought from Tianxin District stood up and greeted him.

Yue Zhong had agreed that upon entry into Guilin City, they were to call him 'Boss'.

"They're all experts!!" Xin Jiarou looked at the 30 something total warriors, and could feel the intense aura and fighting intent emitting from them. After becoming an Evolver, Xin Jiarou had become much more perceptive. Mu Xiangling looked at the warrior and piped in sweetly: "Fellow big brothers!! Hi!! I'm Mu Xiangling!"

Bai Xiaosheng looked at the pretty Mu Xiangling with her ponytail and his eyes widened in shock: "Boss!! Where did you get such a high-quality loli! Don't tell me you really are...."

Yue Zhong shot Bai Xiaosheng a withering look, and Bai Xiaosheng trembled, the word 'lolicon' dying in his throat.

He was not an idiot, and did not want to infuriate Yue Zhong over this little matter.

Ning Yuxin stood to one side, as she gazed at the mother-daughter pair quietly, her eyes gleaming with a complicated light.



The rest of the warriors looked at them curiously, before directing their gazes back to Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong gathered everyone, before asking directly: "We've already entered Guilin City, as for the next step, I would like to hear everybody's opinions."

Ying Kaishan immediately piped up: "Boss, It's not looking too good. There are too many people here, and Du Shanxiong's forces are everywhere sadly. Setting our forces side by side, we pale too much in comparison."

Guilin City was considered huge, and in terms of fighting experience and combat power, they were more than the forces of Bei Mingyang back in Tianxin District. Even the Heaven Sect would have been wiped out facing Du Shanxiong's army. Yue Zhong had only brought 30-plus of them here, even if everyone of them were experts, they could not possibly swallow the entire Guilin City through their own efforts.

Shang Lun was quiet, before speaking slowly: "Although our experts are top fighters, there are almost 900,000 people in Guilin City, and there are countless experts hidden here! If we were to make any strange movements, we would be quelled immediately!"

Hearing Shang Lun's words, everyone turned sombre. Guilin City was like a huge beast, and this little group of experts were at most ants to the experts of Guilin City.

Previously, the reason why Yue Zhong could take 30+ experts to swallow Heaven Sect was because he had waited for the opportunity when Heaven Sect and the other power had clashed. Otherwise, facing Heaven Sect by himself would also have been almost impossible. Guilin City possessed a force more than 10 times stronger than the Heaven Sect, wanting to easily take it over was simply out of the question.

Yue Zhong smiled lightly: "Don't think too much! We're not taking it over. We can conduct business with them, or work in

tandem with them to fight the zombies and Mutant Beasts. In fact, there's no real need to go against them, as long as we can come and go whenever."

If Yue Zhong wanted to truly take over Guilin City, he would have to activate all his forces to attack, and it would be at the cost of countless lives. However, by taking a step back, even if he didn't attack them, Yue Zhong would still be able to gain what he wanted by dealing in transactions.

The majority of the inhabitants in Guilin City was Chinese, and the governor wasn't a racist like Wuyan Hong. Yue Zhong could not just use all sort of methods against his fellow Chinese military men like how he did against the Vietnamese.

Hearing Yue Zhong's words, everyone relaxed. Of course, they didn't have to take over Guilin City. Both sides could legitimately conduct transactions to the benefit of both parties. It was just that they were used to Yue Zhong having taken over any territory he came across. This caused them to assume that Yue Zhong wanted Guilin City as well.

Bai Xiaosheng then asked casually: "Boss, What do you intend to do?"

Bai Xiaosheng did not like racking his brains, and his mind was only filled with women. Hence, although he had high talent, and was strong, he could only become a fighter, and never a leader.

Yue Zhong replied solemnly: "We need to establish some kind of solid foothold here in Guilin City. I'm intending to set up the Green Stone Triad. You guys will be the forces of our Green Stone Triad. There are numerous survivors leading harsh lives at Carp Street. Shang Lun, go get 300 people from there, to join our triad. We will cover their meals, on top of that, issue them half a jin of food everyday as payment for members.

In Guilin City, Yue Zhong's forces could only exist as a triad for now. If he were to rapaciously\*4 absorb people like a military

force, they would definitely face resistance quickly.

Ying Kaishan replied with a little anxiety: "Boss!! Recruiting 300 people is a little too much, isn't it? Our rations may not be enough!"

In this post-apocalyptic world, recruiting people was easy, as long as one covered the meals, they could easily gain male survivors. However, to maintain the combat power and morale, it was a problem of consistent rations. If a faction ran out of rations, the survivors would then leave just like that.

Ying Kaishan and the rest did not have any storage rings, and everyone of them had just brought in a 100-jin of rations. If they wanted to sustain the feeding of 300 people, this amount was too little.

Yue Zhong threw 2 Tang Replica Swords to Zheng Minghe and said: "I'll settle the issue of rations! Zheng Minghe, go sell these 2 Tang Replica Swords, they should fetch about a few dozen tonnes of food. Use that to hang on to the new members loyalty first, I'll handle what comes after."

"Yes, Boss!" Zhen Minghe caught the 2 Tang Replica Swords and nodded towards Yue Zhong.

# Chapter 400: Conflict at the Market!

---

With Yue Zhong's orders, Green Stone Triad quickly established itself in Guilin City. Shang Lun easily recruited 300 male survivors from Carp Street.

Zheng Minghe then began the tough training of these 300 males, and used the military ways he learned, to whip the male survivors into shape. To outsiders, however, it was announced as militarized management. Even prior to the apocalypse, there were many jobs that required the military to oversee.

After the apocalypse had set in, many factions had switched to using similar management methods, and thus, it didn't attract too much attention.

300 people was too small an amount to Guilin City that had almost 900,000 survivors. There were all sorts of factions within Guilin City, some nearing even thousands in their numbers.

Ying Kaishan, Shang Lun and Zheng Minghe were different from Bai Xiaosheng, and had decent leadership capabilities. Yue Zhong only had to busy himself for a day when setting up the Green Stone Triad, and was free after that.

"Yue Zhong-gege, let's go shopping!! Mum and I have too little clothing!"

With Mu Xiangling's constant pleading, Yue Zhong relented, and brought her, Ning Yuxin and Xin Jiarou to the luxurious shopping centre in Guilin City.

With the stabilizing of society, most of the inhabitants in Guilin City had gotten over their initial panic and fear, and there were people window shopping and walking around in the mall. However, the crowd was much smaller than before the initial fall of society.

Yue Zhong led the 3 ladies into the shopping mall, and instantly

caught the attention of many people.

"So pretty!!"

"Cheh." "3 roses stuck on a pile of shit."

"Is that guy a lolicon? He must be..."

"....."

When Yue Zhong's group strolled in the mall, they attracted countless envious and jealous gazes, many men were currently hating Yue Zhong in their hearts. 3 top beauties, if any ordinary person could get the attention of any one of them, it was already a huge blessing, but this guy actually had all 3 by his side, it was like being among stars, and they hated his good fortune.

However, most of them were smart, and did not dare step up to rile trouble. In this apocalyptic world, the moment there was conflict, sometimes a life would be just casually taken. Enhancers possessed huge ability, and there were cases of killings happening because some poor chaps had the ill fortune of offending strong Enhancers. That's why, without finding out how powerful Yue Zhong truly was, no one dared to step on his toes.

"Yue Zhong-gege! Look! It's a bikini!! Will I look good if I wear it?" Mu Xiangling came to the swimwear section, and her eyes brightened, as she grabbed a bikini and broke into a smile in front of Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong lightly knocked her forehead: "You want to wear a bikini? You're still early by 5 years!"

Xin Jiarou reached out and grabbed Mu Xiangling's little hands, pulling her out of the swimwear section: "Time to go! Xiangling, we're here to buy clothes! Not swimwear!"

They came to the underwear section, and Mu Xiangling immediately grabbed a black hollow revealing underwear and jumped in front of Yue Zhong. She opened her hands, as she pouted and blinked her eyes at Yue Zhong, speaking softly: "Hey!

Yue Zhong-gege! Shall I change into this for you?"

Yue Zhong felt his heart race at the misunderstanding as he balefully stared at Mu Xiangling while threatening her sternly: "You little rascal, if you try and seduce me, I will spank your bottom!!"

Mu Xiangling laughed like a little fox and stuck close to him as she blew into his ear: "Hehe!! Yue Zhong-gege, you're getting mad!! Ah! I know, you must be agitated right! Lolicon, pervert!! If you want to hit then just hit me, I'm your toy anyway."

Yue Zhong was also helpless against this little loli, and naturally was not willing to punish her. His threat was also ineffective.

In just 2 days, the intelligent Mu Xiangling had completely understood Yue Zhong's temperament. As long as she did not touch his bottom line, regardless of how she teased, Yue Zhong would not punish her. She would then try to take things further.

Xin Jiarou saw Mu Xiangling harassing Yue Zhong and sternly called out: "Xiangling, come over here!!"

Mu Xiangling did not dare to continue, and obediently went back to her mother's side, at the same time throwing the black underwear to the side casually "Yes, Mama!"

Xin Jiarou looked at her daughter who had suddenly switched to being obedient, and was a little angry and helpless at the same time. She was truly at her wits' end with this little bag of tricks, and each time she wanted to lecture her, she would remember how attentive and mature her daughter was when taking care of her, and thus... she could not speak the words.

Xin Jiarou took up a pair of white cotton underwear and told Mu Xiangling: "Go try this on!"

Mu Xiangling immediately scrunched up her face and complained: "Mama! This type of underwear is so old-fashioned!! No one wears these nowadays. It's not nice at all!!" Xin Jiarou's

eyes narrowed, and her face turned wooden.

"I'll go get changed now!" Mu Xiangling saw Xin Jiarou's expression and hurriedly dashed off after grabbing the cotton underwear.

After seeing her daughter enter the changing room, Xin Jiarou then took a set that caught her eye, and went into another changing room.

On the other side, Ning Yuxin had already chosen a set of clothes and had went to get changed as well.

The moment the 3 ladies left, Yue Zhong was left alone standing there, and he looked around with a bored expression.

"Oh, isn't this Yue Zhong?" Right at this time, a familiar voice resounded.

Yue Zhong turned to look, and saw Gao Xiaoyun. She was wearing heavy makeup as well as a set of brand name clothes. Beside her, there was a 23 or 24-year-old man who was slightly on the shorter side, and his looks were insignificant, but his expression was one of supreme arrogance. They were walking over to Yue Zhong.

The short man whose entire face seemed to be the epitome of pride furrowed his brows, as he asked Gao Xiaoyun: "Xiaoyun! You know this person?"

Gao Xiaoyun glanced at Yue Zhong contemptuously, saying: "Zi Ning, this is the guy I was telling you about, the Yue Zhong who would not stop bugging me. I've told him clearly, I have someone in mind. I wanted him to call off the arrangement our parents made, but he's pressuring my mother to force me to date him. What a lowly person!"

Liu Zi Ning stepped forward, and pointed at Yue Zhong as he threatened: "You're Yue Zhong? Gao Xiaoyun is my woman!! You had better watch your damn self, if you keep harassing this daddy's

woman, this daddy will break your limbs!!"

Right at this moment, Ning Yuxin walked up behind Yue Zhong and slipped her hands through his arm. She was currently dressed in a pure white dress, and her simple beauty was practically radiating. She spoke coldly: "Gao Xiaoyun! Don't try to sell yourself, Yue Zhong is MY boyfriend! Why would he harass you! Why don't you look at yourself in the mirror! You aren't worthy of him at all!"

"Holy shit what a beauty!!" Liu Zi Ning saw Ning Yuxin standing beside Yue Zhong and his eyes were about to pop out from their sockets. It was the first time he had encountered such a peerless beauty, and his lustful nature was snared instantly.

Gao Xiaoyun looked Ning Yuxin up and down, and saw her voluptuous figure, as well as flawless aura, and her eyes were about to spit fire from the jealousy building up. This was a woman that she could not compete with no matter how much makeup she wore, or how much she tried. Although Gao Xiaoyun was considered decent-looking, when compared with Ning Yuxin, she was practically an ugly duck, and was completely overshadowed.

When Ning Yuxin berated Gao Xiaoyun, she started trembling with anger, and grabbed Liu Zi Ning's arms. She used her breasts to press against him, and complained: "Zi Ning!! She bullied me!! You must help me!!"

"Get lost!!" Liu Zi Ning turned to look at Gao Xiaoyun, and suddenly felt that her makeup-heavy face was extremely repulsive, and he pushed her aside irritably, before looking back at Yue Zhong with disdain. He smiled at Ning Yuxin: "I'm Liu Zi Ning, the son of Liu Xuan He who's the leader of the Yangtze Gang. Beauty, following this useless Yue Zhong would not spell a good future for you. Come with me instead."

Liu Zi Ning continued to boast proudly: "My Yangtze Gang has over a thousand people, and we possess numerous experts. My



father Liu Xuan He himself is a level 39 Enhancer, almost nobody is his match here in Guilin City! In this city, both sides of the law would have to give my Yangtze Gang face. What is this Yue Zhong? Isn't he just the son of some lowly government worker? I could play with his life with just lifting a single finger. Following him would bring you nothing! If you come with me, I will immediately arrange a position in the government for you! If you don't want to work, I can take care of you, and find 20 people to serve you. Every month, you'll gain a tonne of rations to spend, and I will love you my whole life!"

After the apocalypse, Liu Zi Ning had used this line on countless women. Although it was tactless and extremely revolting, the underlying threat was real. Many pretty girls had no choice but to follow him in order to survive in this new world.

Gao Xiaoyun saw Liu Zi Ning trying to attract Ning Yuxin over, and her face turned as pale as a sheet. At the beginning, she had followed him because he had power and money. However, now she was just tossed aside like garbage, and her heart was filled with hatred.

Yue Zhong eyed Liu Zi Ning and barked out coldly: "Scram!"

Li Zi Ning immediately flared up and stepped forward, intending to slap him viciously. "Fuck! You're looking for death Yue Zhong!!"

Liu Zi Ning had been acting the oppressive tyrant in Guilin City, and was one of the 4 Tyrants of Guilin City. Those who offended him, were turned into corpses.

Yue Zhong's brows creased slightly, and grabbed his incoming right hand, before his 6x Strength exploded out, immediately breaking his right hand with an audible crunching noise.

# Table of Contents

## [God and Devil World](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Copyright](#)

[Chapter 301: Introducing currency!](#)

[Chapter 302: Assault on Long Hai City](#)

[Chapter 303: At Bottom...](#)

[Chapter 304: Capturing Long Hai City! Yue Zhong's gains!](#)

[Chapter 305: Type 3 Nether Beast!](#)

[Chapter 306: Remote Jungle!](#)

[Chapter 307: Type 2 Mutant Forest Venomous Snake!](#)

[Chapter 308: Mutant Leeches Rain, Myriad Mutant Mosquitos Swarm!](#)

[Chapter 309: This is Vietnam!](#)

[Chapter 310: Fan Tongxuan!](#)

[Chapter 311: Nabu Town](#)

[Chapter 312: Ambush!](#)

[Chapter 313: The Army of the Great Empire of Vietnam!](#)

[Chapter 314: A Sneak Attack](#)

[Chapter 315: Sneaking Into Town](#)

[Chapter 316: Survival!](#)

[Chapter 317: Moving Forward](#)

[Chapter 318: Fighting for ones Life!](#)

[Chapter 319: Rain of Bullets](#)

[Chapter 320: Unexpected](#)

[Chapter 321: Seeking Instructions](#)

[Chapter 322: Suspicion!](#)

[Chapter 323: Shock!](#)

[Chapter 324: Type 2 Mutant Leopard Cat!](#)

[Chapter 325: Gratitude](#)

[Chapter 326: Evolver!](#)

[Chapter 327: Making Necessary Arrangements!](#)

[Chapter 328: Genuine Ability!](#)

[Chapter 329: Eliminate the Remaining Troops!](#)

[Chapter 330: The Chinese Association](#)

[Chapter 331: Thief!](#)

[Chapter 332: Ready For War!](#)

[Chapter 333: Break Through!](#)  
[Chapter 334: Countdown!](#)  
[Chapter 335: Warning the Troops!](#)  
[Chapter 336: Killing The Prisoners!](#)  
[Chapter 337: Pearl Fruit](#)  
[Chapter 338: Slaughter!](#)  
[Chapter 339: Eradicating Li Xiaoli's Troops!](#)  
[Chapter 340: Wuyan Hong's Fury!](#)  
[Chapter 341: Chinese Association's Conclave Meeting!](#)  
[Chapter 342: The Only Chance!](#)  
[Chapter 343: Risky Infiltration!](#)  
[Chapter 344: Hunting the New Type 2 Hunters!](#)  
[Chapter 345: Using Enemy Monsters To Slay Them!](#)  
[Chapter 346: Crossing The River!](#)  
[Chapter 347: Assault of the Type 2 Mutant Crocodile!](#)  
[Chapter 348: Slaughtering The Type 2 Mutant Crocodile!](#)  
[Chapter 349: Quelling The Insurgency](#)  
[Chapter 350: Homecoming!](#)  
[Chapter 351: Long Teng Town](#)  
[Chapter 352: Entering the Town!](#)  
[Chapter 353: Shadow Wolf!](#)  
[Chapter 354: Grinding!](#)  
[Chapter 355: Battling Chen Liang!](#)  
[Chapter 356: Finishing Chen Liang!](#)  
[Chapter 357: Type 3 Mutant Beast Hide](#)  
[Chapter 358: Individual Ideals! Zhang Zhi's Decision!](#)  
[Chapter 359: Assault on Jingxi Province](#)  
[Chapter 360: Conquering Jingxi Province](#)  
[Chapter 361: 12 Tanks!](#)  
[Chapter 362: Raid!](#)  
[Chapter 363: Bei Mingyang](#)  
[Chapter 364: Collapse](#)  
[Chapter 365: Forced Surrender](#)  
[Chapter 366: Discussion of Plans](#)  
[Chapter 367: Stunning Counterattack](#)  
[Chapter 368: Break!](#)  
[Chapter 369: Cold Snow!](#)  
[Chapter 370: Beauty](#)  
[Chapter 371: Dong Ling](#)

[Chapter 372: Ning Ruozhi!](#)  
[Chapter 373: Move Out!](#)  
[Chapter 374: Heaven Sect!](#)  
[Chapter 375: Grain Tree???](#)  
[Chapter 376: Arrival Of The Grand Elder](#)  
[Chapter 377: Song Miaoyi](#)  
[Chapter 378: Rescue](#)  
[Chapter 379: Burning Niu Xinghe Alive!](#)  
[Chapter 380: Pressure](#)  
[Chapter 381: Chen Shenggang](#)  
[Chapter 382: Long An County](#)  
[Chapter 383: Internal Strife](#)  
[Chapter 384: Heaven Sect's Sect Leader](#)  
[Chapter 385: Yue Zhong Makes His Move!](#)  
[Chapter 386: Annexing the Heaven Sect!](#)  
[Chapter 387: Ying Kaishan!](#)  
[Chapter 388: Ou Ming](#)  
[Chapter 389: Evolve, Type 2 Skill](#)  
[Chapter 390: Guilin City](#)  
[Chapter 391: Family Reunion](#)  
[Chapter 392: Kin!](#)  
[Chapter 393: Market](#)  
[Chapter 394: Conflict Arises](#)  
[Chapter 395: Blackmail! Mu Xiangling!](#)  
[Chapter 396: It's A Deal!](#)  
[Chapter 397: A Reunion of Brothers](#)  
[Chapter 398: Gao Minghao](#)  
[Chapter 399: Level 5 Skill Divine Speed!](#)  
[Chapter 400: Conflict at the Market!](#)